



# WU DONG QIAN KUN

BOOK 07

*Heavenly Silkworm Potato*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Wu Dong Qian Kun

(Martial Universe)

(武动乾坤)

by

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

(Tian Can Tu Dou)

(天蚕土豆)

# Synopsis

---

The Great Yan Empire exists in a world where respect can only be earned through strength. Within this Great Yan Empire, the four great clans have always stood above the rest. Among them, a particular incident in the Lin Clan resulted in the banishment of a certain individual who went on to start his own family, in hopes of one day being recognized again by the Lin Clan, and rejoining them...

Hailing from a banished family of the Great Lin Clan, when Lin Dong was very young, he watched, powerless, as his talented father was easily crushed and crippled by the overwhelming genius of the great Lin Clan, Lin Langtian.

With a despairing father, a heartbroken grandfather, and a suffering family, ever since that fateful day, Lin Dong has been driven by a deep purpose; to take revenge on the man who had taken everything and more from his family.

Armed with nothing but willpower and determination, join Lin Dong as he unknowingly discovers a destiny greater than he could ever hope to imagine when he stumbles upon a mysterious stone talisman...



# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Arron @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

Translation Edits by yeow @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 601: Three Devils of the Song Family

---

Whoosh!

Boundless Yuan Power engulfed the area like a wild storm. Gusts swept up across the stone-littered ground, causing sand and pebbles to fill the air, making one feel as if one was in a storm.

Numerous gazes turned to the direction of the whooshing sound in a flash of understanding. These gazes were filled with surprise and expectation.

Amidst the rubble, the eyes of the three men, who were wearing robes that had skull prints on them, began to flicker. Then, they stood up expressionlessly, and due to their powerful auras, the Yuan Power in the surrounding started to show signs of undulation.

“Hehe, how daring of you. There are not many people in the Ancient Battlefield who dare to rush into a trap set up by the Sky Devil Empire....” An uncanny laugh came from behind the three black-robed men. Soon after, two more figures appeared.

One of them was dressed in a blood-red robe and his body was reeking of blood. The other person was dressed in a pale-white robe, which seemed extremely ghastly, giving off a sinister feeling.

“Xue Ying, Hua Gu, let my Sky Devil Empire deal with Lin Dong and his party. I will leave Liu Bai and his counterparts to your Blood Seal Empire and Bone Jade Empire. I hope both of you won’t

be as useless as the Great Net Empire.”

One of the skull-printed, black-robed men said indifferently. He had a pair of hollow eyes and a distinct aquiline nose, exuding a rather menacing aura. He was the second brother of the Song Devils, Song Que.

“Hehe, don’t worry, Brother Song Que. Liu Bai and his counterparts will not escape,” The blood-red robed man and the pale-white robed man replied hastily to Song Que’s indifferent words. They clearly knew how ruthless the killing methods of the three men before them were. The capabilities of the Song Devils sufficed to make the two men fear them.

“Haha, Lin Dong and his counterparts must be quite capable to be able to defeat the Great Net Empire. Much to my surprise, they approached us with no hesitation even though they knew of the trap I have set,” The man standing at most front of the three black-robed men smirked. He was the most gentle-looking out of the three men. However, those who were familiar with the Song Devils knew that he was Song Zhen, the most terrifying one out of the three men.

Not only was his strength terrifying, but his killing methods were extremely terrifying as well.

Reportedly, none of those who had their Nirvana Seals seized by him survived. As such, whoever encountered this fiend did not even have the courage to put up any resistance and surrendered his or her Nirvana Seal automatically in hope of surviving.

“This is quite a good burial ground,” Song Ba, who was ranked third among the three men, curled his mouth and sneered. His pale-white teeth contained an aura that would make one’s heart palpitate.

Behind the three men, the Xue Ying duo broke out into a sinister laughter and then raised their heads to look in the direction of the wind whipping sound.

Swish swish!

The sound of wind whipping became increasingly intense. After a moment, all the gazes were converged at the piece of land that was full of rubble. A figure emerged from the forest and landed slowly outside of the rubble land.

Atop the huge boulder, Lanying and Qing Feng raised their heads and stared at the figure who had just appeared. This figure was somewhat familiar.

It was Lin Dong!

“Swoosh swoosh!”

As Lin Dong and his counterparts landed outside of the rubble land, numerous sounds of wind whipping broke out behind them. Numerous figures came in from all directions and landed outside of the rubble land, causing the border of the land to be congested.

“Those three men are the Song Devils of the Sky Devil Empire. The ones behind them are the leaders of the Blood Seal Empire and Bone Jade Empire. The two of them are of the same level as the Great Net Empire’s Xiao Shan.”

Liu Bai commented in a soft voice as he stood beside Lin Dong and stared solemnly at the three figures wearing skull-printed black robes.

Lin Dong raised his head and stared at the three figures whose bodies were surging with violent Yuan Power. A grave look flashed across his eyes. He could sense the formidable strength of the three men.

On the border of the land, there were countless practitioners from the three great empires eyeing this scene covetously. However, most of their faces contained a mocking look. Clearly, they regarded Lin Dong and his counterparts as a bunch of trapped fishes.

More and more people gathered around the rubble land after Lin Dong and his counterparts arrived. However, there were not much disorder or chaos. Under the powerful auras exuded by the bodies of the Song Devils, these participants that used to show signs of insanity due to the atmosphere of the Hundred Empire Forest seemed to have awoken. They knew that this battleground did not belong to them...

Lin Dong’s gaze landed upon the three black figures who were



standing upright on the distant huge boulder. The gazes of the Song Zhen trio landed upon Lin Dong and his counterparts as well. A weird smile slowly rose upon their faces.

“Clap clap!”

Under the attentive gazes of the onlookers, Song Zhen clapped his hands lightly and smiled, “You must be Lin Dong. Regardless, your courage impresses me. If not for our inheritances, I might have made friends with you.”

“I’m afraid I’m not worthy of that,” Lin Dong smiled plainly. Apparently, he had sensed the mocking tone in Song Zhen’s words.

“That’s true, those who are about to die are indeed not worthy. Lin Dong, don’t assume that you are qualified to act flamboyant in front of my Sky Devil Empire just because you have some fame. To put it bluntly, you are not even qualified at all,” Song Que replied indifferently.

“Hehe, your tone is even much more arrogant than mine,” Little Marten smirked as a smile rose upon his handsome face.

Song Que’s eyes froze. Suddenly, he shot a piercing-cold stare at Little Marten and pointed his index finger outwards. Immediately, a spiralling gale whizzed out of his finger like a lightning and surged towards Little Marten with a terrifying speed.

However, Little Marten did not show any signs of dodging upon

seeing Song Que's incoming attack. Before the powerful spiralling gale reached within ten feet of Little Marten, it automatically disappeared. This scene sent a shiver down many people's spines.

"It's a disgrace to play such a trick in front of Grandpa Marten. If you really want to court death, get down now. Grandpa Marten has never heard of your bullshit Sky Devil Empire!" Little Marten sneered as he stared at Song Que with chilliness surging through his eyes.

"You're courting death!"

Song Que went into a rage of a sudden. Boundless Yuan Power and killer intent pervaded the air abruptly, making the surrounding onlookers to tremble in fear. Both parties were harsh towards each other. In their conversations, there were no signs of giving way to each other. Clearly, both parties were prepared to fight each other.

"Hehe, you are the first person that dares to scold my Sky Devil Empire in such a way," Song Zhen chuckled. However, everyone could sense the anger that was concealed behind his chuckle.

"Each time we encounter a super empire with a superiority complex, they always have to spurt out a bunch of nonsense first."

Lin Dong could not help but heave a sigh. Following which, under numerous attentive gazes, he reached out his finger and pointed it at Song Zhen. Then, he spoke with a calm tone, "Let's start fighting. Otherwise, surrender your Nirvana Seal and get

lost!”

Woah!

The area went into an uproar. Even Lanying and Qing Feng, who were standing on that huge boulder, were stunned by this scene. After a moment, Qing Feng turned to Lanying and gave a thumb-up and said, “This lad is really something. He dares to say such things to Song Zhen. I don’t know whether he is trying to be brave or what.”

“How can a person like him, who came from a low rank empire, make it here just by being hot-headed and putting on a brave front?” Lan Ying smiled gently.

“I hope you’re right. Otherwise, this would be boring,” Qing Feng shrugged his shoulder and replied.

“Haha, interesting....”

Song Zhen gave a smile and stared at Lin Dong. Traces of ghastliness were rising deep within his eyes. Violent Yuan Power was surging through his body like a volcanic eruption. Everyone could tell that the leader of the Sky Devil Empire was extremely enraged.

“It has been quite a while since I have such a desire to kill someone. None of you shall escape from here today....” Song Zhen’s face continued to carry a smile. However, the words that

came out of his mouth made the surrounding practitioners tremble in fear. Some people even retreated from the area silently.

“Brother Liu Bai, I shall leave Blood Seal Empire and Bone Jade Empire to you and your counterparts,” Lin Dong turned his head and looked at Liu Bai and instructed softly.

“My two brothers and I will handle the Song Devils.”

Liu Bai stared blankly at Lin Dong. From the latter's voice, Liu Bai could not sense any fear. Instead, his voice was filled with an unconcealable battle fury.

No matter who they were facing, these fellows always seemed to display no fear at all.

“Brother Lin Dong, don't worry. No matter how fierce the fight is, we will not let them interfere with your battle!” Liu Bai assured in a low voice after taking in a deep breath.

Lin Dong smiled and nodded his head. The Lin Dong trio then looked at each other in the eyes and nodded their heads slightly. Under the watchful eyes of the onlookers, they took a step forward.

Bang bang!

As the three of them stepped forward, the rubble on the ground exploded. Astonishing power swept out from their bodies.

Song Zhen licked his lips with his scarlet tongue. His eyes were filled with intense killer intent. Soon after, he took a step forward as well. Behind him, Song Que and Song Ba followed suit. Immediately, numerous huge cracks extended throughout the huge boulder that was beneath their feet.

“Kill!”

A low and cold voice came out of Lin Dong and Song Zhen’s mouths almost at the same time. At this moment, six ghost-like figures surged forward in an instant.

At this point of time, killing intent rushed into the sky and caused a storm from every direction.

# Chapter 602: A Peculiar Move

---

Swoosh!

Wild wind surged, carrying six ghost like figures that rushed over the chaotic rock ground. When they crossed each other, it appeared as though this entire area turned silent for an instant. After which, everyone could see a terrifying storm suddenly sweeping over. The large rocks around instantly exploded into dust.

Wild wind was accompanied by the rock fragments that shot out and directly slammed into the ground around the place, until a large number of holes were formed.

The permeating sandy wind surged and Lin Dong's sharp eyes were directly locked on the eldest of the three Song devils, Song Zhen. Although the three Song devils were experts who had stepped into the five Yuan Nirvana Stage, Song Zhen looked particularly difficult to deal with. If one was to really discuss about fighting strength, the strongest was naturally Little Marten with unfathomable strength. However, the precondition of doing so was that he must reveal the physical body of the Celestial Demon Marten and the current situation clearly did not allow this. Hence, since Lin Dong was afraid that Little Marten might end up blowing his cover, he did not assign Song Zhen to the latter. Instead, he personally stepped forward to fight Song Zhen alone.

“You actually dare to challenge me with just the strength of a three Yuan Nirvana Stage? I really wonder where your courage comes from!”



Song Zhen looked towards that figure which had rushed over. He smiled slightly but his eyes contained trace of dark chillness climbing into them. Bright gold light agglomerated on his right leg. In the blink of an eye, his right leg appeared as though it was made of gold.

“Bam!”

Song Zhen’s gold coloured right leg handed heavily onto the ground, causing the land to tremble a little. An enormous gap quickly spread out from under his foot in a lightning like manner. It became just like a ground dragon that tore the land and rushed towards Lin Dong.

Lin Dong’s eyes congelated as he watched the cracked ground. He could sense that there was an incomparably wild and violent energy hidden within it. It turns out that Song Zhen’s true strength was extremely powerful. Being at five Yuan Nirvana Stage was sufficient for him to look down on everyone else.

Even Lin Dong did not dare to underestimate such an opponent. He immediately beckoned with his hand before a black coloured metal seal appeared in his hand. Immediately, a monstrous black glow that soared with the wind came slamming down heavily.

Boom!

The instant the metal seal violently smashed onto the ground, the trembling ground became quiet immediately. Even that rising

ground dragon was forcefully suppressed by that metal seal.

“Heavenly Soul Treasure? Even though you possess a Heavenly Soul Treasure, how can you fight with me with just your mere three Yuan Nirvana Stage strength?” A glint flashed across Song Zhen’s eyes. He had identified the Soul Treasure in Lin Dong’s hands with just a glance. However, he was not surprised. Instead, he laughed once again as he stepped forward.

Bang bang bang!

The ground around the black metal seal suddenly exploded. Four ground dragon whizzed out while being accompanied by some rock fragments. They violently attacked Lin Dong, who was standing on the metal seal.

The speed of the four ground dragons was just like a thunderbolt. Even quite a number of experts that had stepped into the four Yuan Nirvana Stage could only see a rock fragment stream flash past their eyes. After which, they saw the four ground dragons had already sealed off Lin Dong’s retreat path.

The ground dragon contained some fierce violent strength as it came smashing down furiously. However, just as they were about to hit Lin Dong, a green glow suddenly spread across his body before they transformed into four glowing green scale shield.

“Bang bang!”

The ground dragons that contained a mighty Yuan Power smashed furiously onto the green scale shield without showing any mercy. As the shockwave scattered forth, it caused the skin on the heads of quite a number of people to turn numb. Just this attack from Song Zhen would likely be sufficient to seriously injure some four Yuan Nirvana Stage experts. They really did not know how Lin Dong, who only had the strength of a three Yuan Nirvana Stage expert, was going to block it...

Rock fragments that permeated the sky shot out explosively. After which, everyone saw that Lin Dong's body had also swiftly shot backwards. The green scale armour that had just been formed also quickly paled. Clearly, it was forcefully scattered by the ground dragon.

From the looks of this, it seemed like Lin Dong would have difficulty obtaining the upper hand in his fight with Song Zhen.

“Do you only have this little ability? It looks like you were only able to defeat Luo Tong by chance.” Song Zhen smiled faintly. There was a ridicule in his smile. Moreover, his attack did not stop while he spoke. Majestic Yuan Power whistled out. Wild and violent attacks covered Lin Dong like a storm, not giving him even the chance to catch his breath.

Strangely though, Lin Dong continued to dodge Song Zhen's attacks. In fact, it looked as though he was a little afraid of fighting directly with Song Zhen.

Some soft exclamations was also erupted from the surroundings upon seeing this scene. Clearly, they did not expect that Lin Dong

would show signs of being at a disadvantage after having just started fighting. It appeared that the gap of two levels was not something that was so easy to make up for.

“Huh?”

Lanying, who was observing the battle within the battleground, suddenly emitted a soft “huh”. She softly uttered, “Why did Lin Dong’s attacks become a little weaker...”

“No matter how one puts it, Song Zhen is a five Yuan Nirvana stage expert while Lin Dong is only at three Yuan Nirvana stage. Although the latter is quite strong, it is naturally impossible to challenge someone two levels higher. It is not surprising that he would end up being pushed into having a disadvantageous position.” Feng Qing laughed faintly.

Lanying knitted her eyebrows slightly. Her pretty eyes stared at Lin Dong, who was dodging and pulling back. She vaguely sensed that something was off. It was possible for her to see that Lin Dong’s face did not reveal the slightest anxiety and panic in face of Song Zhen’s intense attacks. In fact, his pair of eyes had a faint glint flickering within it.

“What is this fellow planning?” A glint flashed across Lanying’s eyes as though a thought had appeared within her mind.

“Lin Dong is...”

The expression of Liu Bai's group also changed when they saw this scene. They were a little unable to comprehend why Lin Dong would suddenly choose to dodge and avoid fighting. Could it be that he was really no match for Song Zhen?

There were also some doubt in the eyes of Su Kui and Su Rou by the side. They had been together with Lin Dong for such a long time and were aware of some of the latter's techniques. Song Zhen was indeed powerful but it would not reach the point of being able to force Lin Dong, who had an endless number of trump cards, to such an extent...

“Haha, is this the legendary dark horse who is rumoured to be able to challenge the ten great super empires?” Song Que also laughed coldly when he saw this scene.

“You really speak too much nonsense. Don't you think that it is a little early to be celebrating now?” Little Marten's ghost like figure directly appeared in front of Song Que. His handsome face currently had a chillness surging within it. Purple-black energy swiftly surged on both of his hands. It's great corrosive strength caused the surrounding air to sizzle.

“You dare to deliver yourself, you must be courting death! Today, none of you should even plan to leave alive!”

A ferocious smile involuntarily flashed across Song Que's face when he saw this situation. He clenched his large hand and a bright gold light surged out. This gold light directly agglomerated into a gold coloured large blade in his hand.

Within the Nirvana Stage, those Nirvana Golden Body that had underwent tempering from five Nirvana Tribulations would become quite powerful. In fact, some of the Nirvana Golden Body strength will spill over and they can agglomerate it into various items. The offensive or defensive strength of these things would be extremely powerful. Clearly, Song Que had already reached this stage.

“Creak!”

The gold coloured large blade came hacking down furiously. Before it was completely unleashed, a splitting sound was emitted from the ground. A large deep gully that was nearly a hundred feet large was formed.

“Humph.”

However, a cold smile flashed across Little Marten’s eyes in the face of this kind of powerful attack. Purple-black glow gathered on his palm. It vaguely transformed into the shape of a claw. After which, it was extended out and directly grabbed that gold coloured large blade that came hacking down furiously.

A cruel smile immediately surfaced on Song Que’s face when he saw that Little Marten actually dared to arrogantly blocked his blade attack. However, his smile had just appeared when it froze solid due to a slight crack sound. This was because he saw that his gold coloured large blade, which was now grabbed by Little Marten’s hand, had actually collapsed between his five fingers.



“You useless being actually dare to act so arrogantly in front of me?”

Little Marten’s eyes became dark and cold. He shattered the golden large blade with his hand. After which, he extended his right palm with lightning like speed and directly penetrated through Song Que’s defence. After which, it ruthlessly imprinted onto the latter’s chest. Wild and violent strength spluttered out and sent Song Que flying with a palm.

Clamor!

This scene once again invited numerous exclamations. Those people, who had been greatly disappointed by Lin Dong’s performance, finally braced their attention. From the looks of it, Lin Dong’s group was not as weak as they imagined.

“So you are actually the strongest within that group. It seems like Lin Dong is just acting tough.” Song Que’s eyes sunk as he looked at this scene and said.

Song Que’s expression changed slightly after his voice sounded. A black rod shadow had directly penetrated through the air in his eyes and was shooting over explosively. It was possible to vaguely see a black tiger roaring towards the sky over the rod.

Song Ba let out a cold snort. He did not even need to look in order to tell that the one who had attacked was definitely Little Flame from Lin Dong’s group. Gold light immediately surged. After

which, it directly transformed into a gold coloured large shield in front of Song Ba.

“Clang!”

The black coloured metal rod violently landed onto the gold coloured large shield. A shocking sound scattered. Those two enormous rocks by the side were immediately blasted apart, transforming into rock dust that scattered throughout the sky.

“Don’t worry, the last one lying on the ground will definitely not be my big brother!”

Little Flame’s muscular giant like figure appeared in front of Song Ba. His low and deep voice was just like muffled thunder. Meanwhile, the metal rod in his hand actually transformed into numerous rod afterimages that swept towards Song Ba from all directions.

“Nonsense.”

Song Ba laughed ferociously. Immediately, a fierce glint erupted from his eyes. Majestic Yuan Power surged and directly collided hard with Little Flame.

Bang bang!

The intense battle that had suddenly erupted within the arena caused Liu Bai’s and Yan Sen’s expressions to gradually become

grave. Lin Dong was currently still at a disadvantage. His manner seemed as though he did not have the ability to fight back against Song Zhen. In fact, his shaky manner hinted that he would not be able to last for long.

“What exactly is this fellow doing...”

Liu Bai clenched his fist slightly. He was really unable to believe that a person who could completely defeat Xiao Shan, would actually end up with such disadvantage in Song Zhen’s hands.

While everyone were feeling doubtful because of this, Lin Dong’s figure continued to dodge. Only occasionally did he use the black metal seal in his hand to block Song Zhen’s attack. However, his body would swiftly pull back each time such a collision occurred, appearing as though he was unable to bear that attack.

However, no one realised that with the flow of time, traces of bright redness were vaguely appearing on Lin Dong’s skin. There seemed to be something that was firmly suppressed deep with his eyes.

That kind of feeling was as though he was a volcano which was about to erupt.

# Chapter 603: How Freakish

---

Bang!

Wild and violent Yuan Power that was accompanied by a shocking energy ripple, continuously swept apart in the messy rock grounds. There were six figures amongst them, who were flashing and crossing each other in a ghost like manner, causing one to feel a little dazzled.

“Hehe, turns out Lin Dong is actually a useless person who acts tough but has little substance. They were only able to become famous likely because of that fellow called Lin Diao.” A blood red clothed figure on a large rock, looked towards the battleground with a sinister expression and laughed coldly.

“We should also attack. Liu Bai and Yan Sen are not ordinary individuals. It is likely that we will need to expend a great amount of effort in order to finish them off.” A person with dense white clothes and darkly cold eyes turned towards Liu Bai’s group at the chaotic ground, and spoke in an indifferent manner.

“Alright, we’ll finish this battle as soon as possible!”

Xue Ying gave an abnormal laugh. Immediately, he turned his body and suddenly rushed out. A rich bloody scent spread out from within his body, causing those who sniff it to feel like vomiting. The minds of these people would also fall into a trance like state. It appeared that a trace of lethal poison was contained within the scent.

“It is likely that we will be quite close to stepping into the Nirvana Golden Ranking after we take the Nirvana Seals of these two fellows!” Hua Gu let out a loud and dense laughter. He closely followed and fiercely violent Yuan Power swept out. It directly covered over Liu Bai’s group in the distance.

When the two of them moved, a large group of people behind them also suddenly followed closely behind. Clearly, they were the experts from the two large empires. There were even experts from the Sky Devil Empire amongst them.

Their momentum was quite powerful.

Their actions were naturally discovered by Liu Bai’s group. Immediately, their expressions changed, while their eyes also had a ruthless expression flickering within them.

They were not afraid of engaging the Blood Seal Empire or the Bone Jade Empire as long as there were no experts on the level of the three devils from the Song clan amongst the other party. After all, who would end up emerging victorious was still up in the air.

“These jerks have been arrogant for too long after having the Sky Devil Empire support them during this period of time. It is time to seek some payback today!” An expert behind Liu Bai clenched his teeth and said.

“There are still some experts from the Sky Devil Empire within this group who are a little troublesome to deal with.” Liu Bai’s eyes

suddenly looked towards the back of the Xue Ying. There were two extremely powerful aura at that spot. Although the auras had yet to reach the level of the five Yuan Nirvana Stage, they were also considered as genuine four Yuan Nirvana Stage experts. Moreover, these two people were competent warriors from within the Sky Devil Empire and they were not weaker than Feng Cang, who had been defeated in Lin Dong's hands back then.

The combination of Liu Bai's and Yan Sen's parties was not inferior to the Blood Seal Empire and the Bone Jade Empire. However, they could not ignore the Sky Devil Empire. Although the most troublesome, three devils of the Song clan, had been currently held back by Lin Dong's group, there were still quite a number of skillful individuals under them.

An example was the two figures whom Liu Bai had seen within the group. They possessed an extremely powerful fighting strength. Moreover, Liu Bai and Yan Sen had to fight with Xue Ying and Hua Gu and they would not be able to free themselves to lend a hand. Hence, if they allowed these two fellows to join the chaotic battle, it would undoubtedly end up being a huge blow against them.

“Why don't you leave those two to me?”

While Liu Bai was fretting over this matter, a timid voice suddenly sounded from behind him. Immediately, everyone became stunned. They turned their heads before their faces were stunned as they looked at the green clothed young pretty lady. That young and pretty face of the young lady immediately became sleek red upon becoming the center of attention.



“You?” Liu Bai stared at Su Rou and felt a little awkward. However, he did not feel that things were comical because of it. Having witnessed the extraordinary events of Lin Dong’s group, he believed that these people, who were following behind him, were likely not simple individuals.

However, even they had to spend a great deal of effort if they wanted to deal with those two fellows from the Sky Devil Empire. Could it be that this young lady in front of them was actually able to fight against them on her own?

“Haha, brother Liu Bai, just leave these two people to my sister. Amongst all of us here, she is the strongest besides the Lin Dong trio.” Su Kui laughed. His tone contained a little pride.

Liu Bai and Yan Sen were startled upon hearing this. Their gazes were surprised as they looked towards the somewhat embarrassed Su Rou. Since Su Kui had spoken in this manner, it was obvious that the young lady in front should be in possession of quite a great ability. Otherwise, he would not push his sister forward.

“In that case, we will leave it to your sister. However, if you encounter any trouble later, we will dispatch some people to help share a little of the burden. No matter what happens, I hope that you will continue to survive. If the victor could be determined on Lin Dong’s side, the result of this battle will appear!” Liu Bai cupped his hands together and said.

“Yes. I will do my best.” Su Rou looked towards the battleground

between Lin Dong and Song Zhen. A worried expression flashed across her beautiful large eyes. She immediately nodded after that. It appeared that Lin Dong's situation was currently not going well. In that case, she must not end up failing. Otherwise, it was likely that the pressure placed on Lin Dong's shoulders would become even greater.

Liu Bai ceased saying anything upon seeing this. He was genuinely uncertain about whether Su Rou would be able to block the two skilled warriors from the Sky Devil Empire. However, he did not have any other choice at this moment.

“Attack.”

Liu Bai and Yan Sen exchanged glances with one another, before they abruptly let out a low cry. Mighty Yuan Power suddenly erupted. Their bodies rushed out and directly met with Xue Ying's group, which was rushing over explosively. A fierce aura surged the two groups of people behind them. After which, the groups became like floodwater as they completely blocked the experts from the Blood Seal Empire and Bone Jade Empire.

Bang bang!

The people from both parties were just like giant waves that swept over the land, before they violently clashed into one another. Wild and violent Yuan Power immediately spread out in all directions. The battleground was expended within a short moment. Killing cries directly charged towards the clouds.

“Big brother, all of you should be careful!”

Su Rou’s pretty small face had become much more serious at this moment. She looked at the two somewhat formidable warriors from the Sky Devil Empire. Her delicate fingers immediately landed on her snow white wrist. Her seal technique changed as they directly landed on her three seals.

“Three seals, open!”

Su Rou cried out softly. A strange jade green energy swept out from within her body like floodwaters. Her long hair danced and a shocking aura spread apart. Quite a number of surprised gazes were being attracted. Clearly, they had some difficulty imagining that such a young lady would actually be in possession of such a mighty power.

Swoosh!

The jade green light surged before Su Rou’s delicate body rushed out with a lightning like speed. Two jade green energy agglomerated into a ring shape in her hands. After which, they directly turned into two cold light that shot towards the two skilled warriors from Sky Devil Empire.

Green light tore through the air and shot out at an extremely shocking speed. Even the two warriors from Sky Devil Empire were merely able to see a light flickering from the corner of their eyes. After which, that sharp ring arrived in front of them. Immediately, some cold sweat surfaced on the foreheads of the two

of them. They hurriedly slammed their hand, which had a golden light surging over it. Finally, they slammed heavily onto the ring.

Clang!

The sound of metal appeared. Those two warriors from the Sky Devil Empire shot backwards immediately. Their expressions were a little ugly as they looked at their palm. Some traces of blood vaguely appeared. Clearly, they did not expect that their bodies would still be injured after activating their Nirvana Golden Bodies.

Huff.

Liu Bai's group, which had been observing this side, immediately seemed to have been relieved of a great burden as they let out a sigh. Only then could they focus on dealing with Xue Ying's group in front of them.

“Hehe, Liu Bai, you should not be so stubborn. Obediently hand over the Nirvana Seal and I might grant you a quick and easy death!” A majestic blood glow surged around Xue Ying's body. After which, it transformed into waves after waves of shocking attacks that covered Liu Bai. At the same time, a dense cold laughter was being emitted from his mouth.

“It is a little too early for you to be celebrating!”

Liu Bai let out a cold snort. He clenched his hand and a long spear appeared with a flash. The shadows of the spear immediately

surged. It became just like a storm, as it carried a shockingly sharp aura and launched a counter attack.

“Haha, even though you are currently able to endure, brother Song Zhen would be able to join in the fight once Lin Dong is defeated. At that time, I will see just what morale you people will have!” Xue Ying laughed ferociously. He repeatedly attempted to give pressure to Liu Bai through his words and caused the latter to reveal some openings.

Liu Bai’s expression was dark and solemn. However, he did not say anything else. He was clearly aware that Xue Ying was speaking the truth. Once that Song Zhen was freed, the battle over this side would definitely become a one sided one. However, he was helpless when it came to this. Currently, the only thing he could do was hope that Lin Dong would be able to endure a little longer. At the very least, they seemed to have quite a great advantage at the battle Little Marten was in.

Swoosh swoosh!

Sharp spear shadows appeared, forcing back the attacks from Xue Ying. Liu Bai’s gaze could not resist glancing towards Lin Dong’s battleground. At that spot, the area where Lin Dong could dodge had already been gradually suppressed by Song Zhen until an extremely small one. If this continued, it was likely that Lin Dong would be forced by Song Zhen until he had no retreat path left within a short period of time.

“Lin Dong, just what are you doing. This is not like you. Could it be that you have really been pushed back by Song Zhen until such

an extent?” Liu Bai clenched his teeth and quietly muttered in his heart.

Bang!

A shocking sound suddenly resounded over this chaotic rocky ground. Wind rippled as it spread. Everyone’s eyes looked over almost instant, only to see that Lin Dong had actually been forced to directly meet Song Zhen’s punch head on.

“Has he been forced into a corner...”

The corner of the eyes of quite a number of people twitched when they looked at this stiff situation. If they were to descend into a forcefully clash, Song Zhen would clearly be able to rely on his five Yuan Nirvana Stage strength to suppress Lin Dong.

“Haha, what can you do now?”

Song Zhen’s figure did not move as his palm wind swept apart. His eyes revealed an expression of ridicule as he looked towards Lin Dong, who was directly forced back ten steps.

Bang!

Lin Dong’s foot stepped heavily onto the ground. A deep footprint appeared. His body trembled slightly and a bright red colour had already appeared under his skin. He lowered his head, appearing to be suppressing something. A moment later, both of

his fist were suddenly clenched tightly. He was finally unable to endure any longer as he raised his head and emitted a low and deep voice.

Bang!

After this low and deep cry was emitted, everyone immediately saw circular substance like bright red flames suddenly sweeping out from within his body.

The rocks on the ground were destroyed wherever the flame passed. Not even powder remained. Those people with sharp eyes were also able to see the rising clusters of black coloured fire seedling within the flame.

“Is that the Nirvana Demon Flame?”

The chaotic rocky ground was instantly silent. Everyone were stunned as they looked at Lin Dong, whose entire body had turned bright red. They could sense a familiar ripple from Lin Dong's body.

That was... the Nirvana Tribulation!

Lanying and Feng Qing beside her on the large rock had a solidified expression on their faces. A shock had surged out from deep within their eyes like floodwaters.

They had finally understood why Lin Dong had turned so weak as

well as the reason for him repeatedly dodging Song Zhen's attacks...

He was actually undergoing a Nirvana Tribulation!

Undergoing a Nirvana Tribulation during battle?

Upon thinking of this, Lanying could not resist inhaling a deep breath of cold air despite her coolness. She muttered, "That fellow is really a freak..."



# Chapter 604: Four Yuan Nirvana Stage

---

The scarlet flame that contained the black-colored fire seedlings, began to spread out in a ring shape. All the huge boulders that were in the path of the extending flame were burned to nothing. Even the small pebbles on the ground were not spared. It appeared that even the dust on the ground had completely disappeared as well.

At this moment, the gazes from the onlookers surrounding the rubble land froze. All the commotion disappeared and were replaced by a weird dead silence.

Nirvana Demon Flame... Nirvana Tribulation...

Following which, the frozen gazes shifted gradually and landed upon the youth that was standing in the arena with his head lowered. The onlookers' eyes were filled with an intense fear.

Those who were able to make it here were considered rather capable. Passing through Nirvana Tribulation was an essential experience that everyone here had before. As such, they were extremely familiar with the energy undulation from a Nirvana Tribulation.

Usually, no one would have such a big reaction to this kind of energy undulation. After all, all of them had experienced personally. However, it was a different situation now. That was because the person who was experiencing the Nirvana Tribulation now was not seated down quietly and fighting with the tribulation.

Instead, he was battling a practitioner whose strength had reached Five Yuan Nirvana stage!

Undergoing the Nirvana Tribulation in the midst of a battle!?

Everyone felt deeply absurd when they thought of this. Nirvana Tribulation was the most frightening experience for any Nirvana stage practitioner. Every time this tribulation arrived, everyone would immediately look for a secluded area, or seek protection from friends in hopes of battling it in peace?

Most of the Nirvana stage practitioners did not die in the battles with their enemies, but rather they died during the Nirvana Tribulation. This goes to show just how terrifying the Nirvana Tribulation was. However... currently, they witnessed with their own eyes, someone who dared to undergo the Nirvana Tribulation in the midst of a battle!

This created a mind-boggling sensation in their minds.

Everyone was so shocked that they turned speechless.

“This fellow...” Liu Bai and his counterparts’ offense were slightly slowed down when they saw what happened. They finally understood why Lin Dong went all-out defensive in response to Song Zhen’s attacks. It turned out that this fellow had used a huge part of his energy to deal with the Nirvana Tribulation in his body.

Crazy.

They could only use this word to describe Lin Dong's action. Previously, if he could not keep up with Song Zhen's attacks, he might lose control both externally and internally and death would be imminent for him.

Mu Honglin's stared at the distant figure of Lin Dong and pursed her red luscious lips. This fellow had been creating miracles non-stop since the day they met.

In contrast to Liu Bai and his counterparts' amazement, the Xue Ying duo's faces became solemn at this sight. Shock and horror were surging through their eye pupils. Clearly, they had been intimidated by Lin Dong's action.

"Phew, such a worrisome lad..." Little Marten pursed his lips and heaved a sigh of relief. He did not worry much about Lin Dong's action. After being together for so many years, he clearly understood Lin Dong's prudent nature. This fellow liked to save up numerous trump cards. Sometimes, even Little Marten was amazed by some of the trump cards he had.

"Previously, I have reminded you not to celebrate so early. It seems like you have not heeded my advice," Little Marten smirked as he casted a mocking look at Song Que, whose face was extremely gloomy.

"Humph, what's there to be proud of? Even if that lad successfully passes through the Nirvana Tribulation, he will be at most be at the Four Yuan Nirvana stage!" Song Que sneered.

Little Marten curled the corners of his mouth slightly and did not reply Song Que. With a grasp of his palm, boundless energy gushed out and formed a powerful attack that surged towards Song Que.

Upon seeing Little Marten's incoming attack, Song Que did not dare to hesitate as well. He quickly activated his Yuan Power to face the incoming attack. After the previous exchange, he could clearly sense the deadliness of Little Marten. Even after he activated all the energy in his body, he merely stabilized his body. If he was to hesitate for a moment, he would be defeated utterly.

Apparently, Lin Dong's party's morale increased significantly at this moment. As long as the most troublesome Song Devils could be impeded, they would have a high chance of winning this battle. Lin Dong's initially dangerous situation had unexpectedly taken a new turn.

“This bastard....”

Under the gazes from the audience, Song Zhen's face gradually became solemn and the smile on his face disappeared bit by bit. He was staring at Lin Dong sinisterly. He was just as shocked as everyone else. However, at the same time, he was extremely furious as well. He could not imagine Lin Dong could multi-task and exchanging blows with him while undergoing the Nirvana Tribulation at the same time. Even he did not dare to do such a thing. However, Lin Dong was actually able to do it...

“I cannot let this fellow passes through the Nirvana Tribulation

successfully!”

A glint of chilliness flashed across Song Zhen’s eyes and his body surged forward abruptly. Violent Yuan Power gushed out and formed an enormous monstrous claw. Accompanied by an odd energy, the claw swiped at Lin Dong ruthlessly.

“It’s too late... to discover it now...”

Lin Dong raised his head slowly and revealed a smirk on his face. He reached out his palm before a streak of black-colored flame shot out and blasted towards that odd claw.

“Whoosh.”

As the streak of black-colored flame left Lin Dong’s palm, a powerful wave of Yuan Power gushed out from his body as well. Even his aura seemed to expand immensely at this moment.

“Has he successfully passed through the Nirvana Tribulation? How can it be so fast!”

Upon sensing the sharp rise in Lin Dong’s aura, Song Zhen’s face turned ashen in an instant. He could not believe that Lin Dong could pass through the fourth Nirvana Tribulation in such a short time!

Song Zhen did not really know much about Lin Dong. Therefore, he would not know how powerful Lin Dong’s physical body was,

after the latter mastered the ‘Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill’. Even though the fourth Nirvana Tribulation was considerably tough, it did not deal a fatal blow to Lin Dong. With an exceptional determination and vigorous physical body, Lin Dong was able to endure through the Nirvana Tribulation in a relatively short time!

Lin Dong could feel the surging Yuan Power in his body. As compared to the past, the boundless energy within his body was numerous times stronger. By making such a risky move, Lin Dong was able to close up the gap between the two men’s strength.

“You’re right. It’s indeed impossible to kill you with the strength of the Three Yuan Nirvana stage. However... I will be able to do so now!” Lin Dong raised his head and looked smilingly at Song Zhen’s ashen face. Then, he stretched his back and a sharp smile that contained chilliness appeared on his face.

After the first exchange of blows, Lin Dong could sense the huge disparity between Three Yuan Nirvana stage and Five Yuan Nirvana stage. Even if he used other methods to compensate for this disparity, it was still extremely arduous to obtain a victory. Clearly, Lin Dong was not satisfied with such a victory.

Therefore, after thinking through his strategy, he chose to take the risk and tackle the Nirvana Tribulation. As long as he could reach the Four Yuan Nirvana stage successfully, Song Zhen’s dominance would decrease significantly and rapidly.

“Arrogant lad, even if you reached the Four Yuan Nirvana stage, the gap between us is still immeasurable. Trying to challenge me

by moving up in Nirvana stage? Do you really think I am those trash that you fought in the past?” Song Zhen replied sinisterly as his eyes flickered.

Lin Dong smiled. Then, he reached out his palm face-up and bent it slightly. It was an obvious provocation.

“A piece of shit that is courting death!”

Song Zhen was enraged, Resplendent golden light gushed out from his body in an instant. Following which, he stamped his right foot on the ground. Immediately, the earth trembled and numerous earth dragons that were imbued with violent Yuan Power erupted from the ground. They then formed a circle around Lin Dong and blasted towards the latter with an earth-shattering force.

Upon seeing such powerful attack from the earth dragons, Lin Dong merely smiled. With a flip of his palm, the black metallic seal expanded instantaneously. An enormous black shadow descended from the sky and the berserking earth dragons exploded with a loud bang.

Rumble.

Mud and soil flew everywhere. The dust that pervaded the air dissipated rapidly after a short while. A huge metallic seal appeared and Lin Dong was standing atop it.

This time around, Lin Dong did not show any signs of dodging Song Zhen's attack. Instead, he forcibly crushed the latter's attack with a resolute posture!

Everyone could tell that the situation within the arena was changing gradually. The previous lopsided battle had turned around!

Lin Dong stood atop the metallic seal while facing the wind. His gaze was fixated on Song Zhen. Traces of chilliness were seeping out from his eyes.

Howl

Frantic Yuan Power was whizzing around Lin Dong's body. With a grasp of his palm, the Heavenly Crocodile Bone Spear appeared in his hand. He swiped his spear upward and pointed it at Song Zhen. All the Yuan Power in his body was spiralling around the bone spear, giving off a resplendent dazzle.

“Now... shall we have some fun?”

Meanwhile, atop the huge boulder, the corners of Lan Ying's mouth curled slightly as she saw the explosive expansion in Lin Dong's aura. She then turned to Qing Feng and said, “Do you believe my words now? Lin Dong is no pushover...”

Qing Feng nodded his head as a solemn look appeared on his face. He then muttered softly.



“He is indeed not simple... The situation is starting to take a turn. However, Song Zhen is not an ordinary individual as well. It’s still too early to tell who will emerge victorious...”

# Chapter 605: Taotie Spirit

---

Buzz!

Majestic Yuan Power spiralled around the bone spear. The powerful energy that it contained made it trembled slightly. Waves of weird humming sound that caused the air to undulate constantly were given off by the spear as well.

From Lin Dong's cold-blooded face, everyone could tell that he was about to erupt after being in the disadvantageous position for the previous exchanges.

In front of Lin Dong, Song Zhen's face was terrifyingly sombre. When Lin Dong passed through the Nirvana Tribulation in front of his eyes, he felt as if he was being played like a monkey. Since the day he entered the Ancient Battlefield, his journey had been smooth. After obtaining the inheritance from the four great demon sects, his already-powerful strength was taken up another notch. From his perspective, only the leaders of the top three super empires in the entire Ancient Battlefield would be able to repress him. A mere individual like Lin Dong was not even worth his time and attention!

However, it was also the case that the one whom he considered a mere individual dared to ridicule him in front of so many people!

“If today I don't rip you apart into a thousand pieces, what face will I Song Zhen have?”

A sinister look rose upon Song Zhen's face. Torrential dark glows suddenly erupted from his body. These dark glows were extremely odd. As they wiggled, traces of bizarre energy seemed to emit from them.

The energy was somewhat similar to the Devouring Ancestral Symbol's Devouring Power. The only difference was that this energy was much more frigid and tyrannical!

The dark glows congregated in Song Zhen's hands and materialized into a huge black-colored trident. There was a weird picture atop the trident. Indistinctly, it looked like an enormous beast that was roaring in the direction of the sky. Its huge mouth was extremely eye-grabbing. The beast looked as if it wanted to devour the entire heaven and earth.

As the trident was formed, a roar that seemed to come from the ancient times resounded throughout the area. The picture on the trident seemed to come to life as it started to wiggle and devour the Yuan Power between the Heaven and Earth continuously.

“Lin Dong, I will show you what Taotie Sect's inheritance is like!”

Song Zhen snarled in a low voice as killer intent gushed through his eyes. With a jolt of his body, a shadow surged forward. With a swish, the shadow appeared before Lin Dong in a ghost-like manner. The trident in his hands brought upon a torrential dark glow that engulfed Lin Dong like a deathly black hole.

“Swish!”

The torrential black glow was reflected in Lin Dong’s eyes. However, he did not show any signs of dodging even when he faced such a powerful attack from Song Zhen. With a glint of chilliness in his eyes, he jerked the bone spear in his hands. A ancient hissing sound broke out from the spear and a chilling glow ripped through the air. That kind of chilliness created eerie spear sparkles at the tip of the spear.

The spear sparkles spread out like the blossoming of a flower. However, a chilling killer intent was concealed within that magnificence.

As the spear sparkles formed and ripped through the air, they collided ferociously with the violent trident.

Clang!

Accompanied by flame and sparks, a crisp sound resounded through the air. At this moment, a ripple broke out in the formless air and extended in all directions with a terrifying speed.

“Swish swish swish!”

Horrifying gales swept across the area. Without any changes in his facial expression, Lin Dong jerked the bone spear in his hands again. An explosion of spear sparkles broke out and they hovered in the air like fallen flower petals. Like a bunch of exceptionally

sharp daggers, they then pierced towards Song Zhen's vital points with an extreme speed.

This unforeseen event was rather sudden. Even Song Zhen was stunned by this sight. By the time he returned to his senses, the deadly aura had reached him.

“Humph!”

Even though Song Zhen was in a dire straits, he did not show any signs of panicking. Instead, he gave a sarcastic snort. Dark glow surged through his body and oddly formed a black-colored huge mouth on his chest. A terrifying swallowing force erupted from the black mouth and completely swallowed the deadly spear sparkles.

“The Taotie Beast devours all living things in the heaven and earth. Even though your attack is powerful, it's useless against me! Haha!” Song Zhen laughed heartily towards the sky. Soon after, with a glint of chilliness in Song Zhen's eyes, the black glow of the trident in his hands began to dance and blasted in the direction of Lin Dong.

“Swallowing Power?”

Lin Dong brandished the bone spear in his arms and warded off Song Zhen's attack. His eyes froze slightly. Reportedly, the Taotie Beast possessed a kind of terrifying swallowing power. There was nothing in the heaven and earth that it could not swallow. From a different perspective, its swallowing power was somewhat similar to the Devouring Ancestral Symbol's Devouring Power.

However, the only Swallowing Power could do is to swallow. From a different perspective, it was not as powerful as the Devouring Power. Of course, there was nothing strange about this fact. After all, Devouring Power was bestowed by the Devouring Ancestral Symbol. And the Devouring Ancestral Symbol was the one of the eight great Ancestral Symbols between the Heaven and Earth. Even though the Taotie Beast was rather ancient and iconic, it was still considerably weaker than the Devouring Ancestral Symbol.

“Haha, Lin Dong, your strength will be continuously swallowed by the Taotie Beast during the battle with me. The more you fight me, the weaker you get. How are you going to challenge then?”

The trident in Song Zhen’s hands became an intense dark glow and engulfed Lin Dong. Every time it made contact with Lin Dong’s bone spear, the Swallowing Power would surge and swallowed some of the Yuan Power that was imbued within the spear.

If the situation was to carry on, Lin Dong’s Yuan Power would be lesser and lesser. Eventually, he would be in a dire straits.

However, this would happen if it was any other ordinary individual that was fighting Song Zhen. Clearly, Lin Dong did not belong to this category of individuals. It was rather childish to display the so-called Swallowing Power in front of Lin Dong, who actually possessed the Devouring Power.

Therefore, a ridiculous smile appeared on Lin Dong's face when he heard Song Zhen's mocking comment. Song Zhen was enraged when he saw Lin Dong's smile. Just as he was about to intensify his attack, his facial expression suddenly changed. That was because he could sense the dark energy that shrouded his trident was disappearing trace by trace.

Swoosh swoosh!

As the energy that shrouded his trident disappeared, Lin Dong looked as if he had consumed steroids and his attack became extremely ferocious all of a sudden. It was as if the energy that Song Zhen lost had been transferred to Lin Dong.

"How can this be!?" Song Zhen's facial expression changed drastically. Clenching his teeth, he quickly activated his Swallowing Power and tried to swallow Lin Dong's power. However, this time around, the result let him down. Lin Dong's Yuan Power seemed to be protected by something that completely neglected his Swallowing Power!

The most shocking thing was when his Swallowing Power made contact with Lin Dong's Yuan Power, the Swallowing Power was not only unsuccessful in swallowing the Yuan Power, but also it was disappearing rapidly trace by trace.

"There's something wrong with this fellow!"

Song Zhen shot a glance at the mocking look on Lin Dong's face and a tinge of chilliness crept up the former's back. He could not

understand what Lin Dong had done exactly, but he knew this weird occurrence definitely had something to do with the latter.

“It should be the inheritance that he obtained from the Green Dragon Temple. However, there definitely shouldn’t be any artifact that could give him such a weird power in the Green Dragon Temple!”

“Damn it, what trick is he exactly resorting to?”

Song Zhen’s eyes were flickering. After a moment, he still could not figure it out. He could only clench his teeth and retreat helplessly.

Numerous gazes from the onlookers around the rubble land were focused at the retreating Song Zhen. Soft whispers then broke out abruptly from the onlookers. Clearly, this was due to the obvious fact that Song Zhen was escaping from Lin Dong’s fearsome offense.

“Lad, don’t you be pleased with yourself so early!”

Song Zhen retreated. His facial expression became increasingly sinister. Since his slow-and-steady strategy did not work, he was going to use an absolute offense that could deliver instant victory!

Torrential weird dark glow pour out continuously from Song Zhen’s body. In a blink of an eyes, half the sky was engulfed in darkness. That kind of sun-blotting sky appeared rather terrifying.



Song Zhen was infuriated...

Everyone could tell from this scene that Song Zhen was truly infuriated by Lin Dong.

“Roar!”

Dark glow was wiggling frantically around Song Zhen’s body. Finally, under the numerous gazes from the onlookers, the dark glow materialized into a gigantic ancient pitch-black beast.

The body of the beast appeared extremely odd. The color of its entire body was pitch-black and its nose could not be seen at all. Only its enormous pitch-black mouth was extremely eye-catching.

As this ancient beast appeared, a horrifying swallowing force erupted from its mouth. At this moment, a tumult of huge winds broke across the area. Waves of Yuan Power between the heaven and earth were being swallowed by it.

“This is...”

Numerous dumbstruck gazes were focused at the black-colored beast. Gasps broke out among the onlookers around the rubble land.

Taotie Spirit!

# Chapter 606: Swallowing and Devouring

---

The large black beast carried a monstrous like fierceness as it arose in the sky. Waves after waves of black ripples spread apart, causing the surrounding Yuan Power to fluctuate intensely.

Fierce Beast Taotie!

Numerous eyes contained traces of shock when they saw that giant black beast in the sky. Its enormous black hole like mouth was extremely eye-catching. It is rumoured that its huge mouth could swallow everything in this world. Anything that lands within it would forever sink into darkness.

Many people had only heard of this renowned fearsome beast that existed in prehistoric times and had never saw it. Hence, when they saw that Song Zhen was actually able to summon the Taotie fierce spirit, everyone felt unusually shocked.

From the Taotie fierce spirit, they could sense a shockingly fierce and violent strength!

“Swoosh!”

Song Zhen stood on top of the large head of that Taotie fierce spirit. His gaze contained a cold smile as he looked down at Lin Dong. The Taotie fierce spirit that he had summoned was not merely an illusionary thing. Instead, it genuinely possessed a trace of Taotie fierce beast aura. Although this aura became extremely faint with the flow of time, in Song Zhen’s opinion, it was clearly

sufficient to deal with Lin Dong.

“Brat, I will let you taste what is called despair!”

Song Zhen’s smiled viciously. Immediately, his eyes completely became dense as his hand seal changed in a lightning like fashion. Immediately, two scarlet red appears appeared on Taotie’s fierce beast dark body. Finally, its eyes were locked onto Lin Dong.

Suo!

Lin Dong’s expression changed slightly when its two scarlet eyes locked onto him. He could sense the surrounding natural Yuan Power beginning to dissipate at this moment.

That Taotie fierce spirit had actually swallowed all the surrounding Yuan Power. By doing so, even if Lin Dong used martial arts, its strength would weaken due to the lack of natural Yuan Power around him.

“Skilled indeed.”

Lin Dong softly muttered himself. Taotie sect was indeed worthy of being the leader of the four great demon sects. The so called swallowing strength was actually this overbearing. If it was an ordinary person, that person would definitely feel restrained in this kind of environment and end up falling into a disadvantage in a fight.

“Howl!”

The Taotie fierce spirit howled towards the sky. Black ripples crazily emerged from within its black hole like big mouth. A suction force surged out before the large rocks and trees around were immediately uprooted. Finally, they were all absorbed until no traces of them remained.

Those surrounding observers had a drastic change in expression upon seeing this indiscriminate attack. Their bodies hurriedly withdrew, fearing that they would be absorbed into the Taotie fierce spirit’s large mouth.

Lanying and Feng Qing had somewhat grave expressions as they stood on a large rock and looked at the enormous Taotie fierce spirit that had been formed. Even they could sense a dangerous aura from the latter’s enormous body.

“Bang!”

The large body of the Taotie fierce spirit suddenly stomped on the ground and rose. The land rumbled and its large body immediately transformed into an enormous black light pillar that descended from the sky, covering a hundred feet radius around Lin Dong.

The black light pillar wiggled in a wild manner. Finally, it directly transformed into an incomparably enormous large mouth. The enormous mouth was just like a black hole of unfathomable depth, causing one to feel fearful when looking at it.

“Tao Zong fierce spirit, Heavenly Swallowing Mouth!”

Song Zhen cried out ferociously towards the sky while a rich savage expression surged up his face. He looked at Lin Dong, who was already locked onto by Taotie before a cruel expression appeared in his eyes.

“Lin Dong. Once you are swallowed by the Taotie fierce spirit, you will forever descend into its stomach of darkness. At that time, you will suffer a fate worse than death!” A vast and might pressure fell from the sky. It appeared lifelike as it covered a hundreds of feet radius around Lin Dong. All the large rocks within this area were forcefully pressured into powder and even the entire area had been forcefully pressured until it cave in by half a foot. Numerous crack lines began to wildly spread out in every direction like a spider web.

Lin Dong’s eyes were a little solemn as he stared at the dark huge mouth that had basically blocked off all of his retreat paths. There appeared to be a black hole filled with a cold and strange darkness hidden within its enormous mouth.

“Swoosh swoosh!”

The bone spear within Lin Dong’s hand flew out explosively before spear afterimages permeated the sky. Finally, they became like a storm as they struck at the enormous mouth.

However, these seemingly sharp spear afterimages were directly

swallowed the instant they came into contact with the dark huge mouth and they did not even affect it at all. It was just like a bug's arm trying to stop a car.

Lin Dong's eyes immediately narrowed upon seeing this scene.

“Haha, what a naive fellow.”

Song Zhen laughed out loud. Right now, it looked like victory was in grasp. After all, even five Yuan Nirvana Stage experts had an unusually difficult time defending against his Heaven Swallowing Mouth. Therefore, how could Lin Dong block it with just the strength of his four Yuan Nirvana Stage.

“It's over!”

The dark huge mouth whizzed down. Finally, it looked just like black ink was pouring down. It directly engulfed Lin Dong in front of numerous horrified eyes.

Sizzle!

The strange black ink poured down and a large deep pit quietly appeared on the ground within a hundred feet radius from where Lin Dong stood. Lin Dong and that ground had all disappeared at this moment...

“Has he been swallowed?”

Quite a number of individuals inhaled a breath of cold air upon seeing the pouring black ink and the enormous pit on the ground. It appeared as though nothing could exist amidst the black light of the Taotie fierce beast swallowing strength...

Song Zhen's body flashed and appeared in the air above the large pit. His eyes revealed a cold smile as he looked at the black coloured light cluster that was continuously wiggling. Regardless of what it was, as long as it was swallowed into its dark stomach, there was no way it could escape. Lin Dong would be digested at that place until nothing remained.

“The battle is over.”

Song Zhen stretched his lazy waist. His warm smile from before once again appeared on his face. With Lin Dong's death, it was likely that the morale on their side would also surge greatly. Seems like they would be the ones who will have the last laugh in this battle.

“Has Lin Dong been finished off?” Qing Feng was a little surprised as he looked at the wiggling black coloured light cluster and asked.

Lanying knitted her eyebrows. She was clearly aware of just how powerful the Taotie fierce beast that Song Zhen had unleashed was. Moreover, the most frightening thing of the Taotie fierce beast was its swallowing ability. Anything that was swallowed by its mouth would definitely not come out alive. Although the Taotie

fierce spirit that Song Zhen had summoned merely had a trace of the original form's aura, it was still incomparably frightening.

“He should be...” Lanying was quiet for a moment. She was just about to speak when her eyes suddenly shrunk. Her gaze immediately turned towards the cluster of black light and muttered, “Not finished off?”

Boom!

At the moment Lanying's eyes were focusing intently on it, the black light cluster that was wiggling strangely suddenly began to tremble intensely. Ripples continuously spread on its surface. It was as though a great change had occurred.

Song Zhen also experienced a drastic change in expression because of this scene. The smile on his face swiftly disappeared. Taking its place was a dense shocked expression. He was simply unable to believe that Lin Dong would actually be able to block the terrifying swallowing strength of the fierce beast Taotie...

However, regardless of how much disbelief he felt, the subsequent scene caused a paleness to surge up his face.

“Sizzle sizzle!”

The black light cluster wiggled swiftly and began to shrink with a speed visible to the naked eye before disappearing. That manner was as though its energy was being forcefully snatched away by



something.

Song Zhen's face trembled upon seeing this. This black light was the inheritance that he had obtained from the Taotie sect. He had relied on this to unleash the swallowing strength of the fierce beast Taotie. If it was to disappear in this baffling manner, he would suffer a heavy blow. Hence, he quickly refocused his mind in an attempt to retrieve that black light.

However, just as he was about to act, his expression turned even uglier. This was because he discovered that the connection between him and the black light was actually completely severed.

“What is the matter?”

A drop of cold perspiration drip down from Song Zhen's forehead. This strange scene had clearly exceeded his expectations.

“Sizzle sizzle!”

The black light also grew increasingly dim when Song Zhen's expression changed. Immediately, a human figure slowly appeared within that black light. The rays of black light converged. Finally, they completely fell into the hands of that human figure.

“Lin Dong!”

Song Zhen looked at the human figure that surfaced within the black light. His eyes shrunk into the size of a pinhole almost

instantly. A furious and shocked emotion surged into his voice.

He could not believe that not only was Lin Dong not digested by the swallowing strength of the fierce beast Taotie, but he had instead absorbed that swallowing strength into his body.

This scene really caused Song Zhen to feel as though his whole body was drenched in cold perspiration.

Lin Dong, who was below, also raised his head in front of Song Zhen's shocked eyes, before he smiled at the latter. However, his white glittering teeth caused Song Zhen to feel a chillness surge up from under his feet.

“Taotie lives up to its reputation. It taste quite good...”

# Chapter 607: Outcome

---

“You...”

In the air, Song Zhen was dumbstruck as he stared at Lin Dong, who gave a brilliant smile in response. Song Zhen’s entire body was filled with a chilly sensation. His finger trembled as he pointed at Lin Dong while an intense astonishment surged through his eyes.

“You actually devoured my Swallowing Power!?”

Song Zhen finally completed his sentence after a long time. His voice contained an unconcealable astonishment.

He could not believe that not only did his mythical beast’s Swallowing Power not do any damage to Lin Dong, but it was instead completely devoured by Lin Dong...

The Swallowing Power was known to be able to swallow any living things in this world. Anything that fell within it would be digested. However, not only did it fail to digest Lin Dong, it was instead devoured by Lin Dong through some unknown method. Song Zhen was absolutely dumbstruck by this scene.

“Gasp!”

Numerous gasps broke out in the surrounding area. The onlookers stared at Lin Dong as if they had seen a ghost.

“The Swallowing Power of the vicious Taotie might be strong, but the inheritance that you obtained is nothing compared to the genuine article. Therefore, it’s not difficult to overcome it.”

Lin Dong laughed mockingly as numerous shocking gazes focused on him. He then continued, “I’m afraid the Taotie Sect’s inheritance will lose thirty percent of its power after losing the Swallowing Power...”

From Song Zhen’s perspective, the loss of the Swallowing Power was akin to him cutting off one of his limbs, and it could be said that he had brought this upon himself. If he kept to his plan of using his martial art for offense, it would take Lin Dong quite a while to defeat him. However, in the end, he chose to show off the Swallowing Power that he obtained from the Taotie Sect in hopes of finishing Lin Dong off in one go.

If Lin Dong was any ordinary individual, he would be digested into nothingness after falling into the stomach of darkness. However, he possessed the Devouring Ancestral Symbol. As such, he did not find the Taotie Beast’s Swallowing Power to be as frightening as everyone else imagined it to be.

Therefore, when Lin Dong fell into the stomach of darkness, he immediately activated the Devouring Ancestral Symbol and Devouring Power spread outwards. Eventually, the stomach of darkness and the Swallowing Power that filled it were completely devoured!

In the battle between these two unique powers, Devouring Power had completely gained the upper hand....

Hence, not only did Lin Dong easily counter Song Zhen's killer move, he was also able to cause the latter to lose his most powerful weapon, Swallowing Power!

“Bastard... return me my Swallowing Power!”

The rigid smile on Song Zhen's face looked extremely comical. After a moment, his face suddenly turned distorted and malevolent. With a roar, his body charged forward.

Swish swish!

Several shadows appeared in the air. Following which, a powerful trident force materialized into a sky of shadows that engulfed Lin Dong like a torrential rain.

“Taotie Devil Trident!”

As the shadows descended from the sky, they gathered together at a terrifying speed, transforming into a black flash. Accompanied by a horrifying energy wave, the black flash violently thrust towards Lin Dong's skull. As the black flash flickered, there seemed to be an ancient roar emerging from within.

However, Lin Dong merely sneered upon seeing such a violent and raging attack from Song Zhen. With no indications of dodging

the attack, the Yuan Power in his body surged frantically. With a jerk of his arm, his bone spear flew.

The flying bone spear did not have a spectacular flying trajectory. However, the boundless Yuan Power that it carried was so solid it was almost real and filled with an astonishing destructive power.

“Tink!”

When the bone spear made contact with the trident, a crisp metallic sound was heard. Following which, a brutal gale swept out from the point of contact, creating violent ripples through the air.

“Without Swallowing Power, the Taotie Sect’s martial art seems to be rather weak.”

A smirk flashed across Lin Dong’s face. He could sense that Song Zhen’s offense had lost a part of its soul. Even though his offense appeared vigorous like before, it was no longer hard to deal with.

Song Zhen’s face was twisted. He brandished the trident wildly as a terrifying gale blasted towards Lin Dong. It looked as if Song Zhen was going to go crazy. Looks like the loss of the Swallowing Power had dealt a huge blow to him.

Even though his attacks were brutal and ferocious, Lin Dong was able to stop them completely. Moreover, signs of chaos and disorder started to appear in between Song Zhen’s attacks...

“Song Zhen is really reckless now,” Lanying softly said. Her beautiful eyes focused slightly as she witnessed this scene.

During a battle, a practitioner’s mental state was especially important. By attacking recklessly, one would reveal his or her weaknesses, and eventually, he or she would be killed by his or her opponent. Right now, Song Zhen was behaving in such a way.

“Lin Dong’s power is rather strange. To think that he was actually deal with the Taotie’s Swallowing Power!” Qing Feng replied with a serious look on his face.

“The Swallowing Power might be powerful but it’s not invincible. There are countless unique powers in this world. What Song Zhen had was merely one of these many powers. Hence, it’s not surprising that his Swallowing Power can be countered. Of course, the tricks up Lin Dong’s sleeves are rather powerful as well...”

Lanying then continued softly, “After all, he’s only at the Four Yuan Nirvana stage...”

“Right now, what do you think are the odds of Lin Dong winning the fight?” Qing Feng asked.

“If you ask me this question at the start of this battle, I would have said he had a forty percent chance of winning. However, right now, I’m afraid he has a sixty percent chance of winning or even higher,” Lanying muttered.

Qing Feng slightly nodded his head while shock flashed across his eyes. With his Four Yuan Nirvana stage strength, Lin Dong had sixty percent chance of defeating a Five Yuan Nirvana stage practitioner. Was this guy truly that fearsome....

“Furthermore, Lin Dong’s counterparts have also gained the upper hand in the other two battlefronts,” Lanying shifted her beautiful eyes and looked at Little Marten’s and Little Flame’s battles. Her face was especially serious when she saw Little Marten’s battle.

“The one called Lin Diao is extremely powerful. On the surface, he might even be stronger than Lin Dong. Look at Song Que. He has been completely suppressed since the start of the battle. As for the muscular Lin Yan, even though he is not having an easy time, his infernal aura makes Song Ba’s limbs tremble. The Lin Dong trio is indeed not simple.”

Upon hearing these words, Qing Feng shifted his gaze and nodded his head solemnly. He no longer dared to underestimate the trio. Their strength was comparable to the Song Devils. If Lin Dong and his counterparts could defeat the Song Devils, that would mean they were qualified to be on an equal footing as Lanying and Qing Feng himself!

Their names would definitely be on the Nirvana Golden Ranking!

“Clink clink clink!”

The spear and the trident crossed swords at lightning speed while



sparks flew in all directions. It was clear that Lin Dong and Song Zhen were fighting with zeal and anger. Their attacks were extremely fast and ruthless. Most of their attacks were targeted at each other's vital points. If one was to be hit by one of those attacks, a serious injury was inevitable.

Clink!

Another ferocious collision took place as a violent energy wave swept across the area. Enormous cracks appeared on the ground below both parties as they were knocked back by the resultant force.

“Swoosh!”

After both of them were knocked back, Lin Dong's facial expression suddenly turned ice-cold. Boundless Yuan Power gushed out from his body and formed five giant ancient fingers.

“Great Desolate Imprisoning Heavenly Finger!”

An icy glint flashed across Lin Dong's eyes. With a bellow, five giant ancient fingers quickly gathered to become an enormous ancient hand. As the enormous ancient hand appeared, a figure of nothingness appeared in this space.

Lin Dong did not stop after he successfully formed the Great Desolate Imprisoning Heavenly Finger. A green glow burst out from his body and charged right into the enormous hand.

Buzz buzz!

After the entry of the green glow, numerous huge green dragon scales grew on the enormous ancient hand. In a blink of an eye, the enormous ancient hand had become a green scaly hand!

“Boom!”

Lin Dong’s eyes were piercing cold. Without any hesitation, he clenched his fist and the enormous ancient hand imbued with the Heavenly Dragon Aura ripped through the air and smacked down onto Song Zhen.

Bang bang bang!

As the enormous green-scaled hand whizzed downward, the earth instantly cracked open. The onlookers who stood too close to the battle were knocked backwards as they spit out a mouthful of fresh blood.

As Song Zhen watched the enormous incoming green-scaled hand, his facial expression became extremely grim. He could feel an intense danger from the hand.

Buzz!

“Taotie Devil Armour!”

A bright black glow frantically gushed out and twirled around Song Zhen's body. The dark glow solidified rapidly and eventually formed a black armour. A dark aura surrounded the armour which gave off waves of energy .

“Boom!”

As the devil armour was formed, the enormous green-scaled hand was already on its way down. Finally, under the numerous gazes from the onlookers, the hand ruthlessly smacked down onto Song Zhen.

Bang!

Accompanied by a huge bang, an earth-shattering dark glow erupted from the armour on Song Zhen's body. His body flew back from the impact in a sorry state. The dark aura quickly congregated and formed numerous dark mouths that absorbed the tremendous impact.

“Haha, even though I've lost the Swallowing Power, you still can't kill me!”

As the numerous dark mouths disappeared, Song Zhen's body stabilized while still several feet from the ground, before he raised his head and chuckled sinisterly.

“Is that so”

The corners of Lin Dong's mouth curled up. Suddenly, he forcefully pressed both his palms onto the ground.

Bang!

The ground beneath Song Zhen suddenly weirdly split in a strange manner. Under numerous shocking gazes from the onlookers, torrential dark light erupted from the crevice and materialized into a huge mouth of darkness. Within the huge mouth, there appeared to be a black hole of unfathomable depths.

"This is..." Song Zhen's pupils shrunk when he saw the huge mouth of darkness that abruptly formed below his feet.

"Heaven Devouring Mouth!?"

Lin Dong's facial expression was ice-cold. As he clenched his fist, the mouth of darkness whizzed upwards and swallowed the petrified Song Zhen.

"Now, I will let you have a taste of my Heaven Devouring Mouth..."

As darkness filled Song Zhen's eyes, he heard Lin Dong's cold and indifferent voice.

# Chapter 608: Do You Still Have Strength?

---

A giant mouth of darkness broke out from the ground and swallowed Song Zhen's body at a shocking speed, in front of numerous terrified gazes.

Sizzle sizzle!

Song Zhen disappeared immediately after his body was being swallowed. Only a large cluster of strange black light wiggled in midair. Meanwhile, a heart palpitating energy faintly scattered out from within in.

“Heaven Devouring Mouth?”

The surroundings of the messy rocky ground was silent for a second before everyone finally recovered. Immediately, they let out a sharp scream. They had seen Song Zhen's powerful attack before. However, they were unable to imagine that Lin Dong was also able to use a similar move...

“How is this possible?”

Amidst the commotion, everyone's eyes were filled with shock. How could Lin Dong use this martial art that belonged to the Taozong sect?

“What is going on?” Feng Qing, who was seated on the large rock, also had a shocked expression. His eyes locked onto that wiggling

black light. Song Zhen's aura had disappeared immediately ever since he was swallowed. It was as though he had been swallowed into the black stomach.

Lanying's pretty face was similarly filled with a stunned expression. She frowned slightly and muttered, "The Heaven Devouring Mouth that Lin Dong used might be the same as the one Song Zhen displayed. However, its ripple is extremely obscure. It is likely because he forcefully snatched away Song Zhen's "Swallowing Strength"..."

"How is it possible for Lin Dong to snatch Song Zhen's Swallowing Strength? Even we cannot do that." Song Qing muttered to himself.

"We might not be able to do it, but that does not mean that others cannot as well. Lin Dong is not a simple person." Lanying said.

Feng Qing could no longer remain noncommittal in face of these words from Lan Ying. Lin Dong was able to force Song Zhen until such an extent. This was already sufficient to prove that he was capable. If he could really defeat Song Zhen, there would be no more than five people in the entire Golden Nirvana Ranking who could defeat him!

In other words, the current Lin Dong would more or less have the qualifications to be ranked as the top five members of the Hundred Empire War!

Given his background from a low rank empire, being able to reach such a stage would be truly quite terrifying...

“Bang!”

A miserable figure shot backwards from a battleground a short distance from the messy rocky area. After which, he forcefully stabilized its body around five feet in front of a large rock. A terrifying strength spread out from within his body and directly shattered the large rock behind the it. A groan was also emitted from his mouth. Clearly he had suffered some injuries.

“Is that all you can do?” A ghost like figure appeared in the midair and looked down at the man, who had groaned and retreated below. The figure laughed faintly. His handsome face had an expression of ridicule.

The person with the handsome appearance was naturally Little Marten, while that miserable person was Song Que, who was fighting with him. Since the very beginning, Little Marten had gotten the upper hand. In fact, Song Que no longer harboured any intentions of winning. Instead, he merely wanted to tie Little Marten down.

Song Que clearly understood the extent of Little Marten’s strength after their fight. Comparatively speaking, he knew that he was weaker than Little Marten. Furthermore, the latter had various peculiar tactics and he was extremely ruthless. Therefore, it was simply impossible for him to defeat such an opponent alone.

A steely green expression emerged on his face when Song Que heard Little Marten ridicule. However, he could only grit his teeth and swallow his anger at this moment.

“Once big brother finishes off that brat, he will be able to free himself. At that time, both of us will join forces. Regardless of how unusual this person is, he would definitely end up dying!”

Song Que rubbed away the trace of blood at the corner of his mouth. After which, his eyes swiftly drifted towards the battleground of Lin Dong. When he saw Song Zhen being swallowed by the large black mouth, the fearsome expression on his face suddenly solidified. He looked just like a clown, appearing exceptionally comical...

“Looks like there is no hope for your final life saving straw...” Little Marten mocked.

“That brat actually wants to trap my big brother with his strength? He must be out of his mind!” Song Que spoke sternly. However, shock flashed across his eyes. This proved that he was feeling uncertain in his heart.

However, Little Marten was too lazy to be bothered about this. His eyes looked towards the black light. Even he felt quite surprised that Lin Dong was actually able to force Song Zhen till such a sorry extent in such a short period of time.

At the same time, some of the other battlegrounds, including that of Xue Ying and the others, had also sensed this commotion. After



which, their faces also quickly turned much paler instantly.

“So powerful.”

Compared to the pale white faces of Xue Ying’s group, a wild joy and shocked expression surged up the faces of Liu Bai’s group. It was a long while later before they said these two words with some difficulty.

The battle between Lin Dong and Song Zhen could be said to be full of ups and downs. From the initial disadvantage, Lin Dong had currently firmly obtained the upper hand. Song Zhen, who had acted in a mighty fashion previously, had now been reduced into an extremely miserable state.

With regards to the shocked gazes surrounding him, Lin Dong acted as though he did not see them. His eyes were staring firmly at the squirming black light in midair. Though others might not be aware of it, he clearly understood that the thing hidden within this black light was not some Swallowing Strength. Instead, it was genuine Devouring Strength.

Lin Dong had only purposefully used a method similar to the Swallowing Strength in order not to expose the existence of his Devouring Ancestral Symbol. Moreover, the ripples between the two were also a somewhat similar. Therefore, it was easy for him to replicate the move.

“Bang bang!”

Under the focus of Lin Dong, the black light that wrapped around Song Zhen suddenly began to shake intensely. It looked as though there was something within it that was struggling wildly.

Lin Dong's eyes remained indifferent and he did not make any unnecessary move. The wiggling of that black light became increasingly intense and the Devouring Strength was permeated within was wildly being emitted.

“Boom boom boom!”

Song Zhen, who was swallowed by it, had clearly showed some traces of going crazy. A terrifying attack erupted within the black light. One could even hear his furious roar being vaguely emitted.

The expressions of quite a number of people changed slightly upon hearing Song Zhen's roar. That roar contained a feeling of having met with a dead end. Could it be that “Heaven Devouring Mouth” that Lin Dong had used was really so troublesome to the point that even Song Zhen was unable to escape?

Some hand prints were continuously surfacing on the black light. Everyone could sense the hysteria attitude of the person within it.

“Boom!”

However, it must be said that Song Zhen's actual strength was quite strong. Even though he had landed in this dangerous state, his wild all out effort had caused numerous crack lines to actually

be formed on this dense seemingly unbreakable black light.

Those crack lines spread swiftly. Finally, they completely spread apart. At the same time, numerous light figures also erupted out from within at a lightning like speed. They panted as they paused in the midair. Their expressions were pale white as their eyes became as ferocious as an evil ghost.

“He has come out!”

Numerous exclamations erupted from the surroundings of the messy rocky area as everyone looked at Song Zhen, who had broken the black light. Song Que, Xue Ying and the rest sighed in relief, appearing as though they had been relieved of a great burden.

“It looks like you have really thought too much!” Song Que smiled ferociously as he looked at Little Marten before speaking.

“Is that so?” Little Marten lifted his eyebrows. His face contained a playful smile.

Song Que’s heart immediately sunk when he saw this smile of the other party. At this juncture, Song Zhen, who had emerged from the black light, was staring viciously right at Lin Dong. His expression was so pernicious that words could not describe it properly.

“Swoosh!”

Song Zhen did not utter any unnecessary words as his figure directly rushed out. An incomparably ferocious palm wind slammed furiously towards the waiting Lin Dong from all directions.

However, Lin Dong did not do anything in the face of this attack by Song Zhen. He slowly shook his head as his eyes looked at a fearsome looking Song Zhen with indifference. After which, he gently raised his hand and gently collided with Song Zhen's palm wind.

“Bam!”

A clear sound was emitted. However, the expected shocking forceful fluctuation did not appear. Song Zhen's seemingly ferocious palm wind had completely scattered when it made contact with Lin Dong's hand.

“Is there still any strength left within your body?”

Lin Dong raised his head. He looked at the savage face that was within close proximity. It was possible for him to detect that torrent like fear that surged out from deep within the other party's eyes. After which, he smiled slightly. The terrifying strength on his palm erupted instantly!

Crack!

The sound of bones cracking resounded over this chaotic rocky ground in an ear piercing manner instantly.

# Chapter 609: Devastating

---

Crack!

The sound of bones cracking sounded out in the messy rock ground. Instantly, all the chaos and noise died down, as everyone turned to look at the center of the ground.

In the central area of the messy rock ground, there were two figures, one up in the air and one down below, who had just crossed blows. Song Zhen's body was hovering in mid-air as he extended his right palm. However, he was firmly stopped by Lin Dong's hand.

The sound of bones cracking had emerged from this spot.

Whose bone had been broken?

This thought flashed past everyone's minds. All of them knew that the victor was probably going to emerge soon. Therefore, none of them dared to even blink their eyes.

“Ha.”

Amidst the silence, Lin Dong's elegant figure suddenly shifted. Promptly, an icy cold smile slowly emerged on his face. Meanwhile, there was a rich killing intent flowing within his smile.

After he smiled, Lin Dong suddenly took a step forward. His palm was just like a eagle claw as he tightly gripped onto Song Zheng's wrist. Following which, with a jerk of his arm, a massive force immediately uprooted Song Zheng forcefully. After a swirl in mid-air, Lin Dong finally slammed him viciously against a large rock in front of the crowd's bewildered eyes.

Boom!

A deep and heart palpitating echo, which was produced when his body slammed against that large rock, sounded out across the arena. Immediately, that large rock exploded in bits, while gravel flew everywhere.

Buzz! Chii!

That terrifying impact unreservedly gushed into Song Zheng's body. Instantly, he felt as if all the organs in his body had shifted due to that impact, as he vomited out a mouthful of fresh blood.

Boom!

However, just as his body landed, Lin Dong's cold face once again appeared in front of him. There seemed to be an coldness of unfathomable depth gushing out from his eyes.

Swoosh!

Maintaining his tight grip on Song Zhen's wrist, Lin Dong pursed

his lips before he dragged Song Zhen and ran off. Following which, he viciously flung him at those large rocks nearby.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

In the arena, large rocks continuously exploded. Lin Dong continued to grip onto Song Zhen and use his body like a bat. In an extremely domineering fashion, he flung Song Zhen against those large rocks.

Tsss!

Everyone in the messy rock ground seemed to have slowed down. As they stared at a helpless Song Zhen, all of them involuntarily exhaled a breath of cold air as shock permeated their eyes.

All of them were simply unable to believe that a top tier individual who originated from one of the ten great super empires, and had obtained the inheritance of Taozong, would actually lose to Lin Dong in such a devastating fashion!

“Gulp.”

Qingfeng's throat rolled, while he swallowed a mouthful of saliva. Glancing at Lin Dong's bloodstained hands, he turned to find a feeble Song Zhen only to discover an expressionless Lin Dong. Suddenly, for no particular reason, a coldness surged up across his entire body. This fellow is truly terrifying.



“Song Zhen has really lost.” Lanying softly sighed with a complicated expression on her face. Though she could sense Song Zhen’s feeble aura, she did not know why Song Zhen would suddenly lose all means of resistance. Evidently, this must be one of Lin Dong’s peculiar tactics. Furthermore, even she felt fearful of this tactic.

The instant this battle ended, Xue Ying and the rest were all in shock as they stared at this scene. Meanwhile, their pale faces turned increasingly pale. This outcome had completely exceeded everyone’s expectations. After all, it was impossible for them to imagine that Song Zhen would actually be defeated.

Furthermore, he lost so devastating to a Four Yuan Nirvana stage member from a low rank empire...

“Is that fellow so powerful...” Fear was faintly flowing within their eyes when Xue Ying and the rest saw how Lin Dong casually abused Song Zhen’s body like a weapon. His exceptional rage and violence caused their hearts to shiver.

“Big Brother!”

Song Que and Song Ba were also stunned by this scene. However, they promptly recovered their senses. Immediately, rage surged into their eyes, before their figures flashed as they attempted to rescue him.

“I have played with you for long enough. Guess it’s time to end it.” Just as Song Que was about to make a move, a phantom-like

figure mysteriously appeared in front of him. When he saw that smiling beautiful face, Song Que's pupils immediately shrunk.

“Swoosh!”

Little Marten leaned forward before he instantly closed the gap between him and Song Que's body. Following which, a palm filled with a dark purple glow faintly transformed into a black claw. With a loud swoosh, it tore through the sky. Before Song Que had the time to react, that icy cold palm had already solidly slammed against his palm.

“Buzz Chii!”

Song Que's body solidified. In the next instant, his body instantly flew out as he vomited blood. Finally, he landed hideously on the ground and no one knew if he was still alive.

“Second Brother!” Song Ba, who had already taken a few steps forward, immediately exclaimed in shock when he saw this sight.

“Godly Transformation, Sky Demonic Claw!”

However, before Song Ba could finish his sentence, a deep tiger growl filled with a savage killing intent sounded out from behind him. Following which, a terrifying shockwind swept forth from behind and encapsulated him.

When he felt that savage shockwind, Song Ba's expression

drastically changed. As he quickly turned around, a resplendent golden glow quickly agglomerated. In a blink of an eye, it has transformed into a sturdy golden shield.

Clang!

After that golden shield materialized, a large and black tiger claw quickly arrived. Without a shred of hesitation, it carried a savage killing intent as it directly slammed against that shield.

Clang!

A terrifying aftershock swept forth as a black light ran amok in the sky. However, to Song Ba's bewilderment, cracks began to swiftly appear on that golden shield.

As those cracks rapidly grew, in mere seconds, they had reached their limits. Finally, that golden shield exploded with a loud bang.

Dong!

The instant that shield exploded, Song Ba, who was standing behind it, had lost his final line of defence. As that black tiger claw swept forth, with a single swipe, his entire body was viciously flung deep into the ground.

As the ground collapsed, a giant ditch appeared. Meanwhile, Song Ba was directly buried in that deep ditch...

Boom!

A muscular figure that seemed just like the devil landed beside the ditch. Little Flame, who was slightly wounded, wiped off the blood stains on his face. With a savage glint in his eyes, his arms stretched out before he directly pulled out an unconscious Song Ba.

When the surrounding crowds saw this sight, they instantly turned silent. In mere seconds, two of the Three Song Devils have been instantly defeated!

Incorrect. Perhaps all three of them have been defeated. Immediately, all of their attention quietly shifted. Dust filled the arena, while all the large rocks nearby have been blasted apart by Lin Dong. Of course, the weapon he used was Song Zhen's physical body.

Amidst the dust, a figure slowly emerged. However, his soft footsteps caused several people's heart to tremble.

That man finally emerged from the dust and that elegant figure naturally belonged to Lin Dong. Right now, there was a gentle smile on his face, while his hands were covered with blood. Following which, he dragged a slightly twisted figure as he slowly walked out. Anywhere he walked past, a blood trail will follow and it was extremely eye catching.

After he emerged from the dust, Lin Dong swung his arm before he directly tossed that bloodied figure away, just like a piece of

garbage.

Dong.

The deep sound of that man landing in the arena seemed to have directly struck everyone's heart and caused their bodies to violently tremble.

Is that really the boss of the Three Song Devils, Song Zhen?

In the messy rock ground, everyone stared at that bloody figure, before they turned to look at the smile on Lin Dong's face. Immediately, a chilling sensation arose in their hearts.

That fellow was simply too vicious and he actually beat up a Five Yuan Nirvana stage practitioner till such a horrifying state.

“Still up for a fight?”

Lin Dong lifted his head as he stared at Xue Ying and the rest, who had pale expressions on their faces, before he laughed and asked.

Lin Dong's smile was fairly congenial. However, to Xue Ying and the rest, he looked just like the devil. Immediately, their faces turned deathly white. Any resistance in their hearts have been completely crushed the instant Lin Dong tossed out that bloody figure.

“If you are not going to fight, surrender your Nirvana Seals... Then, scram.”

Xue Ying's and the rest's expressions were in flux. However, eventually their eyes dimmed down. All of them understood that this time around, they had lost completely.

“Lin Dong's group won...”

On top of a large rock, Lanying heaved a deep sigh of relief. Meanwhile, a peculiar glint flashed across her eyes as she softly muttered.

The Three Song Devils have actually lost...

The Lin Dong trio will definitely ascend in the Nirvana Golden Ranking and become the most dazzling individuals in the Ancient Battlefield!

Lanying lifted her head as she stared at the Hundred Empire Mountain, that extended into the clouds. It is likely that even those super sects, that were keenly observing this fight, would be shocked by this result!

# Chapter 610: Qin Tian

---

The atmosphere around the messy rocky ground was completely silent. Even the air itself faintly showed signs of solidifying. A rich bloody scent was scattering over from the coagulation.

The Three Song Devils have been completely defeated.

As they looked at the three miserable-looking figures in the arena, everyone knew that this earthshaking battle has ended.

Lin Dong slowly stepped forward in front of the completely silent crowd. When he reached Song Zhen's body, he bent down and prised apart his hand. Immediately, a purple-gold coloured Nirvana Seal appeared.

Quite a number of people around drooled when they saw that purple-gold coloured Nirvana Seal. As long as they were able to obtain this, they would gain the qualifications to advance into the Nirvana Golden Ranking.

Of course, despite their desire, no one really dared to do anything. Even those powerful three devils from the Song clan have been defeated by Lin Dong's group. Hence, which ordinary expert would dare to challenge them?

“Lin Dong, you actually dare to offend my Sky Devil Empire. You are courting death. I might not be able to do anything to you in this ancient dimension, but once we leave this place, the strength of my Sky Demon Empire is sufficient to crush you into a pulp!”

Song Zhen was really hardy. Even though he had been thoroughly thrashed by Lin Dong to such a miserable state, he was still able to live. His incomparably weak and vicious eyes stared at Lin Dong as he panted.

Lin Dong's expression was indifferent. He ignored Song Zhen and directly grabbed the latter's hand. After which, he took his Nirvana Seal. Light surged as he unceremoniously absorbed all his purple gold Nirvana Seal.

Swoosh!

After Lin Dong absorbed Song Zhen's purple-gold Nirvana Seal, his Nirvana Seal, which originally held some purple-gold luster, immediately released a purple glow. The light became increasingly dense before finally completely transforming into a purple-gold colour.

At this moment, Lin Dong had officially stepped into the Nirvana Golden Ranking!

"Lin Dong! Just you wait. After we leave this ancient domain, I will make sure you die miserably!"

Song Qing was extremely furious when he saw this. His face, which was already covered with fresh blood, appeared even more terrifyingly distorted. However, he did not have any strength left to fight with Lin Dong currently. Hence, he could only roar out in rage, while his eyes were filled with rich viciousness.



Lin Dong narrowed his eyes slightly as he looked at the screaming Song Zhen. The latter's cry immediately came to a halt. Song Zhen had sensed a true killing intent from Lin Dong's eyes.

“Since you have repeatedly reminded me to get rid of the root of my problems, it seems like you might be a little disappointed if I do not act as you say.” Lin Dong smiled. However, his smile revealed a chilling aura.

Swoosh!

Lin Dong did not give Song Zhen any time to react after uttering those words. He clenched his hand before his Heavenly Crocodile Bone Spear quickly appeared. It directly transformed into a chilly glint that ruthlessly pierced towards Song Zhen's throat.

The chilling glow was magnified in Song Zhen's eyes. A shocked expression also appeared with his eyes. Clearly, he did not expect that Lin Dong would disregard the fact that he came from a super empire and actually attack him directly.

Regardless of how shocked he currently was, he did not possess any ability to retaliate against Lin Dong. Hence, all he could do was look at the cold glow, which had instantly arrived, with a terrified expression.

Clang!

However, Lin Dong's eyes suddenly shrunk, just when the tip of

the spear that contained a gold glow pierced towards Song Zhen. A light suddenly tore through space before colliding against the tip of the spear with lightning like speed. Waves after waves of extremely powerful force erupted. It actually forcefully shook Lin Dong's bone spear until it moved.

Chi!

The tip of the spear cut across Song Zhen's face, leaving behind a deep bloody scar. After which, it violently tore a hundred feet large gully on the ground.

Lin Dong was expressionless as he glanced at Song Zhen, who was screeching while covering his face with his hands. After which, he lifted his head. His tone was indifferent, "This is a grudge between us and the Sky Demon Empire. May I know which friend wish to intervene?"

Swoosh swoosh!

Everyone's attention suddenly shifted, before they finally paused at a gigantic tree not far away. Three figures appeared at that spot.

The person in front looked like a young man. He was wearing white clothes and there seemed to be an image of a rising sun on his white clothes. That man was tall and he looked quite handsome. He stood with his hands behind his back and there was a unique aura flowing from him.

Two men with lazy expressions also stood behind this white clothed man. Their clothes also had a large rising sun image. It was likely that they came from the same empire.

“Is that... Tianyuan Empire’s Qin Tian?”

The surroundings erupted into numerous exclamations that contained a great shock when the three of them appeared. Lin Dong could hear an extremely dense respect from within their voices.

“Tianyuan Empire?” Lin Dong congelated his eyes. His expression became much more solemn. Tianyaun Empire was ranked number one amongst the ten super empires!

“Even Qin Tian was attracted by it?” Lanying’s group, who was situated on another large rock, frowned slightly upon seeing this. Their eyes, however, contained a rich fear.

“This friend, Song Zhen’s group had already been defeated. I think that it’s best for one not to go overboard in anything one does. What do you think?” Qin Tian stared at Lin Dong and spoke with a faint smile.

Qin Tian gave off an extraordinary aura and there was a convincing spirit contained within his words. It seemed like he was someone whom everyone regularly looked up to. Although he phrased his words as a question, Lin Dong did not hear a slightly conciliatory tone in his words. Instead, it sounded more like a command.

Lin Dong's eyes flashed. As he gripped his palm, he immediately withdrew his bone spear. Although he was unhappy with Qin Tian's tone, there was no need for him to clash with the latter. Tianyuan Empire was the strongest of the ten super empires and his strength would definitely be quite terrifying.

“Take their Nirvana Seals.” Lin Dong turned his head towards Little Marten and spoke faintly.

Little Marten lazily glanced at Qin Tian's group upon hearing this. After which, he ceased speaking any further. He turned around and took the Nirvana Seals of Song Que's group.

“All of you, could you also not do this on account of the Tianyuan Empire and me? Haha, after all, it is not easy for them to obtain their purple-gold colored Nirvana Golden Seals.” However, just as Little Marten moved, Qin Tian's eyes flashed. He mused for a moment before speaking.

Everyone around turned quiet after he spoke. It was an extremely common for one to have their Nirvana Seals taken after being defeated and no one would think that this was overboard. That was because Nirvana Seal was the reward for the victor.

Although everyone understood this rule within their hearts, no one dared to oppose when they saw that the one who had spoken, was the leader of the most powerful empire in this Ancient Battlefield, Tianyuan Empire .

Liu Bai's group had a somewhat ugly expression. They hesitated for a moment before they turned to look at Lin Dong, clearly awaiting his decision.

Lin Dong's expression did not change much despite the attention. In fact, his eyes did not have a single shred of anger. He turned his head, looked towards the giant three and asked in a calm voice, "If we were defeated today, do you think that Song Zhen's group would show mercy and not snatch our Nirvana Seals?"

Not only would they snatch your Nirvana Seals. Most Likely, you will be killed as well! This was likely the common thought in the minds of quite a number of people around.

Qin Tian looked down at Lin Dong from above, with his hands behind his back. With a faint smile, he said: "Although Song Zhen's group acts in an arrogant fashion, they are likely not unreasonable people."

"Nonsense." Some people parted their mouths. His words could only fool a child.

Lin Dong smiled and shook his head. He clearly felt that the other party's words were extremely comical. Therefore, he did not plan to bother with them. He looked towards Liu Bai's group and waved his hand.

"Do it, collect your reward."

Standing on the large tree, Qin Tian grinned before he shook his head with a soft sigh.

“Swoosh!”

A human figure behind Qin Tian laughed in a strange manner just as the latter was shaking his head. That figure rushed out with a ‘swoosh’ sound and appeared in front of Lin Dong in a flash. A chilly glow surged on the tip of the latter’s finger. It had a densely cold strength permeating over it as it mercilessly pressed towards Lin Dong’s forehead.

Lin Dong’s expression turned slightly cold when he saw this fellow attack as he pleased. However, before he could act, Little Marten appeared in front of him. He also pressed his finger forward without saying a word.

Boom!

Those two fingers that contained a shocking strength collided in the midair. Waves after waves of powerful storm spread apart. After which, it directly shook the ground, forming over a dozen large cracklines.

Rippling strength spread apart. That figure immediately shot backwards. His toes pressed on the air before landing back on the giant tree. His original mocking expression had become a lot more serious.

Little Marten's body did not move. His pretty face contained a faint chill as he glanced at the person who had attacked earlier. After which, he turned towards Qin Tian, parted his mouth and spoke in a dense manner, "I will accompany you if you wish to fight. I do not feel you are deserving of any respect."

"Go and take the Nirvana Seals. Grandpa Marten shall see who dares to continue speaking nonsense!" Little Marten turned his head and cried out coldly towards Liu Bai's group.

Liu Bai's group was stunned when they saw Little Marten's actions. It was the first time that Su Kui, Mo Ling and the rest had seen the usually lazy Little Marten act in such a forceful and overbearing manner. He completely did not give this Tianyuan Empire face.

However, after hesitating for a moment, they clenched their teeth before they completely absorbed the Nirvana Seals from Xue Ying and the rest.

While they were absorbing the Nirvana Seals, Qin Tian on the large tree also knitted his brows slightly. His hands, which were placed behind his back, were gently lowered.

Quite a number of people present felt their hearts tightened when they saw his action. It was rumoured that Qin Tian was the strongest individual in the Ancient Battlefield. Could it be that he was going to attack now?

# Chapter 611: Opening of the Hundred Empire Mountain

---

Lin Dong stared at Qin Tian, who was slowly laying his hands down, as a chilliness flowed vaguely within his eyes. The Tian Yuan Empire was indeed powerful and Qin Tian's reputation was truly fearsome. Nonetheless, even if they were to attack, Lin Dong's group was not afraid of them at all.

Little Flame's muscular figure directly arrived behind Lin Dong. The black metal rod in his hand heavily slammed onto the ground and it's frightening strength directly shook the land.

After the big battle previously, there were still some traces of blood remaining on Little Flame's body. Meanwhile, his face was also filled with a ferocious and evil aura. Black light lingered on his body and occasionally transformed into a black fog.

Standing beside them, Little Marten's handsome face was devoid of expression. His eyes merely glanced at Qin Tian once. Over the year, there may have been individuals who had the qualifications to act haughty in front of him, however, this so called strongest expert of the Tian Yuan Empire did not have the qualification to do so, much less a youngling that had just came from that place...

Even though the current him could not easily use the physical strength of his Celestial Demon Marten's body, if he were to unleash his various tricks, it was likely that these none of these geniuses could seriously contend with him.



Mo Ling, Su Kui, Su Rou and the others did not hesitate even a little when they saw this tense atmosphere. Immediately, all of them stood behind Lin Dong.

The eyes of Liu Bai and the rest changed continuously for a moment, before they finally clenched their teeth violently and gathered behind Lin Dong. Currently, all of them were in the same boat as Lin Dong. If Lin Dong was to fall, it was likely that they would not be spared as well. In that case, why should they be afraid of offending the Tianyuan Empire...

Those people around the messy rocky area turned into an uproar when they saw this scene. Clearly, they did not expect that this group would actually dare to challenge the dignity of the Tianyuan Empire and Qin Tian.

He was the leader of the ten super empires!

“Those fellows...” Lan Ying also gently frowned her eyebrows upon witnessing this scene. She similarly disliked Qin Tian and the Tianyuan Empire and her Celestial Empire were not on friendly terms. Both parties had clashed occasionally because of some resources. However, even she could not deny his strength.

Qin Tian was the most outstanding person amongst the younger generation of the Tianyuan Empire. Not only did he possess a shocking talent for martial arts but he was also quite shrewd. Based on what Lan Ying was aware of, Qin Tian had already caught the eye of Yuan Gate, the strongest of the eight super sects in the Eastern Xuan Region. Therefore, his future was limitless.

Of course, the Tianyuan Empire was originally a subordinate faction to the “Yuan Gate” and it was not surprising for Qin Tian to have caught their eyes. After all, there were quite a number of experts from the Tianyuan Empire who held key positions in “Yuan Gate”.

“Qin Tian is not comparable to Song Zhen. There is quite a deep relationship between the Sky Devil Empire and the Tianyuan Empire. Hence, Qin Tian was clearly unwilling to see Song Zhen’s group falter because of Lin Dong’s group...” Qing Feng’s expression was grave as he spoke.

“It is very possible that he has already reached six Yuan Nirvana stage.” Lan Ying laughed bitterly as she softly spoke.

“Six Yuan Nirvana stage?” Even Qing Feng, who had prepared himself, had a change in his expression when he heard this, before he exclaimed in shock. Six Yuan Nirvana stage was enough to allow Qin Tian to look down on everyone here.

“Looks like the champion of the Hundred Empire War this time around is going to be someone from the Tianyuan Empire again...” Qing Feng gritted his teeth as he spoke bitterly.

Lan Ying sighed helplessly. They had already improved rapidly but alas, it was still not sufficient to help them catch up with Qin Tian.

The white clothed Qin Tian standing on the large tree, slowly

tilted his head in front of everyone's eyes. His eyes paused on Lin Dong and Little Marten.

Chi!

Qin Tian's feet gently stepped onto the large tree below him. Gold light strangely flashed. That kind of gold light was extremely weak and there was hardly anyone who sensed it.

However, though others were unable to detect it, Lin Dong's eyes congelated at that moment. He could sense an extremely faint and hidden energy ripple, which contained a powerful destructive force, being emitted from the large tree. It moved below the ground like an earthworm as it was being stealthily channeled over.

“Such exquisite energy control...”

Lin Dong's eyes were somewhat solemn. The surface of the ground where that strength passed, did not show any signs. If it was not because of the fact that his Mental Energy was stronger than others, it was likely that he would have difficulty detecting it.

Lin Dong was just about to act after having sensed the energy that was quietly sneaking over, when Little Marten gently took a step forward. His footstep coincident with that underground energy ripple.

Puff!

A cloud of dust stealthily arose from the ground in a quiet fashion. Little Marten's figure did not move even at all as he raised his head. Following which, his handsome face contained a derisive expression as he stared at Qin Tian.

This quiet exchange occurred in a split second. Other than Lin Dong, Little Marten and Qin Tian, it was likely that no one else present knew that they had already exchanged blows.

Qin Tian eyes congealed slightly when his hidden attack was blasted apart by Little Marten. After which, he released a faint smile, acting as though nothing had occurred. "Do you really intend to clash with our Tianyuan Empire?"

"I think that sometimes it is better to follow the rules." Lin Dong spread his hands and said. The rule that he mentioned was that Nirvana Seals should be the spoils of victory in this core region.

"Rules?" A person behind Qin Tian laughed in a strange manner, as he mocked, "If we were to finish all of you off, what will you say then?"

"Whether you can finish us off would be determined by your ability." Lin Dong smiled faintly.

"Heh, what an arrogant brat!" That person's eyes turned cold as he laughed in a chilling manner, "Alright, let me see whether you have the qualifications to utter those words!"

This person was just about to move after speaking when he was stopped by an Qin Tian's arm. His stealthy attack previously led the latter to understand that the Lin Dong trio were not ordinary individuals.

“Haha, it seems like the few of you have some prejudice against us.”

Qin Tian laughed slightly. His smile was gentle as his eyes stared at Lin Dong and Little Marten. However, it seemed like his eyes were trying to see through the both of them. However, the two individuals that he face, were clearly not ordinary people. Hence, his detection would naturally fail.

“But it is just as well. The winner is king and the loser is a mere bandit. This principle indeed holds true and I am unable to rebut. If the few of you are unwilling to befriend me, Qin Tian, I will not force you. I believe that we will have the opportunity to spar on the Hundred Empire Mountain soon.”

Quite a number of people around were stunned when they heard Qin Tian's words. Clearly, they did not expect that the leader of the Tian Yuan Empire would actually take the initiative and back down.

“Boss.”

The two people behind Qin Tian were also stunned.

Qin Tian waved his hand. The smile on his face was quite friendly.

Lin Dong knitted his eyebrows slightly while everyone around were stunned. He looked at Qin Tian, who continued to act in a calm and casual manner. Immediately, some caution rose in his heart. The type of people who would reveal all of their emotions on their faces were not frightening. The scary ones were those like Qin Tian, who would continue to smile regardless of how furious he was in his heart.

“Qin Tian had actually taken a step back...” Qing Feng was shocked as he exclaimed.

Lan Ying’s pretty eyes looked at Lin Dong and Little Marten. Finally, her eyes shrunk slightly at where Little Marten’s feet were. She could see a thumb size dark black hole at that spot.

She could sense a kind of extremely sharp and ferocious remanent strength from that black hole.

“Have they exchanged blows... no wonder...”

Lan Ying’s pretty eyes glanced at Little Marten while her face gradually became grave. Clearly, she did not expect that he was actually able to fight evenly with Qin Tian in a secret bout.

Xue Ying and the rest immediately felt despair when Qin Tian

backed down. Following which, they could only obediently surrender their Nirvana Seals.

“You need to be wary of that person.” Little Marten turned around, looked at Lin Dong and softly said.

Lin Dong nodded slightly. He was aware that if they did not discover Qin Tian’s probing attack earlier on, it was likely that the latter would have attacked and finished them off.

Qin Tian was naturally cautious and even though he was very powerful, he still knew how to temporarily endure. This kind of person was quite troublesome to deal with.

Clang!

Just when Lin Dong secretly placed Qin Tian on his dangerous enemy namelist, a mighty ancient melodious gong was suddenly emitted from the Hundred Empire Mountain.

This gong sound spread and resounded over the entire core region. The sound reverberated over the entire area and did not stop for a long time.

Everyone’s expression changed when they heard this gong sound and Immediately, they raised their heads and looked towards the Hundred Empire Mountain with heated eyes.

At this moment, the clouds on the mountain top had gradually

scattered. Following which, a bright sunlight appeared from the mountain top. After which, a vast and mighty majestic voice reverberated over this entire area.

“The Hundred Empire Mountain is open. Those with the Heavenly Grade Nirvana Seals must ascend immediately!”



# Chapter 612: Ascending the Mountain

---

The gong sound was accompanied by a powerful voice, which resounded over the entire domain in a vast and mighty manner. After which, it scattered, appearing as though it was spreading towards the entire ancient space...

At this moment, anyone, whether or not they could enter the core region, suddenly raised their heads. Their eyes looked towards the direction where the Hundred Empire Mountain was located with incomparably wild and heated eyes.

The one year of bitter training was all for this day.

“Have we finally reached the end...”

Lin Dong lifted his head and stared at that enormous mountain, while he gently pursed his lips. Suddenly, a hundred over emotions surged in his heart.

One year ago, he had left the Great Yan Empire and arrived at this place where the geniuses gathered. At that time, he was merely an ordinary member amongst those participants. Furthermore, his status as member of a low rank empire had doomed him to start at the bottom of the foodchain. However, reality proved that Lin Dong would not be ordinary.

During this entire journey, he had met countless number of opponents. Each of them was stronger than the next and they were increasingly troublesome to deal with. Ultimately, he was the last

man standing.

This Ancient Battlefield was just like an extremely cruel filtering machine and it did not show any mercy. Only the fittest would survive.

It was also this kind of cruel filtering that allowed Lin Dong, this diamond in the rough, to gradually unleash a dazzling luster during this one year.

This kind of luster was not inferior even when compared with those geniuses from the super empires.

Lin Dong could sense his enormous improvement during this one year. In his opinion, the world that he now knows has become increasingly vast as he trained. The Great Yan Empire from before now appeared so small when he thought about it.

“This place... is not bad.”

Lin Dong turned his head to look at Little Marten before he suddenly laughed.

Back then, Little Marten had insisted on him participating in this Hundred Empire War. It was likely that he wanted to take this opportunity to train Lin Dong. The final result was indeed very satisfactory.

During this one year's time, Lin Dong had directly advance from

the Creation Stage to the Nirvana Stage. His progress was considered to be quite rapid.

“It is all right.” Little Marten once again recovered his casual manner as he spoke lazily, “This Hundred Empire War can be considered as a rather decent honing ground for younger generation members like you. Of course, in the future, you might come into contact with even more dangerous places.”

Lin Dong smiled as he was not surprised by this. As he continued to grow stronger, the things and experts he would come into contact with, would naturally become stronger and stronger.

Qin Tian looked at the top of the mountain from the giant tree. After which, he turned his head towards Lin Dong and smiled faintly. However, his smile caused the latter to feel a little uncomfortable. Lin Dong clearly adopted the greatest caution in the face of someone like Qin Tian.

Qin Tian did not say anything else to Lin Dong’s group. Immediately, he turned around. His toes pressed on the tree and he transformed into a rainbow light that directly rushed towards the mountain top. Those two figures behind him also closely followed.

“Swoosh swoosh!”

Following Qin Tian’s action, a commotion immediately appeared in this entire region. Those experts, who were in possession of the Heavenly Grade Nirvana Seals, immediately shot out. Their expressions were wildly heated as they rushed towards the top of

the mountain.

On the other hand, those experts, who had yet to possess a Heavenly Grade Nirvana Seal, suddenly had sunken expressions. A fierce glint flashed in their eyes. Some people actually suddenly attacked a moment later, attempting to snatch the Nirvana Seals of the others at this last moment in order to gain the qualification to ascend the mountain.

“Boom boom!”

Hence, this kind of silence continued for a moment before this entire area suddenly erupted into some furious screams. After which, wild and violent Yuan Power ripple began to erupt.s

“Bastard, what are you planning to do?”

“Do what? Heh, of course I’m going to snatch your Nirvana Seal!”

“Bloody hell. I’m afraid that you don’t have this ability! Brothers, attack!”

“.....”

Various furious cries basically completely erupted at this moment before the entire region become incomparably chaotic. In order to gain the qualifications to ascend the mountain, those individuals have overridden their individual rationality. Their attacks felt

crazy and frantic.

Liu Bai's large group all clustered around Lin Dong. With such a lineup, no one dared to charge towards them with heated eyes. After all, even the Sky Demon Empire was defeated by them previously. Regardless of how crazy those people were, it was likely that they would simply be courting death by charging over.

Lin Dong's expression was calm as he watched this scene and he was not surprised. His gaze looked towards everyone beside him and smilingly asked, "Does everyone have a Heavenly Grade Nirvana Seal?"

Mo Ling and the others nodded excitedly when they heard this. Previously, they had received quite a lot of Nirvana Seals from the experts of the three super empires led by Sky Demon Empire. As such, it had allowed their Nirvana Seals to reach the Heavenly Grade Nirvana Seal level.

With the strength of Mo Ling's group, it was normally extremely difficult to possess a Heavenly Grade Nirvana Seal. However, thanks to their relationship with Lin Dong, they were able to obtain the qualifications to ascend the Hundred Empire Mountain.

"Brother Lin Dong, it is really all thanks to your group this time around. We will not forget this favor." An excited expression was also plastered on Liu Bai's face. This usually indifferent person also involuntarily felt his heart fluctuate at this moment. He cupped his hands together towards Lin Dong and spoke.

Standing aside, Yan Sen also nodded slowly. His expression was somewhat complicated as he looked at Lin Dong. Back then, when he had first met the latter in the Ancient Treasure Trove, Lin Dong had yet to advance into the Nirvana Stage. However, right now, Lin Dong had directly led them and defeated the Sky Demon Empire, one of the ten super empires!

As he recalled this fact, even Yan Sen could not help but feel shocked at Lin Dong's swift improvement. He understood that with Lin Dong's talent and ability, it was likely that he would not be a nameless individual even after he entered a super sect.

"Brother Liu Bai is too polite. We are cooperating with one another and my group is not the only one that has put in effort." Lin Dong laughed.

"You are actually quite good looking . Why haven't I realized this earlier..." Mu Hongling, who was wearing a red dress, suddenly smiled sweetly before she said.

"You were only focus on killing me previously. I am afraid you didn't have the time to discover it." Lin Dong teased. Back then, he and Mu Hongling had a little grudge over the Ancient Secret Key.

Mu Hongling's pretty face reddened. An enchanting smile actually surfaced on her pretty face. Her eyes were rotated. "If I knew that you had so much potential back then, I will not compete with you for the Ancient Secret Key. I can even give it to you."

Even Lin Dong was unable to endure, as he stared at her

enchanting appearance and her fiery eyes. This woman was just like a cluster of flame that caused one's heart to feel a burning heat.

“Humph.”

Su Rou, who was standing beside Su Kui, suddenly stuck up her small mouth and let out a soft snort when she saw Mu Hong Ling flirting with Lin Dong. That young lady like demeanor caused a half smile to surface on Su Kui's face.

“Tsk tsk, Lin Dong, I have really underestimated you...” Just when Lin Dong was prepared to pull away from this topic, two figures suddenly rushed over and landed in front of them. They were actually Lanying's group, whom they had met once before.

Lin Dong did not slight these two people who were from the ten great super empires. He hurriedly cupped his hands together.

Lanying smilingly stared at Lin Dong. She gently lifted her sharp chin and said, “The Sky Demon Empire and the Tianyuan Empire have quite a deep relationship. That is why Qin Tian intervened.”

“Additionally, Qin Tian is not as friendly and open-minded as he appears on the surface. Your group did not give due respect to him. Be careful.”

“Thanks for the reminder.” Although Lin Dong was unaware of why Lanying would warn them, he still politely thanked her.

“It’s nothing. Our Celestial Empire and the Tianyuan Empire are considered enemies. The enemy of my enemy can be considered as a friend...” Lanying quietly spoke. Immediately, she paused for a moment before she spoke hesitantly, “Moreover, the Tianyuan Empire is a subordinate faction of the ‘Yuan Gate’.”

“Oh?”

Lin Dong’s eyes suddenly shrunk when he heard this. It was unexpected that the background of this Tianyuan Empire was actually so strong. It turned out to be the top ranked super sect in the Eastern Xuan Region.

Lanying did not have bother staying any further after uttering those words. Her figure flashed before she transformed into a ray of light and rushed towards the mountain top. That man called Qing Feng also closely followed behind.

Lin Dong looked at their figures and knitted his eyebrows slightly. Clearly, this information had somewhat exceeded his expectations.

“I have heard of Yuan Gate. Back then, it fought with my Celestial Demon Marten clan. Therefore, we can be considered as sworn enemies...” Standing beside him, Little Marten’s voice suddenly transformed into a wisp of sonic wave that entered Lin Dong’s ears.

Lin Dong’s expression changed slightly. Immediately, he nodded



quietly. Seems like there was no way he could join the “Yuan Gate”. Regardless of whether he had offended Qin Tian, just this point from Little Marten alone was sufficient for him to give up on joining the strongest super sect within the Eastern Xuan Region.

Perhaps no one in this place could see through Little Marten’s actual body. However, Lin Dong believed that there would definitely be some unimaginably powerful experts within that “Yuan Gate”. At that time, it was likely that even Little Marten would not be able to hide perfectly.

Rather than being expelled and hunted after, it was better to distance themselves from Yuan Gate. Although he felt somewhat pitiful that he had to give up on the top ranked super sect, he had no other choice.

“Let’s go.”

Lin Dong withdrew his emotion and ceased saying anything. He waved his hand. After which, his body moved, transforming into a black shadow that rushed out explosively.

Swoosh swoosh!

A large number of wind splitting sound appeared behind him after Lin Dong rushed out. Following which, numerous figures hurried into the air in front of the many envious eyes and directly dashed towards the mountain top.

# Chapter 613: Eight Great Super Sects

---

The Hundred Empire Mountain was extremely tall and steep. The mountain was as sharp as a sword, piercing right through the clouds. There were no paths or roads on the mountain and the only way to ascend the mountain was to fly up.

At this moment, there were all kinds of whizzing sound around the mountain peak. Numerous figures flew up the mountain from all directions like a locust swarm. All of their faces contained a fervent look.

One year of hard and bitter training had finally bore fruit. The geniuses from various empires could not contain the excitement and zeal in their hearts.

The mountain peak was precipitous. However, most of the practitioners who could make it here had passed through at least three Nirvana Tribulations. Hence, flying up to the mountain peak was not a difficult task. After a few minutes, under the countless covetous gazes from those practitioners that were under the mountain, some elite practitioners finally made it to the summit with eagerness in their hearts.

Dazzling sunlight blossomed onto the mountain peak, bringing surging hope into people like the coming of dawn.

Swoosh!

Lin Dong and his counterparts were not among the first few to

reach the summit. After being blocked by several figures, they finally reached their destination. The moment they landed, they took a sweeping glance at the mountain peak.

The mountain peak was an enormous, leveled and smooth limestone arena. As the sunlight shone onto the arena, numerous light beams were being reflected off the floor. It was as if the entire place had become fuzzy and blurry, giving one the feeling of being in a field of mist.

Lin Dong's gaze swept across the mountain peak. Suddenly, he raised his head and his eye pupils dilated.

Whoosh.

An uproar spread across the entire mountain peak like a surging tide. At this moment, everyone raised their heads and looked at the mid-air with utmost reverence.

In the mid-air, light beams intertwined and formed a glowing table and several glowing chairs. Several sat down on those glowing chairs at will. These figures then looked down indifferently at the mountain peak. Indistinctly, an indescribable intimidating aura engulfed the entire place.

The super sects!

Looking at the godlike figures who were towering over everyone on the mountain peak, most geniuses that came from various

empires could not help but bow humbly.

They clearly understood that these leviathan super sects were the legitimate overlords of the boundless Eastern Xuan Region. Furthermore, their empires had to align themselves with these super sects in order to survive.

The foundation and strength that the super sects possessed were enough to make these people bend their arrogant backbones.

Silence swept across the Hundred Empire Mountain peak. As the eight figures sat down on the glowing chairs in the mid-air, the arrogance that these geniuses used to have no longer exist.

In the midst of the crowd, Lin Dong was staring closely at the eight figures while pursing up his lips. He could sense an extremely powerful aura from all eight figures. No ordinary individuals would have the ability to match that kind of strength.

“This is the strength of super sects... it’s indeed scary,” Lin Dong took in a deep breath. His eyes seemed to be filled with fervent and expectation. If he could join such a faction, it should be pretty beneficial to him after all.

“They are pretty strong” Little Marten, who was standing beside Lin Dong, suddenly chuckled.

Lin Dong cast a surprise look at him. This was because he never expected that the haughty Little Marten would actually speak say

words. It seems like the strength of a super sect must not be underestimated.

“Brother Lin Dong, do you see the person on the right? He’s from Yuan Gate,” Liu Bai, who was standing behind Lin Dong, suddenly blurted out.

“Oh?”

Lin Dong’s eyes froze slightly. He raised his head unobtrusively and looked at the person sitting on the right. There was a man with grizzled hair sitting on that chair. His face was slightly wrinkled, and yet it still contained a tinge of handsomeness. He must be rather handsome when he was young. His lips, which were as thin as a blade, was the only facial feature that appeared rather sinister.

He wore a white robe and there was a picture of a black sun on the robe. Black and white intertwined and it looked as Yin and Yang was floating on his robe, matching the word Yuan.

However, from the beginning, this man had never looked once at the onlookers. He squinted his eyes as if he was taking a nap. That kind of unworldly poise completely suited a member of the Yuan Gate.

Lin Dong’s gaze stopped at the man for a while. Then, he shifted his gaze to his left. Beside that man, there was an attractive middle-aged woman. She was wearing a pale-white cloak, looking extremely graceful and outstanding.

“She is from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace...” Liu Bai immediately explained when he saw Lin Dong shift his gaze in that direction. He was rather good at providing information.

“The one beside her is from the Thousand Puppet Sect. This super sect is extremely powerful and they specialize in refining puppets. From the information that I obtained, they possess an Immortal Puppet...” Liu Bai continued softly as he pointed to a grey-robed old man that was surrounded by a ghastly aura.

As Lin Dong heard these words, he could not help but shudder. He himself was rather familiar with puppets and therefore, he naturally knew what an Immortal Puppet was. A puppet of such level possessed legitimate spiritual intelligence. From a different perspective, such puppet was considered a powerful mystical object. He never expected that the Thousand Puppet Sect actually had such a legendary item.

“The other two are Symbol Valley and Divine Sect. Among the eight super sects, both of these two sects major in Mental Energy and minor in Yuan Power,” Liu Bai pointed at the next two figures while providing information on them. Lin Dong could sense a boundless Mental Energy from these two persons. This was the first time Lin Dong saw anyone with such powerful Mental Energy over the years.

Lin Dong furrowed his eyebrows once more. He could somewhat relate to these two super sects. However, he did not differentiate his Mental Energy and Yuan Power into primary or secondary offensive tools. Even though his Yuan Power was stronger than his

Mental Energy, Lin Dong knew that this was due to the fact that he purposely suppressed the latter...

“These two sects are rather suitable for you,” Little Marten chuckled.

Lin Dong smiled at these words. However, he had yet to make a decision.

“The next is the Blade Sect. They have a Yuan Power-imbued swordplay martial art that is extremely powerful. Its offensive power is unparalleled.”

“Oh, that’s the Great Desolate Palace. Out of the eight super sect, their sect members have the most terrifying-looking physical bodies.”

One of the two persons Liu Bai that pointed at was green-clothed and carried a sword scabbard. The scabbard seemed to emit an extremely formidable sword aura. Meanwhile, the other person had an extremely muscular body. His top-half naked body was bulging with green veins that looked like baby dragons. At times, there seemed to be faint dragon roars coming from those wiggling green veins. Apparently, he had trained his physical body to an extremely powerful state.

“They truly worthy to be called the super sects, I have gained new knowledge and experience this time around...” Lin Dong heaved a sigh as he accepted the fact willingly. The sects that he had come across in the past paled into insignificance in

comparison with these super sects.

“Haha, there’s still one more sect that I have yet to introduce. This sect is called the Dao Sect. This sect is rather unique. They have the least number of members, and yet, they are startlingly powerful. Occasionally, there are some crazy individuals in this sect. One hundred years ago, an exceptionally ruthless individual from the Dao Sect went bonkers and rushed into the Yuan Gate and killed three of their elders, shocking the entire Eastern Xuan Region,” Liu Bai smacked his lips and explained. Even when he spoke of this incident now, he was still extremely horrified by it. The Yuan Gate was the most powerful super sect in the Eastern Xuan Region. No one had expected that ruthless person would dare to rush into enemy territory single-handedly and even killed three of their elders. This incident shocked the entire world.

Even Lin Dong gasped at these words. This fellow was indeed ruthless.

“One hundred years ago... it should be that lunatic...” Little Marten muttered to himself. His facial expression was somewhat complex.

“What happen to that guy in the end?” Lin Dong asked curiously.

“The incident blew up eventually. One of the three heads in the Yuan Gate was alarmed and he had to personally suppress that ruthless person...” Liu Bai answered and spread out his hands. To become the leading faction in Eastern Xuan Region, Yuan Gate’s foundation must be extremely terrifying. Even though that ruthless individual was extraordinary, he still paled in comparison



with the big shots of the Yuan Gate.

“Yuan Gate is indeed terrifying.”

Lin Dong heaved a sigh, while he grew increasingly wary of this sect. However, he soon raised his head and shifted his gaze towards the last glowing. He wanted to see how the man from this sect looked like.

Just as his gaze shifted in that direction, his facial expression froze. Even Little Marten was astonished at what he saw.

Sitting on that glowing chair, an old and frail figure leaned lazily against the back of the chair. At this moment, a cryptic smile appeared on the old man's face, capturing the attention of Lin Dong and Little Marten. That face was somewhat familiar.

“It's him....”

Lin Dong muttered. He and Little Marten then gave each other the bewildered look.

## Chapter 614: A Familiar Face

---

The old man lazily leaned against the chair of light. His elderly face was not unfamiliar to Lin Dong. This was the mysterious old man whom Lin Dong had met in the Ancient Treasure Trove.

“To think that he is a member of the Dao Sect...”

Lin Dong and Little Marten exchanged gazes with each other, both had strange expressions on their faces. They had guessed the identity of the old man back then. Therefore, they were not overly shocked when they saw this scene. The only thing that surprised them was that this old man was someone from the most unconventional Dao Sect.

“Is brother Lin Dong acquainted with the great one from the Dao Sect?” Beside him, Liu Bai involuntarily asked softly when he saw Lin Dong staring at the old man with a strange expression.

“Yes. I have met him before in the Ancient Battlefield.” Lin Dong nodded gently as he softly replied.

“Eh?” Liu Bai’s expression involuntarily changed a little upon hearing this. Immediately, his face filled with envy. From the way he saw it, being able to interact with an individual of a super sect was an extremely fortunate.

“This old fellow is quite pleasing to the eye. The Dao Sect might be a wise choice.” Little Marten rubbed his chin and said.

Lin Dong smiled. He also had a rather good impression of this old man. Most importantly, this person did find Little Marten's identity taboo. It was likely that the Celestial Demon Marten tribe did not have any grudges with the Dao Sect, hence, it would not be a bad decision to join this super sect.

“The Dao Sect is not easy to enter. Although its strength is inferior to the Yuan Gate, its requirements are even more stringent than Yuan Gate.”

Beside him, Liu Bai interrupted and said. Only after uttering these words did he recall just how abnormally strong Lin Dong was. He immediately laughed at himself and said, “Of course, given brother Lin Dong's talent and performance, you should be able to catch the eye of the Dao Sect.”

Lin Dong raised his head and stared at the old man. After which, he smiled at the latter. This caused the old man, who had similarly taken notice of them, to smile in return.

“This brat... is rather interesting.”

The old man's finger gently tapped the back of his chair. His eyes seemed to contain a smile as they paused on Lin Dong. There was an admiration that an ordinary person could not sense within them. With his ability, he was naturally able to observe the battle between Lin Dong's group and the Sky Devil Empire at the foot of the Hundred Empire Mountain earlier.

Lin Dong's performance had made him quietly nod his head in approval.

The old man's heart was quietly shocked by Lin Dong's progress within a short half a year. Although the latter had obtained the inheritance of the Ancient Treasure Trove, his foundation was still too weak. His low rank empire status was a huge limitation to himself. However, from the looks of it, Lin Dong had now clearly leaped across this gap and he was now able to contend against a super empire like the Sky Devil Empire.

Lin Dong's eyes swiftly turned away from the old man. Immediately, he looked at the mountain top. There were currently quite a number of figures standing at the top of the mountain. Moreover, the most spectacular point about this scene was that everyone present had powerful auras. Clearly, they were no ordinary people.

Those who could survive the various eliminations and finally arrived at this place could be considered the top individuals amongst the geniuses from the various empires. Whether it was their talent or mental fortitude, those present were the cream of the crop.

Lin Dong's eyes paused on the old man for a moment before withdrawing. After which, he looked towards the field. The numerous powerful auras caused him to involuntarily nod his head. No one here was weak.

Qin Tian's group, whom Lin Dong had met earlier, was the most prominent amongst them. From time to time, practitioners would

step forward to greet them politely, and the eyes of these practitioners did not lack a fawning expression. This led one to believe that the Tianyuan Empire was extremely famous. Of course, from the way Lin Dong saw it, it was mostly because the strongest super sect in the Eastern Xuan Region, the Yuan Gate, was backing the Tianyuan Empire.

Lin Dong glanced at Qin Tian, who was chatting with others while wearing an indifferent smile on his face. It must be said that this fellow possessed an exceptional demeanour. As the leader of the ten super empires, those that the Tianyuan Empire groomed were indeed extraordinary.

Qin Tian appeared to have sensed Lin Dong's eyes. He tilted his head a little and stared at Lin Dong while a faint smile surfaced on his face.

Lin Dong nodded his head in a superficial manner towards Qin Tian before withdrawing his eyes. Although Qin Tian had an extraordinary background, he did not approach the latter to get into his good books.

“There are quite a number of capable individuals here...” By his side, Little Marten suddenly withdrew his gaze and chuckled.

Lin Dong sighed and nodded upon hearing this. After taking a look around, he had discovered more than ten experts who had advanced into the five Yuan Nirvana stage. These people were likely also members on the Nirvana Golden Ranking and were extremely powerful.

However, Lin Dong was not surprised by this. Even though he had defeated the Sky Devil Empire, there were still nine other super empires. Moreover, the Ancient Battlefield was extremely vast and there would definitely be others like Su Rou, who were fortunate enough to ascend the heavens with a single step and thus possess the qualifications to battle with the geniuses of the super sects.

Therefore, Lin Dong was not surprised by the number of skilled experts in this place.

“I wonder what that fellow plans on doing...”

Lin Dong suddenly recalled the mysterious scheming individuals whom he had encountered in the Ancient Battlefield as he suddenly frowned a little. He shifted his gaze towards the sky above the Hundred Empire Mountain. Although he did not know what those fellows were planning, they would likely choose to act before the Hundred Empire War ended.

Lin Dong's gaze scanned the area, however, he did not discover anything and immediately shrugged his shoulders. Forget it, it was not his place to worry about such matters. There were experts from the eight great super sects guarding the space above the Hundred Empire Mountain. Even if an accident were to occur, they would deal with it.

“Hehe, you must be brother Lin Dong right?” A loud and clear laughter was suddenly from Lin Dong's left while the latter was

observing his surroundings.

Lin Dong was slightly startled when he heard this laughter. He immediately turned around, only to see a group heading towards him. As his eyes swept across this group, he found two familiar faces. They were the two super empire generals whom he had met in the Ancient Hall's city.

The Great Gan Empire's fire general, Tianhuo and mountain general Muhuang.

"Great Gan Empire huh?" Upon seeing this duo, Lin Dong realized that the group approaching him was also one of the ten great super empires.

Earlier, Lin Dong was merely aware that the Great Gan Empire was a super empire. However, he did not know that they were one of the ten great super empires. This news was obtained from Liu Bai's group.

Three strongly built figures walked in front of the Zhu Tianhuo duo. Powerful ripples continuously spread from their bodies, testament to the fact that they had reached the five Yuan Nirvana stage. From the looks of it, these were the three rumoured kings of the Great Gan Empire.

"Brother Lin Dong, I have long heard of your name. I am Ganjin and these two are my companions. The main reason I have approached so boldly is to apologize. Back then, Tianhuo's group has given you trouble." Lin Dong, who originally thought that this

group was seeking trouble, was slightly startled. He looked towards the slightly red Zhu Tianhuo duo before turning back towards the sincere Ganjin. Immediately, he cupped his hands together and laughed softly, “What is big brother Ganjin saying. Fights are only too common in this place. There is no need to apologize.”

Lin Dong had a good impression of Ganjin’s straightforward manner. Moreover, he did not have a deep grudge with their empire. Therefore, since Ganjin was sincere about burying the hatchet, Lin Dong was naturally willing as well. After all, a friend was better than an enemy.

Ganjin’s face was full of smiles. His eyes involuntarily weighed Lin Dong. He had naturally heard about the Sky Devil Empire and thus did not dare to belittle Lin Dong. After all, they were weaker than the Sky Devil Empire. Since Lin Dong could finish off the three devils of the Song clan, if they were to get into a fight, Lin Dong’s group would likely emerge victorious. It was best to avoid provoking such a troublesome opponent.

“Brother Lin Dong is really outstanding. Though you are from low rank empire, you are able to enter the Nirvana Golden Ranking. This has not happened for many many years...” Ganjin’s words were filled with heartfelt admiration. He knew that Lin Dong must have expended a great deal of effort in order to reach this place.

“Haha, if I am unlucky and end up fighting with you in the subsequent Nirvana Golden Ranking battle, please show some mercy.” Ganjin changed the topic and suddenly said.



Lin Dong also smiled upon hearing this. He knew that the next event was the main show.

The Nirvan Golden Ranking battle.

It was not only the last battle of the Hundred Empire War, but also the most intense one.

The final results would determine one's ranking in the Ancient Battlefield and one's value after entering the super sect. Hence, many people viewed it with great importance.

In order to obtain a good ranking, the various geniuses of the various empires would go all out.

This battlefield would truly be one where tigers and dragons clashed!

# Chapter 615: Nirvana Golden Ranking Battle

---

A brilliant sun hung high in the sky above the Hundred Empire Mountain as warm sunlight sprinkled down. Its radiance was similar to that of dawn.

“Everyone, it’s about time.”

Seated on the glowing chair in the air, the grizzled hair man from the Yuan Gate announced as his uninterested gaze swept across the surging crowd below before shifting his attention to other super sect members.

Upon hearing his words, the other seven nodded their heads as well.

When he saw this, the grizzled hair man slowly stood up with his hands behind his back and cast a sweeping glance across the arena. The commotion on the mountain peak immediately subsided as everyone looked towards him with reverence.

Upon receiving this kind of gaze from the crowd, the thin blade-like lips of the grizzled hair man curled up slightly, as if he enjoyed the attention and reverence that he was receiving.

“I am the Yuan Gate representative, Liu Tong.”

A flat but firm voice rumbled in everyone’s ears like thunder as the grizzled hair man’s gaze swept across the mountain peak.

“First and foremost, I would like to congratulate everyone here. The fact that you are able to reach this place speaks volumes about your strength and potential. Anyone who possesses the Heavenly Grade Nirvana Seal is just barely qualified to become an entry-level disciple of the super sects.

Upon hearing these words, several people heaved a sigh of relief as if a huge load had been lifted off their hearts, while emotion filled their eyes. They knew that their one year of hard work had finally paid off.

As long as they were able to enter the super sects, even if they were entry-level disciples, it was enough to do their empires proud. As for the higher tier direct disciples, these were reserved for the abnormally powerful individuals that had stepped into the Nirvana Golden Ranking.

Many people were somewhat envious when they thought of this. A direct disciple and an entry-level disciple had completely different statuses in a super sect.

“As for those who have entered the Nirvana Golden Ranking, I would like to congratulate all of you as well. You have obtained the qualifications to become the direct disciples of the super sects,” Liu Tong announced indifferently.

“Next up, there will be a competition of the highest calibre. Only those who have entered the Nirvana Golden Ranking will be qualified to participate in this competition. The final ranking you

obtain in the competition will determine the degree of favouritism you receive in your respective super sect.”

“As it stands, the last three winners have become a member of our Yuan Gate, and are now famed practitioners across the entire Eastern Xuan Region.”

As Liu Tong spoke of this issue, even though his tone was flat like before, it also contained a tinge of pride and arrogance.

On the glowing chairs, the other super sect members furrowed their eyebrows slightly. Though the Yuan Gate was indeed powerful, they found Liu Tong’s words unpleasant to the ear.

The old man from the Dao Sect shot a glance at Liu Tong while pursing his lips. Due to some yet to be known reasons, the relationship between the Yuan Gate and the Dao Sect was not exactly a friendly one. Therefore, it was natural for the old man to despise the arrogant Liu Tong.

“Next up, please enter the arena immediately when I call out your names!” Liu Tong waved his hand and a glowing scroll opened up in front of him.

“Tianyuan Empire, super empire, Qin Tian.”

On the mountain top below, Qin Tian looked at the gazes that were directed at him and could not help but smile slightly. He took a step forward and slowly walked into the arena. His poise indeed

contained the demeanor of an elite practitioner.

Murmurs and whispers broke out on the mountain peak. Gazes that were filled with fear and envy were directed at Qin Tian. They clearly knew that the Tianyuan Empire was a subordinate faction of the Yuan Gate. This time around, Qin Tian would most likely become the champion of the Hundred Empire War. At that time, he would definitely enter the Yuan Gate. As such, the Yuan Gate would have recruited four Hundred Empire War champions in a row.

Liu Tong looked at Qin Tian and nodded his head approvingly, feeling somewhat pleased in his heart. It appeared that their Yuan Gate would once again be the biggest beneficiary of the Hundred Empire War.

“Great Desolate Empire, super empire, Ji Shan.”

A man, whose muscular body was built like a iron tower and emitted terrifying energy waves, walked out from the crowd and into the arena.

“Divine Empire, super empire, Mo Leng.”

A black-clothed man swept out from the crowd. Powerful Mental Energy ripples surrounded his body. It turns out that he was a practitioner that specialized in Mental Energy.

“.....”

As Liu Tong continued to announce the names, the practitioners of the Nirvana Golden Ranking stepped into the arena one by one. Each time a name was announced, an uproar would break out on the mountain peak and various respectful gazes would be directed at the person who just had his or her name called out.

“Celestial Empire, super empire, Lanying.”

When Lin Dong heard this name, he raised his head and watched the familiar figure that had just flown into the arena as he softly chuckled.

“Great Yan Empire... low rank empire, Lin Dong.” A slight pause appeared in Liu Tong’s voice. Following which, his gaze shifted downward to look upon the slender body youth.

“Lin Dong? Is that the Lin Dong who defeated the Sky Devil Empire’s Song Zhen?”

The commotion on the mountain peak suddenly intensified. Numerous gazes filled with intense amazement were directed at the lanky figure. However, at this point in time, no one dared to make any sneering remarks at the mention of a low rank empire, because the members of a low rank empire had far surpassed them in terms of strength and capability....

Ignoring the numerous gazes of reverence and amazement, Lin Dong moved and landed gracefully on the arena with both his arms slightly hanging down.

“Great Yan Empire.... Lin Diao.”

“Great Yan Empire.... Lin Yan.”

The following two names further intensified the commotion on the mountain peak, while shock appeared on many people’s faces. The fact that the low rank empire Lin Dong managed to barge into the Golden Nirvana Ranking was already startling. No one could imagine the following two names were from the same empire. This definitely riled everyone riled.

“Haha, it has been many years since someone from a low rank empire barged into the Nirvana Golden Ranking. Furthermore, there are three of them...” The elderly man that carried a sword sheath caressed his beard and chuckled as he stared at Lin Dong from his glowing chair.

Beside him, the old man from the Dao Sect laughed as well. He stared at Lin Dong with flickering eyes.

“Great Qing Empire, middle rank empire, Su Rou.”

Upon hearing this, Su Rou’s petite figure flew into the arena and landed beside Lin Dong. She then stuck out her tongue playfully, appearing extremely adorable. However, after a gentle stare from Lin Dong, she quickly closed her tiny mouth.

“This young lady...” The beautiful eyes of the pretty middle-aged

woman from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace, suddenly brightened up. She stared closely at Su Rou as if she had discovered something.

“Her body actually contains a Spirit Emblem. Such a promising seed,” Seated beside the beautiful woman, a middle-aged man chuckled.

“This young lady doesn’t specialize in Mental Energy. Your Divine Sect has nothing to do with her. Our Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace will be most suitable for her...” The beautiful woman rolled her eyes at the middle-aged man and said.

Upon hearing these words, the man merely smiled. He did not have any intention of vying with her over Su Rou. After all, the beautiful woman was right. Su Rou was not proficient in her mastery of Mental Energy, and hence, she was not suitable for a Mental Energy focused sect like the Divine Sect.

As Liu Tong continued announcing names, more and more practitioners whose bodies emitted powerful energy undulations flew into the arena. The gradual convergence of aura caused an increase in the temperature of the arena.

In the air, Liu Tong’s eyebrows suddenly frowned as he stared at the glowing scroll, before he announced, “Great Yan Empire.... Lin Langtian.”

Woah.



As these words left his mouth, an uproar broke out. Astonishment flashed across many faces. To think that another person from the Great Yan Empire had made it into the Nirvana Golden Ranking?

A mere low rank empire, yet four individuals had made it into the Nirvana Golden Ranking. Even the super empires did not obtain such result. What did the Great Yan Empire do to enjoy such good fortune?

Amidst the uproar and commotion, Lin Dong's eyebrows gradually knitted together. He raised his gaze and saw a handsome green-robed man walk into the arena.

That familiar face belonged to Lin Langtian!

As Lin Dong stared at Lin Langtian, the latter unblinkingly stared back. On his handsome face, an extremely sinister smile appeared.

They were from the same clan, and yet, they were not considered brothers. Instead, they were sworn enemies.

Both of them knew there was no way that their differences could be resolved.

Lin Dong clearly knew about Lin Langtian's nature. If the latter were to enter a super sect, he would pose a great threat to Lin Dong's family in the Great Yan Empire.

Thus, for the sake of his family and getting rid of any problems in the future, Lin Dong would absolutely not allow this thorn to exist.

Therefore.... Lin Langtian must die!

Lin Dong's fist slowly clenched itself, while a terrifying killer intent burst out of his slightly narrowed eyes.

There was absolutely no way that he would let Lin Langtian successfully enter a super sect!

# Chapter 616: Cooperation

---

Lin Langtian walked into the arena and stood at a spot not far from Lin Dong. Soon after, he tilted his head a little and gazed at the latter in a strangely sinister manner with eyes like a viper.

A faint yet similarly powerful ripple surrounded Lin Langtian. However, there seemed to be something a little off about this ripple. Compared to the Lin Langtian of before, it was as different as black and white. As he stared at Lin Dong, a cruel smile suddenly formed from the corners of his lips. He extended his hand and cut at Lin Dong's throat from a distance. The motive and provocation behind this action was clear as day.

The surrounding crowd was slightly startled by this action of his. Immediately, their eyes swept back and forth between Lin Langtian and Lin Dong. From the looks of it, these two people, who had come from the same empire, were at odds with each other.

Lin Dong's eyes were calm as he watched this scene, and no anger could be seen on his face. He could feel that the current Lin Langtian had become much stranger after merging with the Yuan Spirit. However, no matter how this fellow changed, the hatred that had taken root deep within his soul had not changed at all. Instead, it had been festered and was now even more twisted.

Therefore, Lin Dong did not care whether this body was controlled by Lin Langtian or the Yuan Spirit. He only knew one thing; if he allowed Lin Langtian to successfully join a super sect, it would cause Lin Dong countless sleepless nights...

“Heh, kid...”

While killing intent surged in Lin Dong’s heart, an elderly voice was suddenly transmitted into Lin Dong’s ears. This stunned him for a moment before he promptly lifted his head, turning his gaze towards the old man from the Dao Sect. The voice from before was clearly from that old man...

The old man looked at Lin Dong for a while, however, his mouth did not move. Yet, a voice was transmitted over, “Little fellow, are you interested in cooperating with this old man?”

“Cooperating?”

Lin Dong was stunned once again. He was truly unable to understand what kind of game this great one from the Dao Sect was playing.

“It’s very simple. I don’t care how you do it but do not allow Tianyuan Empire to become the champion.” The old man’s jovial voice was quickly transmitted over.

Lin Dong’s eyelids twitched. From the looks of it, the Dao Sect and Yuan Gate were at odds with each other. The Tianyuan Empire was a subordinate faction of the Yuan Gate. If Qin Tian failed to win, it would naturally reflect poorly on the Yuan Gate...

It didn’t seem good for him to get involved in this feud between the two super sects.

“What benefits will I get?”

Even with this thought in mind, Lin Dong’s mouth still moved. However, no voice was emitted. There were the experts from super sects stationed in the air. The old man could transmit his voice without being discovered by others, but Lin Dong did not possess that ability. Therefore, he could only mouth his words. However, given the old man’s ability, he would likely be able to read Lin Dong’s lips.

“Hehe, little fellow, there is a Celestial Demon Marten at your side. Hence, you can forget about joining the Yuan Gate. Should this fact be discovered after entering the Yuan Gate, you won’t have any chance to escape. However, it is different for my Dao Sect. We do not have any enmity with the Celestial Demon Marten tribe. Therefore, you will definitely not face such issues.”

“Moreover, I understand your character quite well. I believe that the Dao Sect is quite suitable for you. These are not empty words. You will understand this in the future.”

“Therefore, if you are able to prevent the Tianyuan Empire from becoming the champion of the Hundred Empire War, this old man will allow you to join the Dao Sect. Of course, my Dao Sect will not mistreat someone like you, who has performed some act of merit for us.”

Lin Dong rubbed his chin upon hearing the words that were transmitted from the old man. An expression of deep thought

flashed across his eyes. Currently, he had gained some basic understanding of the eight super sects in Eastern Xuan Region. Truth be told, he was indeed the most interested in the Dao Sect. The old man before him was also to his liking. After some consideration, it was likely that joining the Dao Sect would be quite a wise decision.

Moreover, if he was to join the Dao Sect, it would be fine for him to offend the Yuan Gate. In any case, he would not need to rely on them when the time comes. Moreover, the old man was surely not one to make empty promises. In that case...

Lin Dong smiled when his thoughts reached this point. He nodded slightly towards the old man from the Dao Sect. Immediately, his lips moved again, "It is possible for me to cooperate. However, I want your help as well."

"Oh? Go ahead and speak?" The old man smiled and transmitted his voice.

"I want to be in the same group as Lin Langtian in the subsequent Nirvana Golden Ranking battle." Lin Dong curled his lips and slowly said.

The old man was startled upon hearing this. His eyes looked towards Lin Langtian and mused for a moment before nodding. He transmitted his voice, "Alright. I can secretly make it happen. However, that fellow does not seem to be quite right. Are you sure that nothing will go wrong?"

With the old man's eyes, he had naturally sensed the faint Yuan Spirit fluctuation from Lin Langtian's body, causing him to feel a little perplexed. After all, only the experts who had experienced at least seven Nirvana Tribulations would be able to possess a Yuan Spirit. However, it had appeared within Lin Langtian's body. How could this not cause him to feel a little perplexed?

"The grudge between the both of us is very deep. We must resolve it here." Lin Dong nodded slightly, while a cold glint flickered in his eyes.

"Sure, it will be as you requested." The old man was extremely decisive and agreed immediately.

"It's a deal then. I will also give my all." Lin Dong exchanged a glance with the old man. Their eyes smiled with a common understanding. After which, they turned their gazes away at the same time without any prior agreement.

"Heh, given your performance, it is likely that all the eight great super sects will want you. You will not gain much from this agreement." Beside him, Little Marten suddenly laughed strangely after Lin Dong withdrew his eyes. He was similarly very capable. Moreover, the old man did not purposefully conceal his voice when he transmitted it towards Lin Dong. Therefore, Little Marten was able to catch wind of their conversation.

"I am also quite interested in this Dao Sect. Since they have a request, it will naturally be beneficial if I am able to help them to fulfill it. I will likely gain some advantage when I enter the Dao Sect in the future." Lin Dong smiled and said.

Little Marten spread his hands outwards and did not say anything in response. He did not have any ill intent towards this Dao Sect. Therefore, he did not have much objection towards Lin Dong's choice.

Numerous figures stood like shadows on the large arena in the middle of the Hundred Empire Mountain top. Every individual possessed a shockingly powerful aura. They were all powerful individuals who had stepped into the Nirvana Golden Ranking and all the top experts that remained standing.

Liu Tong looked down, before he promptly nodded slightly. With a wave of his sleeves, an extremely powerful Yuan Power spread across the sky. In the end, everyone watched as space become distorted and numerous large light barriers that were formed from Yuan Power appeared in the sky.

Quite a number of people were shocked when they saw so many Yuan Power light barriers formed in the air. Such a feat was sufficient to make them to hold him in high regard.

Liu Tong once again clenched his fist after creating these light barrier, which were to be used for battles. A bright light ball appeared in his hand. Within it, one could faintly see lots of light.

“All the light lots are divided into Yin and Yang sides. Those who holds the Yin side will be the opponent of the Yang side. The light lot will direct all of you to your respective light barrier battle stages.”



Liu Tong's voice had barely faded when the light ball in his hand suddenly exploded. Numerous flashing light lots immediately fell onto the ground below like rain from light from all over the sky.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

The light rain fell as the experts below immediately rushed out. All of them used their skills to grab the light lots from the air.

Lin Dong did not move when he saw this scene. Instead, he threw his gaze towards Lin Langtian a short distance away. The latter's eyes looked at him in a dark and cold manner. After which, his body rushed out as he grabbed a light lot from amongst the raining light in the sky.

The old man on the light chair from the Dao Sect narrowed his eyes slightly when he saw this.

Swoosh!

Lin Dong's body also rushed out at this moment. His hand was extended into the raining light but did not grab any light lot. Instead, he waited for a moment and saw a light lot quietly rushing over by itself before finally landing in his hand.

“Such exquisite control...”

Lin Dong grabbed the light lot and landed on the ground. His eyebrows gently raised. He could sense a powerful Yuan Power ripple on the light lot. It was impossible for Lin Dong and the others to enter it. However, the old man from the Dao Sect was able to find the precise light lot from these light lots that permeated the sky in a split second and deliver it into his hands. This ability... he was indeed worthy of being a member of the super sect.

Sizzle sizzle!

As the light lots landed into the various practitioners' hands, countless pairs of eyes turned towards the light lot. After which, they directly flew towards the light barrier battle stages in the sky one after another.

A ray of light also shot out from the light lot in Lin Dong's hand at this moment and connected with a light barrier battle stage in the sky. Meanwhile, another light shot out and connected to the other side of the same light barrier battle stage.

Lin Dong turned his slightly tilted his head. His eyes followed the ray of light and sure enough, he saw a dark and cold faced Lin Langtian.

Lin Langtian was clearly startled after realizing the other ray of light was actually connected to Lin Dong. However, an excitement and ferocity, that could not be hidden, immediately appeared on his face.

“Lin Dong, looks like you are really unlucky. It is unexpected for you and me to meet in the first round...” Lin Langtian stared at Lin Dong and involuntarily let out a cold laugh.

Lin Dong’s eyes were indifferent as he stared back. However, he did not utter any unnecessary words. His body moved and flew towards the light barrier battle stage.

“Lin Langtian, I do not care what you are now. However, I will not allow our grudge to continue beyond the Ancient Battlefield. This place shall be our final battle ground!”

“Tsk tsk, it is just as I have intended!”

Lin Langtian’s expression was savage. His body rushed out and directly charged into the interior of the light barrier battle stage. A monstrous and unrestrained killing intent spread outwards.

“Lin Dong, you will definitely die this time around!”

Killing intent permeated the sky. Lin Langtian’s eyes were scarlet and exceptionally cruel as he stared at Lin Dong.

# Chapter 617: Battling Lin Langtian Again

---

An enormous light barrier floated in the sky. Contained within was a battle stage formed from majestic Yuan Power. From a distance, the stage looked as if it was real.

Lin Dong's figure directly penetrated the light barrier, before landing on the stage. Lin Langtian's figure also closely followed behind, quickly appearing before the former with a dark and gloomy expression.

"Can the current you still be called Lin Langtian?" Lin Dong raised his head and stared at the now rather unfamiliar person before him, before suddenly speaking out in a soft voice.

"Cheche, relax. Thanks to you, my willpower is extremely strong. Currently, I am still in control of this body. As for the name Lin Langtian, it's of no concern. Nothing matters besides killing you." Lin Langtian's expression become a little distorted due to his maliciousness as he laughed sinisterly.

"Sad."

Lin Dong faintly smiled. The once the famed genius of the Lin Clan had now ended up in such a state. Even his personality had something else mixed into it.

"This is all because of you, you wretched thing. If it were not for you, how else could I have ended up like this? You lowly filth from the branch family!" Lin Langtian's expression was sinister as he

snarled. He stared at Lin Dong as if he wanted to pluck out the veins of the latter.

“Back then, there was no need for you to participate in the clan meeting. However, in order to show off, you used my father as a sacrificial lamb and seriously crippled him until he fell into depression for several years. Everything I have done is merely for the sake of repaying my father’s grudge. It can be considered an eye for an eye. You can only blame yourself for this matter.” Lin Dong’s face was expressionless as he replied in a flat voice.

“Ch ch, it’s your father’s fault for being utterly useless. I only regret not having killed you at the Ancient Tomb outside Great Yan City back then. Otherwise, there would not be so much trouble now!” Lin Langtian maliciously laughed.

His words were truly from the heart. When he first saw Lin Dong at the Ancient Tomb back then, the latter was merely an ant in his eyes. Just a tiny bit of pressure from his aura was able to pressure Lin Dong to an extremely sorry state. However, in a short couple of years, this ant had grown at a shockingly rapid pace. That speed was something that even he, the most dazzling genius from the Lin clan, could not match.

Lin Langtian had regretted this more than once. If he had completely finished Lin Dong off back then, things would be completely different now. At the very least, he would not have wounded up in this miserable state where he was neither a human nor a ghost...

“Arguing with words is a special right for the useless. Make your

move, allow me to see how powerful you have become after transforming into this ghastly thing.

Lin Dong smiled slightly. He slowly extended his hand as an icy bone-piercing killing intent surged out from deep within his eyes. “Like I said, this time around, you will not be able to escape.”

“Ch ch, those are my words!”

Lin Langtian smiled viciously. He suddenly stepped forward as an incomparably violent Yuan Power ripple swept out from within his body like a wave.

“Is this all the Five Yuan Nirvana stage has to offer?” Lin Dong’s was unaffected as he indifferently spoke upon feeling the Yuan Power ripple.

“It is more than sufficient to finish you off!”

Lin Liangtian’s face was hideous. His large hand suddenly clenched as mighty Yuan Power whizzed out, transforming into many Yuan Power light spears which flew towards Lin Dong’s vital spots at lightning speed.

“Clang!”

Lin Dong closed his fist around the Heavenly Crocodile Bone Spear that suddenly appeared. The spear jerked, transforming into numerous afterimages. Mighty Yuan Power surged out, directly

shattering the numerous light spears.

“You actually have the audacity to display such an attack?” Lin Dong sneered. He gripped his hand as a black metal seal emerged on his palm. Wave after wave of incomparably wild and violent ripples swiftly outwards.

Swoosh!

The wind furious roared when the black seal appeared. Black light lingered around it while the crouching black dragon once again showed signs of opening its eyes.

“Suppress him!”

A cold glint flashed across Lin Dong’s eyes. The black metal seal immediately whizzed out. Like a black metal mountain, it rushed towards the sky above Lin Langtian, before violently slamming down.

“Yi Mo Hand!”

Lin Langtian’s expression changed slightly when he sensed the wild and violent strength contained within the black seal. He did not dare to underestimate it. His hand suddenly grabbed out as monstrous Yuan Power surged forth. One could see that Lin Langtian’s hand become strangely pitch-black. After which, a palm clashed against metal seal head-on.

Clang!

A clear metallic sound resounded in the sky. A circular energy ripple that was visible to the naked eye directly spread outwards from Lin Langtian's palm. The wild and violent pressuring black metal seal had actually been forcibly withstood.

“Ch ch, Lin Dong do you think that I am as easy to deal with as before?” Lin Langtian chuckled maliciously at Lin Dong. Immediately his eyes became ferocious, while his palm transformed into a fist at lightning speed as it ruthlessly smashed against the black metal seal.

Bang!

An extremely terrifying strength overflowed from Lin Langtian's black hand. With a single punch, he forcibly sent the black metal seal flying.

“That fellow can actually send Lin Dong's Heavenly Soul Treasure flying with one punch...”

Currently, extremely earthshaking battles had erupted within the light barriers all over the sky. Everyone felt their blood boil as they watched the intense battles within the light barriers.

There was not a single fight in this place that was not interesting. Those who could enter the Nirvana Golden Ranking basically possessed extremely great abilities. The intensity of the fights



between the top experts of these empires was naturally something that one did not even need to mention.

After all, not everyone possessed the qualifications to fight in this arena. Only the elites could challenge one another in this place.

On the mountain top, Liu Bai and the rest were naturally focused on Lin Dong's battle. All of their faces changed a little when they saw that Lin Langtian had actually sent Lin Dong's Heavenly Soul Treasure flying.

"That fellow... is very powerful..." Yan Sen's expression was solemn as he stared at Lin Langtian. He could sense a dangerous sensation that was even greater than the Sky Devil Empire's Song Zhen.

"Both Lin Dong and him seem to come from the same empire. However, from the looks of it, these two appear to be sworn enemies..." Liu Bai frowned and said.

Beside him, the Mo Ling trio released a bitter laughter. Their expressions were somewhat complicated as they watched the interior of the light barrier. The five of them had entered this ancient space together a year ago. Yet, Lin Dong and Lin Langtian were now far ahead of them...

However, they felt a little sad at this conflict between Lin Dong and Lin Langtian. They were not fully aware of the grudge between the two. However, they could clearly sense the degree of enmity between them.

“Relax. Lin Dong has exchanged blows with Lin Langtian several times before and has always obtained the upper hand. There are not many in the Ancient Battlefield that can defeat Lin Dong.” Mo Ling said. Although all of them were from the Great Yan Empire, they clearly stood on Lin Dong’s side.

Liu Bai’s group nodded upon hearing this. They had never doubted Lin Dong’s abilities. However, Lin Langtian was also no ordinary individual.

“As expected of the Nirvana Golden Ranking battle...”

Liu Bai and Yan Sen exchanged a look with each other. They could see both desire and regret in each other’s eyes.

“That fellow’s arm...”

Lin Dong eyes focused. His gaze was fixed onto the metallic pitch-black arm of Lin Langtian. He could sense an extremely strange undulation from it. It was likely that this was an unusual martial arts that he was not aware of.

Swoosh!

Lin Langtian’s figure suddenly rushed out. Numerous after images flashed across the sky before flying towards Lin Dong at a shocking speed. The black arm that cut through the air left behind a faint black scar.

“Roar!”

Lin Dong’s toes pushed down onto the air upon seeing this. His figure rushed backwards as his hand seals changed. The black dragon on the blown away black metal seal rose into the air and roared at the heavens. The dragon roar directly transformed into countless black sonic waves that swept towards Lin Langtian from all directions.

“Killing Dragon Sonic Swirl!”

The black sonic wave swept out as Lin Dong viciously clenched his fist. Countless black sonic waves swiftly gathered together, transforming into a wild and violent rotating sonic wave whirlwind that contained a terrifying strength as it tore through the sky like a sharp sonic blade and viciously charged towards Lin Langtian.

“Yi Mo Soul Shattering Palm!”

Lin Langtian’s laughed in a savage manner as he faced this ferocious attack of Lin Dong. He showed no signs of avoiding the attack. His black hand suddenly slammed outwards. Immediately, a monstrous black light gathered together. Various piercing sounds were continuously emitted from within the black light.

The black light whizzed out, transforming into a large black palm. It was as if there was the silhouette of a howling demon god within the black palm, an extremely shocking sight.

Creak creak!

The large black light hand ruthlessly grabbed the sonic wave. After which, it suddenly clenched. Immediately, a sharp ear-piercing sound frantically rang out, while accompanied by an astonishing ripple.

“Bang!”

Lin Langtian’s expression was sinister. He let out a sharp cry as the black light surged. Numerous cracks immediately formed on the sonic wave, before it was forcibly crushed to pieces. This violent scene caused the expressions on Liu Bai’s group to change.

“Ch ch. Lin Dong. I have said it before. My current strength is something you will be frightened of. Enjoy the great death feast that I have prepared for you!”

Lin Langtian roared at the heavens. Overflowing black light swept unfurled from his body, covering half of the sky within the light barrier. The black light gathered behind him, vaguely transforming into the enormous figure of a demon god, while a dark chilling aura permeated the sky like an icy wind.

Lin Dong raised his head and gazed at Lin Langtian, who appeared just like a demon god descending from the sky. The corners of Lin Dong’s mouth slowly lifted to form a savagely cold smile. Green light began to surge on his body as green scales faintly appear.

“This should be a little interesting. However, it might not be good for you to be overly pleased...”

# Chapter 618: Forming a Martial Soul

---

Torrential black light surged like billowing black clouds, filling the light barrier. The astonishing undulations that spread out from within the black clouds drew many shocked gazes.

Lin Langtian's body was suspended below the black clouds. A titanic figure was faintly discernable within the sky-encompassing black light behind him, like a terrifying demon god that had stepped out from the land of asura.

“This is a Divine Martial Art...”

Astonishment flashed across some of the super sect members seated on the light chairs in the sky when they saw this scene.

“It is a little similar to the demonic martial arts from ancient times. Looks like there are quite a number of ancient inheritances hidden within this ancient realm. That little fellow has met a troublesome opponent this time...” The old man from the Dao Sect stared at the vaguely visible giant figure behind Lin Langtian and muttered to himself in amazement.

Lin Dong's eyes hardened when he saw Lin Langtian's monstrous aura. This strange and powerful martial art was something that Lin Langtian did not possess before. Clearly, he had obtained it later on or perhaps it was something that the Yuan Spirit within his body had passed to him.

Based on Lin Dong's guess, this martial art that Lin Langtian had

displayed was at least a high grade Soul Martial Art. It was definitely stronger than Song Zhen's Taozong Sect martial arts...

Black light lingered around Lin Langtian. His originally normal face now had a dark aura lingering over it. His gaze faintly contained some strange black glow as he stared at Lin Dong. Soon after, the corners of his mouth slowly lifted into a cruel arc as he extended his finger and pressed it onto the empty air.

“Yi Mo Beam!”

Lin Langtian's finger gently landed on the air. The sky-encompassing black light behind him immediately frantically rushed forth, directly transforming into a beam of black light that tore through air and shot out explosively.

Swoosh!

The black light beam was so fast that it could not be described by words. Moreover, the ripples from it caused even the experts, who had stepped into the five Yuan Nirvana stage, to be moved.

Black light wiggled at the tip of the beam as the black beam tore through the skies. It faintly formed a strange ghost-like face that caused one's hair to stand on ends.

Lin Dong watched the light beam that was swiftly being magnified in his eyes while his expression grew much more solemn. Clearly, he had sensed the lethality of Lin Langtian's

attack. Immediately, he extended his hand as green light swiftly surged onto his palm. The light rapidly gathered together, forming a green scale shield.

Bang!

The green scale shield had barely materialized when the black beam ruthlessly rushed over and slammed heavily against the green scale shield. Soon after, a shocking ripple frantically swept outwards from the point of collision.

“Swoosh swoosh!”

When he saw that Lin Dong had actually blocked his extremely powerful and destructive black light beam, Lin Langtian’s face grew even more twisted. He flicked his ten fingers as the black light behind his body spread, transforming into light beams that filled the sky as they wildly shot out.

Even a five Yuan Nirvana stage expert did not dare to underestimate any one of these black light beams. The current attack was such that even the other experts on the Nirvana Golden Ranking would have to evade it instead of facing it head on.

“Let’s see how many times you can block!”

Lin Langtian laughed viciously. Now that he had merged with the Yuan Spirit within his body, although he had to pay the price of losing his independent personality, the power inside his body far



exceeded an ordinary five Yuan Nirvana stage expert. This enormous consumption of energy was clearly no problem for him.

He wanted to rely on this fact to forcefully exhaust Lin Dong to death!

The torrential black light was just like black meteorites descending from the skies and their momentum was extremely overwhelming. Lin Dong inhaled a deep breath as he watched this sight, while green light flickered wildly on his body.

Lin Dong's eyes suddenly became chilly as the green light flickered. His ten fingers abruptly flicked.

Swoosh!

Green light surged, transforming into numerous diamond shaped green scales that were half the size of a palm. An extremely shocking, sharp chilling glow spread over its edges, causing it to appear extremely sharp.

The green scales immediately swept out when they appeared. In an instant, it was as though a green storm had unfurled which collided with the black beams that permeated the sky.

The entire sky appeared to have turned into the battleground between green and black!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Green scales and black light clashed. Immediately, several maniacal explosions continuously resounded across the sky as green light and black light frantically unfurled. The wild and violent ripple that resulted caused the surrounding light barrier to ripple.

Numerous eyes on the mountain top looked at this exchange in shock. They could clearly sense the dense killing intent contained within their attacks. Both parties had no intention of showing mercy and they had used a killing move each time they attacked. Furthermore, everyone present was clearly aware that if they were fighting, none of them would be able to block that kind of storm green scales or the black light beam from either of those two...

An incomparably wild and violent energy fluctuation swept apart from the light barrier. Two figures amongst them were implicated. Immediately, they were shaken until they ended up flying back. Their toes pressed for over a dozen times in the air before they barely managed to stabilize themselves.

“That bastard...”

Lin Langtian stabilized his body. His expression was a little ugly. He did not expect that Lin Dong would actually become so much stronger after just half a year's time. Moreover, the thing that really shocked him was that Lin Dong's Yuan Power also appeared to be extremely vast and mighty. Typically speaking, after executing his previous attack, it was likely that even an ordinary five Yuan Nirvana Stage expert would be severely drained. However, judging from Lin Dong's relaxed manner, it was clear

that he was not exhausted at all.

“Huff.”

A long breath was slowly released from Lin Dong’s mouth. He slowly raised his head and his eyes stared indifferently at Lin Langtian. Due to the presence of the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, he was able to constantly absorb Yuan Power from around him to replenish himself. Therefore, it was extremely naive for Lin Langtian to compete with him in terms of stamina.

However, Lin Dong clearly did not intend to continue dragging on and playing with him. Since he had already fought, he should just directly use a killing move!

Lin Dong lowered his eyes. Blade like sharp cold glows surged out from within his eyes. Both of his hands were slowly placed together. After which, his hand seal changed with a lightning like speed.

“Merge!”

Yuan Power, Mental Energy and Devouring Power gathered together within Lin Dong’s body. Finally, they poured wildly into the Ancient Universe Formation above his Dantian.

“Swoosh swoosh!”

That majestic energy was just like an erupting volcano as it

transformed into numerous grayish black light pillars that suddenly surged out from within Lin Dong's body. The entire place shook at that instance.

“This kind of energy... how unusual...”

Those people from the super sects on the light seats suddenly focused their eyes when they saw these grayish black light pillar from merged energy. Their eyes were shocked as they stared at Lin Dong's battle arena. They could sense an extremely faint and mysterious fluctuation.

“This little fellow is really capable...” The old man from the Dao Sect stared at Lin Dong with great interest. He was aware that Lin Dong had obtained the inheritance of the Green Dragon Hall. However, he was unaware that Lin Dong actually possessed this kind of unique energy.

“Swoosh swoosh!”

The enormous light pillar shot towards the sky. After which, they crossed each other in the sky. Following the agglomeration of these light pillar, the empty area had swiftly collapsed and transformed into complete darkness.

An illusionary figure slowly appeared when the darkness surfaced.

The illusory figure was blurry. However, one could faintly see

that he was standing with his hands behind him. His eyes overlooked the entire area and a kind of aura that was difficult to describe, slowly spread apart while being accompanied by a kind of ancient feeling.

“Great Desolate Imprisoning Heavenly Hand, Forming Martial Soul!”

At this moment, Lin Dong’s expression was extremely solemn. Along with the great increase in his strength, he was becoming increasingly familiar with his control of his high grade martial arts, Great Desolate Imprisoning Heavenly Hand. The shocking strength that he was unable to unleash in the past, was currently being gradually unleashed by him.

At Lin Dong’s command, those light pillars which had agglomerated a large amount of energy, completely rushed into the empty void. After which, they entered into the blurry figure.

Buzz buzz!

With the pouring in of these energy light pillar, the illusory figure appeared to slowly become substance like. It was possible to see that tall figure wearing a faint gray robes amidst the blurriness. His blurry eyes seemed as though they were unable to override the world.

“He is actually able to form a martial arts soul to such an extent...”

Quite a number of people looked at the illusory figure that emitted an ancient feeling in the empty space. Their eyes contained some shock. A majority of people here knew soul martial arts. However, there was hardly anyone who could unleash their soul martial arts to such an extent.

The most powerful part of a soul martial arts was not the might that it brought. Instead, it was the aura of its creator that it possessed. Just a remanent aura from those top experts that lived in the ancient times, would be able to shake the heavens.

Lin Langtian lifted his head and looked at the blurry figure in the empty space. A extremely solemn expression gradually surged onto his face, which was covered by ferocity. He could sense the extraordinary power behind Lin Dong's attack.

Under the attention of the crowd, Lin Dong inhaled a deep breath of air. Promptly, an aura slowly extended from his palm before it aimed at Lin Langtian in the distance. In the next instant, a cold glint surged in his eyes as his hand suddenly clenched.

Rumble!

When Lin Dong clenched his hand, everyone were shocked to see that the blurry figure in the empty darkness had actually extended his hand. Moreover, the most shocking fact was that his hand was actually truly extended out from within the void and appeared in front of the eyes of countless number of people!

That was an extremely long and white hand that looked

extremely beautiful. However, everyone was aware that it was a hand that had truly existed in the ancient times. It definitely possessed a great might that could rip apart the land.

The hand appeared to have penetrated through time, broke through space and came from the ancient times. It broke through the illusion and gently slammed down at Lin Langtian while everyone watched.

Boom!

The sky crumbled almost instantly the moment the hand slammed down. Even the natural Yuan Power had been forcefully shattered by this palm!

This palm was actually so terrifying!

# Chapter 619: Unleashing All of One's Skills

---

Rumble!

The slender and fair palm made gently fanning motion from a great distance away. However, this seemingly gently action had a the terrifying power that could stir the heavens.

The Yuan Power that filled the sky completely exploded due to the palm as terrifying waves of air spread outwards. In the end, they struck heavily onto the surrounding enormous light barrier, causing intense ripples to erupt on it.

The formless air was also being frantically compressed at this moment, and one could faintly see the air within the light barrier being scattered.

“Bang!”

A near vacuum like palm imprint erupted from the slender white hand. There was no majestic energy ripple inside the palm imprint, however, it contained an extremely ancient aura.

That sliver of aura appeared to have broken through from space and time from the the very distant past. It was old and unfathomable. Just this tiny bit of it possessed the strength to shake the lands.

Drip!



The vacuum palm imprint had yet to land on the ground, yet a hundred feet deep palm imprint had already appeared on the Yuan Power battle stage below. One could even see the wildly flickering Yuan Power ripples at the edge of the palm imprint.

The black light, which originally permeated the sky, was also forcefully suppressed by the vacuum palm imprint until it shrunk to a dozen feet around Lin Langtian. The powerful pressure made Lin Langtian's bones emit creaking sounds.

“It's not so easy to kill me!”

However, the current Lin Langtian was also no longer the same as he was in the past. His eyes revealed a fierce killing intent in the face of this enormous pressure. Immediately, his hands formed a series of seals while a deep inhuman howl rang out from his throat.

Bang!

An overflowing black light swiftly gushed out from Lin Langtian's body in ring like shapes at an extremely astonishing rate. The black light surged, unwavering as it withstood the enormous pressure that had descended from the sky.

“Lin Dong, do you really think that you're the only one who can summon the martial soul?”

“Yi Mo Mirror, form the martial soul!”

A majestic black glow frantically gathered behind Lin Langtian, vaguely forming a black illusory figure. An incomparably mournful noise like the roars from tens of thousands of demons, sounded out.

At this moment, the black light filled the skies, blotting out the sun. It was as if the end of the world was arriving.

“Roar!”

The black illusory figure took shape behind Lin Langtian. After which, a shrivelled black hand actually broke through space and appeared amidst the low and deep cry from Lin Langtian.

Circles of black light lingered around the black hand, making it to appear extremely strange.

“Yi Mo Mirror. Could it be the martial arts left behind by the terrible Yi Mo Old Man of ancient times?” The Dao Sect old man muttered on his light chair in the sky. He was a little surprised as he watched this scene.

“The Great Desolate Imprisoning Heavenly Hand Lin Dong has displayed is likely to be left behind by the Great Desolated Emperor from ancient times. Tsk tsk, both are formidable experts from that ancient time. I wonder just which martial soul will come out on top in this fight.”

The black palm broke through space. Without pause, it carried a torrential black light as it rushed out and collided against the vacuum palm imprint.

Rumble!

The two palms flew at each other, one from the top and one from the bottom, each containing an earth-shattering momentum. In the next instant, they violently collided, causing the pupils of the numerous watching eyes to shrink abruptly.

At the moment of collision, it appeared as though the entire place had suddenly become completely silent. Everyone could see wave after wave of Yuan Power wildly fleeing from the Lin Dong's and Lin Langtian's battleground. From the looks of it, the undulations there were able to annihilate even the natural Yuan Power of the land.

Boom!

The silence merely lasted for an instant. After which, a terrifying and indescribable energy storm swept out from the light barrier. Immediately, the light barrier that was personally placed by the representative from the Yuan Gate, Liu Tong, emitted an ear-piercing cracking sound. The light barrier wiggled wildly, appearing as though it was somewhat unable to endure being struck by that kind of energy.

Liu Tong had also clearly take notice of this place. This scene involuntarily caused him to frown. If he allowed two members of

the younger generation to break the defence that he had placed amidst their battle, it would cause him to lose a great amount of face. Immediately, his sleeves waved and a majestic Yuan Power poured into the light barrier. Its luster immediately became resplendently bright, like a soup made of gold.

Bang!

Numerous eyes gathered on the light barrier. An uncontrollable raging storm was spreading at that spot. This storm was just like a whip that heavily slammed onto Lin Dong and Lin Langtian, who had nowhere to hide.

Boom boom!

Two figures flew backwards in a miserable fashion. Finally, they collided violently into the light barrier. Soon after, a mouthful of fresh blood was spat out from their mouths. It was clear that they had suffered some injuries from the backlash.

Lin Dong stabilized his body and wiped off the blood on the corner of his mouth. His brow was knitted as he gazed at the terrifying energy fluctuation that was present, while his expression grew much more solemn. Clearly, he did not expect that Lin Langtian would be so troublesome to deal with...

On the other side, Lin Langtian also staggered to his feet. His hair and face were in a mess. From the looks of it, he appeared in a much more terrible state than Lin Dong. Looking at things from a certain point of view, he was clearly slightly inferior to Lin Dong in

their earlier clash. Moreover, although Lin Dong had also spat out a mouthful of blood due to the backlash, he did not appear to have suffered any serious injuries. Lin Dong's physical body appeared to be far stronger than Lin Langtian had imagined.

“I... am going to kill you...”

Lin Langtian's hair was scattered. His eyes were scarlet as his body trembled slightly. An extremely hoarse voice was emitted from his mouth.

There seemed to be something amiss with Lin Langtian's current condition. The expression in his eyes fluctuated unceasingly. At times it appeared to be struggling, while sinister at other times.

“If we do not kill Lin Dong, you can forget about completely occupying my body. Give me all of your strength!” Lin Langtian's hand violently grabbed his head, scratching his head until numerous lines of blood appeared. With an insane look on his face, he suddenly roared in his mind.

“This brat is extremely strange. There are too many secrets within his body. Even if I give all of my strength to you, it is likely that you will be unable to kill him. One will not worry about not having any wood to burn if one ensure the mountain remains green. As long as I am released from my Yuan Spirit form, it will only be too easy for me to kill him!” A furious voice also sounded in Lin Langtian heart. It belonged to the mysterious Yuan Spirit.

“Tch tch. I have said that I will definitely kill him this time

around!”

Lin Langtian’s eyes were ferocious. Soon after, a cruel expression was formed from the corners of his mouth, “Did you not mention that there is a final killing blow of the Yi Mo Mirror? I want to use that!”

“Are you crazy. Do you know what kind of price you need to pay?”

“Tsk tsk, doesn’t it merely require you to sacrifice some Yuan Spirit? It’s fine. Once Lin Dong is dealt with, you will be able to take control of this body and completely possess this body of mine. The Yuan Spirit that you lose will also be recovered sooner or later!” Lin Langtian released a strange laughter as he spoke.

“You!” The Yuan Spirit’s voice appeared a little furious.

“You and I have already merged. Currently, I am in control of this body. There is no need for any unnecessary words. In any case, you will be able to obtain what you want once we succeed. I do not want anything else now. All I want is to kill that bastard Lin Dong!”

The current Lin Langtian did not fear the Yuan Spirit in his body. With a sinister laugh, his hands were placed together as a series of seals were made, before slamming his palm onto his chest.

Ah!

Upon this act of his, a faint miserable cry emerged from inside his body. After which, his ten fingers were like blades as they scratched a deep bloody scar over his chest. Fresh blood flowed out and gathered in front of him.

Fresh bright red blood gathered in front of Lin Langtian. One could vaguely see some golden light surging within the blood. An extremely mysterious undulation spread from it.

“It is indeed the Yuan Spirit fluctuation...” That old man from the Dao Sect looked at the golden light suspended within the blood as his eyes focused.

Lin Langtian stared at the blood in front of him. The cruelty at the corners of his mouth became even more intense. Immediately, his hand seal rapidly changed. Black light spread out from within his body, forming a dark human figure behind him.

“Yuan Spirit offering!”

Lin Langtian raised his head. He gave an eerie smile to Lin Dong, who was frowning intensely in the distance, a smile caused one's hair to stand. After which, Lin Langtian let out a low cry as the blood containing golden light flew out. Finally, it shot into the dark figure.

Sizzle sizzle!

After the blood was shot into it, that dark illusory figure immediately began to wiggle wildly. Black fog curled around it as an extremely terrifying ripple spread outwards.

“It’s the Yuan Spirit offering!”

The expressions of the super sect experts in the sky suddenly changed upon seeing this scene. Immediately, their eyes turned serious.

“Using the Yuan Spirit as an offering to completely materialize the ancient aura of the martial soul...”

“Ha ha, Lin Dong, the two of us has fought for so many years. However, the one who has the last laugh will still be me. In the end, you will be crushed under my feet like back then!”

Lin Langtian roared towards the sky. His dishevelled appearance was just like an evil ghost, causing him to appear extremely terrifying.

While Lin Langtian roared to the sky. The wiggling black glow behind him also gradually solidified. A moment later, the black fog scattered and a foot slowly stepped out from within it. Accompanied by a monstrously evil aura, it looked just like a demon king from ancient times that had appeared in this era a millennium later...



# Chapter 620: Green Dragon Aegis

---

The torrential darkness was like a hundred feet tall black curtain that hung from the heavens. Accompanied by an ancient aura, a sole surrounded by black light stepped out from the curtain. It was as if the black curtain was connected to the land from a thousand years ago.

Almost every gaze on the mountain peak was directed at the black curtain. When they saw the foot that emitted an ancient aura, their eye pupils instantly dilated. Everyone could feel the undulations of destruction from it.

On another battle arena, the Tianyuan Empire's Qin Tian was alarmed by this undulation as well. His gaze quickly shifted over, his normally faintly smiling face had now become a little unnatural. Clearly, he did not like the fact that he was outshone by someone else...

In the Hundred Empire War, regardless of strength or background, he should be the undisputed focal point. However, the point of focus had now been seized by Lin Dong's battle. This made Qin Tian feel rather unhappy.

After all, those two fellows were from a low rank empire...

“Using a Yuan Spirit as an offering to the Martial Art Soul huh. This Lin Langtian is rather capable. I wonder where he obtained that broken Yuan Spirit...”

Qin Tian's facial expression was rather venomous. He identified Lin Langtian's intention with a glance, causing a surprised look to flash across his eyes. However, he was not worried. Lin Langtian's so-called killer move could not defeat him. After all, Qin Tian's reputation of being the most powerful fighter on the Nirvana Golden Ranking was not mere bragging.

“This move should be able to get rid of Lin Dong. Such a pity...”

Qin Tian looked at now much more grim faced Lin Dong as he smirked in an indifferent manner. Evidently, Qin Tian felt that the outcome of Lin Dong's battle had been decided.

There was an eighty percent chance that Lin Dong would lose.

Boom!

In the sky, the curtain of torrential darkness was bubbling. Following behind the dark glowing foot was a scrawny and dried-up black illusory figure, who stepped out of the curtain unhurriedly. Eventually, its entire body was out in this arena.

Swish!

At this moment, everyone on the mountain peak directed their gazes towards that figure.

The figure appeared scrawny and dried up. Its entire body was black in color and it was engulfed in numerous beams of dark

glow, making it difficult for people to identify its facial features clearly. However, the ancient aura and sinister vibes that it was releasing terrified the entire Heaven and Earth.

“Hehe!”

Lin Langtian’s face was malevolent. He stared at Lin Dong and wiped off the blood stains on the corners of his mouth. With the black figure standing behind him, his distorted face looked extremely terrorizing.

Lin Langtian snorted sinisterly, showing signs of turning into an insane devil. Following which, under everyone’s attentive gazes, he slowly raised up his right hand. At this moment, killer intent and insanity began to form in his eyes rapidly.

As Lin Langtian held up his right hand, the black figure behind him also raised up its willowy right arm and pointed it at Lin Dong.

Buzz!

As the willowy arm pointed at Lin Dong, the latter discovered that he had been locked on by an unavoidable attack. This allowed him to understand that the next deadly attack would follow him to the ends of the earth and stopped only if he was dead!

Immense pressure engulfed Lin Dong, causing his facial expression to turn sombre. At this moment, he could feel a strong sense of danger arising in his heart. Apparently, the fact that Lin

Langtian could go to such extent had exceeded Lin Dong's expectation....

“Lin Dong, we have been fighting for so many years, it's time to end it. Don't worry, after finishing you off, I will take good care of your Yan City's branch family, hehe!” Lin Langtian smirked as his eyes became scarlet-red.

“Yi Mo Heavenly Finger!”

Lin Langtian's face turned malevolent and he reached out his finger and pointed it towards the sky. The killer intent in his eyes was so intense that it seemed to solidify in an actual substance that would shoot out at any moment. As Lin Langtian pointed his finger towards the sky, the black figure behind him tapped its bony finger lightly as well.

As the figure tapped its finger, the entire sky seemed to darken. The air within the light barrier dissipated and formed a vacuum space. Following which, a beam of darkness that was more than ten feet tall shot down from the sky like a black-colored comet. It ripped through the sky and blasted towards Lin Dong like the finger of death!

Buzz!

As the tremendous beam of darkness ripped through the air, it did not make any terrifying loud sound. The Yuan Power in its trajectory was destroyed entirely. Everyone could clearly sense the devastating power that the beam of darkness contained.

That power could pierce through Heaven and Earth!

All the participants on the mountain peak were stunned by that beam of darkness. Even those practitioners who had stepped into the Nirvana Golden Ranking had their faces turned pale-white. They knew that if they were the ones facing this attack, they would surely die!

“Lin Dong is in trouble...”

Lan Ying, who had just gained an upper hand in her own battle, stared solemnly at the heaven-piercing beam of darkness with her beautiful eyes. Her face was filled with fear and terror.

She could not imagine the man named Lin Langtian could execute such a powerful martial art offense. How could everyone that come from the Great Yan Empire be so abnormally strong? This made her question if the Great Yan Empire was really a low rank empire?

These fellows’ strength and capabilities would put the geniuses from the top ten super empires to shame...

“Swish!”

The beam of darkness pierced through the sky and blasted towards Lin Dong with an unavoidable poise. At this moment, Lin Dong’s facial expression became extremely sombre.

The beam of darkness magnified rapidly in Lin Dong's eyes. However, under the stunning gazes from the onlookers, Lin Dong's eyes slowly closed. His hand seal began to form into a dragon head-like shape. It was at this moment that resplendent green light gushed out from his body like a tidal wave.

Torrential green light surrounded Lin Dong's body. Indistinctly, the green light seemed to form a gigantic Green Dragon illusory figure. It released waves of terrorizing energy undulation.

“Heavenly Dragon Aura!”

On the glowing chairs, the eyes of the super sects' members froze and their faces turned sombre. From Lin Dong's body, they could sense an aura that only a legitimate dragon clan would possess!

At this moment, the Heavenly Dragon Aura that was left behind by Qing Zhi in Lin Dong's Dantian suddenly erupted. Indescribable waves of boundless energy extended through Lin Dong's limbs and body with a terrifying speed.

As the Heavenly Dragon Aura erupted, the Green Dragon illusory figure that engulfed Lin Dong's body began to materialize rapidly. On its gigantic body, the dragon scales were flickering with dazzling green light. Its enormous body was vigorous and powerful, as if it was made of steel.

Roar!

The gigantic green dragon roared towards the sky. The dragon roar then materialized into frantic shock waves that swept through the arena, creating ripples to form on the light barrier.

“Materialized Dragon Skill, Green Dragon Aegis!”

A deep bellow rang across Lin Dong’s mind as he closed his eyes. At this moment, he suddenly opened his eyes again and changed his hand seal. The gigantic green dragon engulfed Lin Dong’s body and possessed him in an instant.

The green glow began to extend outward from the Green Dragon’s body and materialized into a Green Dragon Aegis.

The enormous aegis was surrounded by glowing green light. A dragon image then appeared on its body and gave a deafening roar. The body of the aegis was covered with green-colored dragon scales as well. An ancient and awe-inspiring aura was given off by the aegis.

“Such a powerful defense...”

The Dao Sect old man looked shockingly at the Green Dragon Aegis. He could sense a powerful defensive aura emitting from the aegis. This is an extremely formidable defensive martial art.

The Dragon Aegis was like an exceptionally resistant shield while the beam of darkness was like an extremely powerful spear.

Who would gain the upper hand, the aggressor or the defender?

A rare look of anticipation appeared on the face of the Dao Sect's old man.

Swoosh!

Naturally, he was not the only one who had such thought. At this moment, everyone on the mountain peak directed their gazes at this sight. Then, under the zealous gazes from the onlookers, the heaven-piercing beam of darkness that was accompanied by a destructive power shot down from the sky like a comet and collided ferociously with the enormous glowing Green Dragon Aegis!

Boom!

At that moment, a crisp ringing sound resounded throughout the entire Heaven and Earth, destroying the Yuan Power in the air completely....



# Chapter 621: Violence

---

Boom!

Black light tore through the sky and violently struck onto that enormous large green dragon aegis in front of countless number of eyes in an extremely glaring manner.

A loud and clear gong resounded upon the collision. It suddenly resounded over the place and spread with lightning like speed. The substance like ripple directly shook the Yuan Power battle stage until numerous large crack lines appeared. The surrounding light barrier also erupted as waves of cracking ear-piercing sound resounded.

Bang!

The sonic wave swept over the place. Soon after, an annihilation like energy storm followed.

A kind of distorted shape was formed at the spot where the collision occurred. Green and black light mingled with each other. The scene appeared to be one where the world exploded and it was being brilliantly displayed.

The collision that could not be described emitted a soul-stirring ripple. Everyone could only see the wildly flickering light barrier. The tough light barrier that Liu Tong had placed turned unusually distorted at this moment. It even showed signs of crumbling.

Liu Tong looked at this scene. His eyebrows once again frowned tightly and he had no choice but to act again. Only then, did he gradually stabilize that light barrier. After he acted, a shocked expression also flashed across the deep regions of his eyes. He was clearly shocked that Lin Dong and Lin Langtian could actually create such a destructive force when exchanging blows.

The monstrous green light and the black glow swept within the light barrier. They eroded and eliminated each other during the uncontrolled collision. That kind of collision was sufficient to tear a five Yuan Nirvana Stage expert into pieces.

The exterior of the light barrier was as calm as a quiet lake. Within the light barrier was a destructive raging fluctuation. These two completely different scene caused one's eyes to feel a kind of dazzled feeling.

This fight had surpassed the category of a five Yuan Nirvana Stage expert.

Numerous eyes gathered onto the interior of this light barrier. They really wanted to know just whether Lin Dong would be able to survive when faced with this somewhat terrifying attack by Lin Langtian.

Under the crisscrossed stares of the crowd, the ripple within the light barrier gradually weakened. That wild and violent flashing green black light also dimmed and disappeared.

The first one who appeared within the light barrier was Lin Langtian's figure. The black light that was emitted from the dark black figure behind him was wrapped around him. It also allowed him to remain standing amidst the raging fluctuation.

At this moment, Lin Langtian's eyes were staring firmly at the opposite side of the battle stage. The last remaining green black light was beginning to scatter at that spot.

A blurry yet large aegis figure also vaguely appeared once again.

Lin Langtian's eyes suddenly shrunk upon seeing the blurry aegis figure. His expression also became extremely dark and solemn. Could it be that even this was unable to finish him off?

The blurry aegis figure became increasingly clear. Finally, it once again appeared in front of all the eyes present in this place.

The green dragon aegis stood quietly. Sunlight poured from the sky and shone on the dragon aegis. It had a feeling of vicissitude and prestige spreading from it.

“He has actually withstood the attack...”

The top of the mountain was in a complete uproar. A shaken expression surged up the eyes of quite a number of people. Exclamations swiftly spread like a tidal wave.

Lin Langtian previous attack was something that even a five

Yuan Nirvana Stage expert would have difficulty blocking. Everyone present had stepped into the Nirvana Golden Ranking but other than a rare few, it was likely that no one would have the confidence to it. Yet, Lin Dong had actually relied on the strength of a four Yuan Nirvana Stage to withstand this fierce and vicious attack head on. How could this not cause everyone to be shocked.

“This little fellow does indeed possess quite a lot of tactics...” That old man from the Dao Sect looked at this scene and involuntarily nodded slowly. He grew increasingly pleased with Lin Dong the more he observed the latter. If this fellow was really able to join the Dao Sect, it would likely be quite an interesting event.

Amidst the focus of all the eyes present, the green dragon aegis within the light barrier remained quiet for a moment before some activity occurred. A faint green light lingered over the aegis. Immediately, it began to gradually become paler...

Lin Langtian's expression was gloomy as he looked at the paling dragon aegis. He was just about to move when his eyes suddenly shrunk. He saw a blurry figure suddenly rushed out from within that dissipated dragon aegis in a quick ghost like manner.

Bang!

The figure was so fast that one had difficulty describing it. Even Lin Langtian could only see a blurry green light before that wild and violent ripple, which was accompanied by an enormous pressure, rushed over in midair.

Lin Dong had retaliated!

Lin Langtian's eyes were ferocious. He suddenly extended his hand and grabbed forward. The dark black figure behind him directly penetrated the empty space with its shrivelled hand and grabbed towards that figure.

However, the speed of that green figure was just like a thunderbolt. That large hand grabbed forward, only to find that the area in front was empty. The figure had actually easily dodged it.

“What speed!”

Lin Langtian's expression changed. Clearly, he was shocked by the Lin Dong's sudden surge in speed. However, he did not have the luxury of time to think about it. The green light flashed in front of his eyes and a human figure had already appeared in a strange manner.

Only at this moment did Lin Langtian finally clearly see the figure in front of him. His expression immediately underwent a drastic transformation. The Lin Dong in front appeared to have become larger. His body was covered with green coloured dragon scales. At a glance, he appeared just like a dragon scale armour. A faint green light flickered while a shocking energy fluctuation was continuously emitted from within his body.

“Swoosh!”

One could still see a pair of cold blade like eyes under the green coloured dragon scale armour. Lin Dong suddenly extended his hand. His arm swelled wildly and actually instantly transformed into a green coloured dragon claw!

Cold glint surged over the dragon claw. The green scales reflected a densely cold luster that appeared to be a fierce weapon with a shocking offensive strength permeating over it!

The hand transformed into a dragon claw. Lin Dong did not pause even for a moment. The dragon claw that contained a terrifying strength violently swiped at Lin Langtian's chest.

Chi chi!

A shocking energy ripple was formed over the tip of the dragon claw. It looked just like a wildly rotating whirlpool that emitted a kind of extremely shocking offensive force. That ripple was powerful enough to rip apart a five Yuan Nirvana Stage expert's Nirvana Golden Body!

Lin Langtian did not dare to slight such a ferocious attack from Lin Dong. A thought passed through his mind and the shrivelled hand of the dark black figure behind him directly rushed out. After which, it violently collided with Lin Dong's dragon claw.

Boom!

A terrifying energy wave wildly swept out from the point of contact. That battle stage, which was formed from the Yuan Power, appeared to be just like a land, which was just plowed. It's layers had been flipped, causing it to appear extremely miserable.

“Tsk tsk, your strength might be quite good but it seems a little lacking if you wish to kill me! It appeared that this transformation of yours can only reach this stage.” Lin Langtian's face was filled with a ferocious smile. The other hand of the black figure also suddenly clenched. It directly carried a destructive wind as it mercilessly smashed towards Lin Dong's head.

“This is not all!”

Cold glint surged within Lin Dong's eyes. He also let out a cold laughter. Immediately, green light lingered on his other hand and it actually swiftly swelled into a vigorous icy cool green coloured dragon claw.

Lin Dong's understanding of the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill had clearly increased at a shocking rate following the countless battles that he experienced previously.

Boom!

The green coloured dragon claw struck violently outwards and directly grabbed the shrivelled skinny hand. A terrifying circular energy ripple once again swept apart.

“You!”

Lin Langtian showed signs of becoming extremely furious when he saw that his attack was once again blocked. He did not expect that he was actually still unable to completely finish off Lin Dong after paying such a heavy price.

“You are right. After having fought for so many years, it is time to end things!”

Lin Dong lifted his head as Lin Langtian turned furious. He revealed an icy cold smile towards the latter. His smile similarly showed some traces of a crazy demon.

“Materialized Dragon Skill, Dragon transformation!”

A low and deep roar resounded within Lin Dong’s heart at this moment. Immediately, the Heavenly Dragon Aura that lingered over Lin Dong’s limbs and skeleton suddenly swiftly surged into Lin Dong’s muscles and bones.

Sizzle sizzle!

Lin Dong’s arms begun to shake violently at this moment. Enormous green scales appeared one after another. His skin also became tough and icy. It seemed that his two arms had been completely transformed into large dragon hands within this short instant!



An intense pain spread out from within his bones. However, this caused Lin Dong's eyes to become increasing scarlet. The Heavenly Dragon Aura was extremely overbearing. The body of an ordinary person was unable to endure it. Even the current Lin Dong would have to pay a hefty price in order to transform his arms into that of a dragon.

Lin Dong gave a dense smile to Lin Langtian after both of his arms turned into dragon like arms. Promptly, he jerked his arms before both of his fist struck out.

The palm wind that struck out was not the least bit fancy and it also did not contain even the slightest trace of martial arts. However, the strength packed within it could only be described by the word "terrifying".

Rumble!

The green coloured dragon hand was just like a storm that poured out. The strength appeared to have agglomerated into something substance like at this moment. This caused the space itself to become distorted.

A terrifying energy ripple swept out. A trace of shock also surged out from the deep regions of Lin Langtian's eyes. Immediately, his body suddenly withdrew explosively. After which, that black figure behind also stepped out and covered Lin Lang Tian's body.

Lin Dong's eyes turned bright red and he vaguely showed signs of turning mad. He did not care just how strong this dark black figure

in front of his eyes was. His hands, which had turned to that of a dragon, directly became like a storm as it poured out with a terrifying strength that could shatter a mountain.

Rumble!

The dragon fist violently landed on the dark black figure. A low and deep ear-piercing sound immediately resounded continuously in the sky. The dark black figure was also shaken until it was forced to continuously retreat. Finally, it emitted a “bang” as it collided onto the light barrier.

Swoosh!

Lin Dong’s figure appeared in front of the dark black figure, which currently had nowhere to retreat. His eyes were scarlet red as his dragon arms swung wildly. It was accompanied by many afterimages as he punched once, twice, thrice...

The top of the mountain was silent. Only the deep muffled sound of Lin Dong’s fists landing on the dark black figure resounded over the place.

“Crack!”

A breaking sound seemed to suddenly appear under this kind of wild and untamed attack that was void of any fancy moves...

Everyone was stunned as they observed this scene. The current

Lin Dong was extremely ruthless.

# Chapter 622: Killing Lin Langtian

---

The fuzzy black human figure collided heavily onto the light barrier. Lin Dong's icy cold eyes vaguely possessed a trace of savageness as he stood before the figure, while green dragon fists that contained a terrifying strength poured down uncontrollably onto the dark black figure like a storm.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Numerous heat palpitating low thuds sounded out from the figure. Everyone could see the swiftly spreading circular ripples on the light barrier behind the black figure.

The current Lin Dong was exactly like a crazy demon.

Mo Ling, Liu Bai and the rest were also stunned as they watched this scene. Clearly, it was also the first time they had seen this usually calm Lin Dong acting with such madness...

The energy ripples that spread out from Lin Dong's dragon fists made everyone clearly understand that when the fist landed, even a five Yuan Nirvana stage expert's Nirvana Golden Body would have difficulty enduring. In the face of this storm of punches, any other five Yuan Nirvana stage expert would be smashed to a bloody pulp.

"You bastard! Get lost!"

Lin Langtian's body was practically enveloped by that tremendous power. He could sense a terrifying strength frantically penetrating through the dark figure and eroding towards his real body, as terror surged out from in the depths of his eyes. Those eyes of his were red as he struggled madly. He was aware that if Lin Dong continued to beat in this crazy manner, even with the martial soul protecting his body, he would still die without a doubt!

Lin Langtian struggled with all his strength, controlling the black figure to block Lin Dong's attack. However, the latter's eyes were currently crimson red, and he ignored Lin Langtian's furious cries. All he did was to raise his fists in a seemingly numb manner and ruthlessly smashed them down.

"Heh, you are indeed from the main clan and the most dazzling genius of the Lin Clan. Lin Langtian, I have already remembered your name since I was very young!"

Lin Dong's eyes were crimson and malicious, while frightening fists violently struck downwards. It was as though the grudge that had been suppressed within his heart for many years had completely erupted.

"You are the first person that I have hated. When I first began my training, my only aim was to kill you and make you pay the price for crippling my father!"

"You offal, how could you know just how my father suffered a fate worse than death because of you. How could you know what kind of price I have paid over the years in order to surpass a genius

like you!”

The thin and weak young man from the small mountain in Qingyang Town had sweat an endless amount of perspiration. He had no Spirit Elixirs, nor did he have any resources or backing. All he could rely on was himself. All he could do was to chase the great genius of the clan in this clumsy and stubborn manner, because, he was the only hope of that small family...

“You have nearly caused me to lose my family. Do you think that I will give you a second chance?”

The corners of Lin Dong’s mouth parted. His expression was incomparably ferocious, while his eyes were bright red as he stared at Lin Langtian. This gaze made the latter’s entire heart turn cold.

“Therefore, hand over your life to me you trash!”

Lin Dong’s right hand tightened once again as monstrous green light surged, gathering together into the shape of a dragon’s head on his fist. The fist force that suddenly surged out exploded the air. An invisible concave arc was formed below Lin Dong’s fist, before it ruthlessly landed on the black figure.

Crack!

An unusually deep sound echoed out, as Lin Langtian’s pupils tightly shrunk. He could hear another cracking sound suddenly appear at this moment. When he violently lowered his head, he

saw the martial soul around his body begin to crumble and scatter.

His strongest defence had been forcibly destroyed by Lin Dong!

Having lost the protection of the martial soul, how could he block Lin Dong's terrifying dragon fists?

Terror suddenly surged out from Lin Langtian's heart like a flood. As he looked towards Lin Dong's terrifying man-devouring appearance, he knew that Lin Dong would not show any mercy. Immediately, his body moved before the martial soul completely collapsed and rapidly withdrew.

“Bang!”

However, just as Lin Langtian's was backing away, Lin Dong smiled sinisterly. Another fist was thrown forward which directly blasted away the black figure. Moreover, the remaining fist force swept out, catching up to Lin Langtian at lightning speed before ferociously slamming onto the latter's body.

Urgh!

The force invaded Lin Langtian's body, causing him to spit out a mouthful of fresh blood as his body miserably landed on the battle stage. A ten feet mark was drawn out on the ground.

Lin Langtian's crawled up in a miserable manner immediately after stabilizing his body. Before he could even utter a word, a

terrifying force arrived once again. A whip-like leg that contained a frightening force was ruthlessly thrown at Lin Langtian's shoulder like a warhammer.

Crack!

Half of Lin Langtian's body instantly caved in. His entire person laid paralyzed on the ground. Just as he was about to struggle madly, an enormous dragon claw had already whizzed downwards and firmly grabbed his throat. Lin Liangtian struggled to raise his head, only to see the dragon scales begin to withdraw on Lin Dong's face. Currently, the face of the latter was filled with a thick killing intent.

"I admit..." Lin Langtian struggled, his face completely red.

"There is no victory or defeat here. Only life and death." Lin Dong stared at Lin Langtian. The ferociousness on his face gradually faded bit by bit as he softly laughed.

He knew that if he allowed Lin Langtian to escape now, the strength that he had displayed would definitely catch the eye of the super sects. Once he entered a super sect, Lin Langtian would pose a great threat towards him and the Lin family in the Great Yan Empire's Yan City.

Lin Dong would obviously not allow this kind of thing to happen!

Lin Langtian's eyes were bright red. A golden glow was faintly



surging deep within his eyes.

“I am aware of the Yuan Spirit within your body...” Lin Dong stared at Lin Langtian and smiled faintly. The coldness in his eyes could not be hidden.

“Relax, I will not allow either of you to escape...”

Lin Langtian felt a chill rush across his entire body when he saw the smile on Lin Dong’s face.

Everyone on the top of the mountain watched this scene where the victory had already been decided. They immediately sighed in relief, appearing to have been relieved of a great burden. Extremely shocked expressions were present in their eyes. That battle earlier had clearly been an eye-opener for them. The extremely wild and violent strength of Lin Dong was sufficient to cause the numerous five Yuan Nirvana stage experts to feel a chill.

“What a powerful physical body.” The expert from the Great Desolate Palace in the sky stared at Lin Dong with somewhat bright eyes. Their sect specialized in the training of physical body and their strength was overpowering. Lin Dong’s explosive burst of power earlier had clearly caused even him to be surprised.

Liu Tong watched this scene indifferently. He could tell that Lin Dong was about to deliver a killing blow. Immediately, he hesitated for a moment and was preparing to say something. Although Lin Langtian had been defeated, he was rather remarkable. Moreover, there seemed to be some mysteries hidden

within his body. If he was recruited into their Yuan Gate, he would be considered as someone worth grooming.

“As long as no one has admitted defeated, the battle will continue until one side dies... currently, none of them has verbally admitted defeat. What are you so anxious about, Liu Tong?” However, just as Liu Tong was about to speak, the old man from the Dao Sect faintly smiled and said.

“Isn’t the victor already obvious?” Liu Tong frowned and asked.

“Did anyone admit defeat?” The old man from the Dao Sect replied in a casual manner.

Liu Tong looked deeply at this old man from the Dao Sect and said no more. He could vaguely tell that this old man from the Dao Sect seemed to be helping that fellow called Lin Dong.

Lin Dong’s eyes were indifferent as he watched the wildly struggling Lin Langtian on the battle stage. However, he slowly bent his body down as his hand gently pressed the top of the Lin Langtian’s head.

“Lin Langtian, it’s over. Bring that Yuan Spirit within that body of yours to hell with you...”

Vigorous Yuan Power undulations gathered wildly in Lin Dong’s palm, while a terrified expression surged up on Lin Langtian’s face. At this moment, he could feel death itself.

“Lin Dong, don’t kill me. This is the grudge between you and Lin Langtian. It has nothing to do with me. As long as you are willing to let me off, I am willing to follow you and obey your orders!”

A panicked voice was suddenly emitted from Lin Langtian’s body while Lin Dong was urged out his Yuan Power. It was from the mysterious Yuan Spirit.

Lin Dong’s eyes were indifferent. He merely laughed softly and slowly shook his head.

“Good bye Lin Langtian. Our grudge ends here...”

Lin Dong stared at the terrified Lin Langtian. Without hesitation, a force from his palm suddenly burst out before Lin Langtian despairing and crazy eyes!

Crack!

The sound of bones breaking resounded in a deafening manner.

# Chapter 623: Complete Extermination

---

Crack!

A clear sound was stealthily echoed from the battle stage as Lin Langtian's wildly struggling body slowly stiffened at this moment...

A ferocious yet terrified expression still remained on Lin Langtian's face. The combination of these two emotions appeared exceptionally frightening.

Lin Dong's hand grabbed firmly onto the top of Lin Langtian's head. His head had already cracked open. Fresh blood along with his brains flowed out, causing him to appear extremely bloody.

Lin Dong's expression was indifferent as he gazed at Lin Langtian, who tenaciously stared back while the lifeforce swiftly disappeared from his eyes. Lin Dong slowly relaxed his hand and wiped off the blood on his clothes.

Lin Langtian was dead.

As he watched the lifeforce swiftly disappear from this body, Lin Dong knew that his grudge with this fellow, who had pestered him like a ghost for many years, had finally ended...

“Father, your son has avenged you...”

Lin Dong raised his head and inhaled deeply. How many years had he waited for this day? This was the day that the young man, who had endured exhausting and bitter training, was looking forward to, right?

However, the current him was no longer that weak youth from back then. His view of the world had now far surpassed the limits of a single Qingyang Town or the Great Yan Empire...

“Father, mother, the both of you can live peacefully in the Great Yan Empire. I will not allow anything to disturb the both of you...”

Lin Dong smiled slightly. His smile was warm and no longer possessed the ferocity from earlier. He lowered his head and looked at Lin Langtian’s ice-cold corpse, before he spoke, “On account of us being from the same clan, I will get someone to bring you back to the Great Yan Empire...”

“Before this, however... I shall finish off that ghastly thing within your body!”

The corners of Lin Dong’s lips curled slightly. His hand gently pressed against Lin Langtian’s forehead. Immediately, a black vortex vaguely appeared on his palm. A wave of Devouring Power suddenly invaded into Lin Langtian’s body.

Although the attack earlier had truly killed Lin Langtian, Lin Dong did not forget that there was a mysterious Yuan Spirit inside the former’s body. Lin Langtian might have died from the earlier attack, but the Yuan Spirit would not be completely wiped out...

However, given Lin Dong's character, he would clearly not leave a potential trouble like this around.

Devouring Power surged into Lin Langtian's body. Immediately, it scattered and searched for the broken Yuan Spirit hidden within...

“Trying to hide?”

The search continued for a moment, only to end up being futile. However, Lin Dong did not give up. He merely sneered and continued to increase his search efforts.

After searching meticulously for several minutes, Lin Dong discovered a ripple near Lin Langtian's heart. A thought immediately passed through his mind as Devouring Power immediately formed into a net that sealed the entire region.

“Lin Dong, we have no grudge between us. You have already killed Lin Langtian, why do you need to hunt me down!” At this moment, the Yuan Spirit had clearly discovered Lin Dong's seal. The former immediately roared out furiously.

“Sorry, I do not like to leave loose ends behind. You have helped Lin Langtian all these years and have brought me a great deal of trouble. Therefore... I do not plan on letting you off.”

Lin Dong did not give the Yuan Spirit any chance to argue. With

a soft laugh, a thought passed through his mind as Devouring Power immediately whizzed out, transforming into a large net that on Lin Langtian's chest, before wrapping around a flickering golden light.

Through the feedback of information from the Devouring Power, Lin Dong could see a blurry figure present within that golden light...

“Is this that Yuan Spirit...”

Lin Dong lifted his eyebrows, feeling a little curious. A Yuan Spirit was a mysterious existence that only existed after one had experienced the seventh Nirvana stage tribulation.

At that time, even if one's physical body was destroyed, one would have a chance of revival as long as one's Yuan Spirit was not destroyed. That person would no longer be like others, where there would not be any chance of revival if one's physical body was destroyed.

Moreover, it was rumoured that when one reached that stage, one could even use the Yuan Spirit and take another person's life from tens of thousands of kilometres away. It was incomparably miraculous. That kind of ability was far from what the current Lin Dong and the rest could imagine.

The Yuan Spirit was clearly unwilling to be captured after it had been wrapped by Devouring Power, and he immediately began to struggle wildly. However, he was just a mere a Yuan Spirit which

had lost his physical body. Without any support, it was impossible for him to compete with Lin Dong.

“Devour...”

Lin Dong’s eyes were indifferent. A thought passed through his mind as Devouring Power erupted. Immediately, the golden light of the Yuan Spirit dimmed. He was gradually being swallowed by the Devouring Power!

“Ah, isn’t this Devouring Power? The Devouring Ancestral Symbol? You actually possess the Devouring Ancestral Symbol!”

The Yuan Spirit immediately let out a sharp screech upon seeing this scene. His screech contained an incomparable shock. Clearly, he had discovered Lin Dong’s secret.

“Your eyes are quite good...”

Lin Dong’s eyes hardened. Soon after, he chuckled softly. Since this fellow had recognised that he possessed the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, it was all the more reason not to let him off...”

“Lin Dong, please don’t kill me. I know many secrets. As long as you allow me to follow you, you will definitely gain many benefits!” The Yuan Spirit seemed to have sensed the killing intent of Lin Dong and hurriedly spoke.

“I already have a brother at my side who is over ten thousand



times more trustworthy than you. I am afraid that I have no use for someone like you...” Lin Dong spoke as he gently smiled, before his eyes quickly turned cold. Devouring Power surged wildly and directly wrapped around the Yuan Spirit. After which, he was completely swallowed amidst wave after wave of sharp cries.

Lin Dong withdrew his hand from Lin Langtian’s forehead, while a ray of black light also quietly rushed into his fingertip.

“There seems to be something extra...”

Lin Dong observed the Devouring Power that surged back into his body. Suddenly, he discovered a cluster of golden light within it. The golden light contained the feeling of a Yuan Spirit. However, it did not possess any will. It was clear that the consciousness of the Yuan Spirit had already been completely removed by him. All that remained was a kind of Yuan Spirit power...

Lin Dong studied the ball of Yuan Spirit golden light. For a moment, he was not sure what to do with it. After musing for a while, a wave of Devouring Power wrapped around it and was brought into his Dantian.

Although Lin Dong believed that the consciousness within this Yuan Spirit had already been removed by him, the cautious Lin Dong would clearly not leave behind any hidden danger.

When he was done, Lin Dong finally withdrew his mind. He patted his hands and with a wave of his sleeves, Lin Langtian’s corpse was kept into his Qiankun bag. After which, he lifted his

head and looked around him. At this moment, he finally discovered that the entire place was silent. Numerous eyes contained fear and respect as they stared at him. Clearly, they were shaken by his viciousness.

Lin Dong was too lazy to say anything when he saw this. These people did not understand the grudge between him and Lin Langtian. He knew that if he was the one who was defeated this time around, his fate would likely be even worse than Lin Langtian's.

Lin Dong's eyes looked towards the old man from the Dao Sect. After which, he smiled towards the latter. It was all thanks to this old man that he was able to finish off his greatest threat, Lin Langtian...

The old man from the Dao Sect stroked his beard when he saw Lin Dong looking over. Lin Dong's actions did not cause any ill-feelings. He was likewise no saint and was clearly aware of just how foolish it was to have a merciful heart towards one's opponent.

Liu Tong looked deeply at Lin Dong, before waving his hand. A vast and powerful voice resounded, "Since the first round of battles has ended, there is no need for any unnecessary words. Let the second round begin..."

Lin Dong's eyes swept around him. The first round of the Nirvana Golden Ranking battles had already ended. Little Flame and Little Marten had advanced as expected. The only thing that surprised Lin Dong was that even Su Rou had managed to pull

through. However, from how she was gasping for breath, she had clearly experienced quite a fierce battle...

Lin Dong's eyes shifted away from Su Ruo. After which, he looked at Qin Tian, who had been observing him. The latter's face no longer had the smile from earlier. Instead, there was a strange feeling in its place. His eyes caused Lin Dong to frown slightly.

“The opponents from the second round will still be decided by drawing lots like before.”

Liu Tong waved his hand as a light circle once again appeared, before exploding in the air. However, just as those lights were about to fall again, Lin Dong's pupils suddenly shrunk. He abruptly raised his head and looked towards an empty spot in the sky. An extremely strange energy had suddenly exploded at that spot.

“Haha, there is no longer a need for any battles. We have become a little impatient from waiting...”

An unusual black cloud seeped out from the emptiness, covering the sky as it spread. One could vaguely see some human figures within the black cloud.

“Who dares?”

The experts from the eight super sects had a drastic change of expression at this moment. They abruptly stood up from their light chairs. Those expressions of theirs were stern as they

watched the black cloud.

There was also some commotion at the top of the mountain. Most people were shocked when they saw this scene. Clearly, they were uncertain as to just what had happened. However, some of the sharper ones could vaguely sense an ominous feeling.

“This formation...”

Lin Dong’s expression slowly became grave. His eyes narrowed slightly as he watched the omnipresent black cloud in the sky, while he deeply exhaled.

“As expected, those fellows have made their move...”

# Chapter 624: Vying over the Ancient Battlefield

---

The thick black fog emerged in the sky in an extremely strange manner. It spread apart and practically covered the entire place, an extremely shocking sight.

The top of the mountain had become a little chaotic because of this scene, while alarmed and uncertain eyes continued to scan the sky.

Lin Dong's brows were tightly knitted together as he watched the black fog that had spread across the sky. He could sense some extremely terrifying energy ripple from within the black cloud. His eyes gently flashed for a moment, before he swiftly rushed out from his battle stage and landed on the mountaintop below.

When Lin Dong had landed on the mountain top, Little Marten, Little Flame, Su Rou and the rest also hurried over immediately. Even Liu Bai's group also quickly followed. Their faces were a little anxious. Clearly, they were shaken by this strange scene.

"Looks like those fellows have made a move. What should we do?" Little Marten stared at the sky and softly inquired.

Lin Dong nodded, musing for a while before he replied, "We will hold back first. We are currently unable to intervene in a battle of this level. There are still experts from the super sects present in the sky. Moreover, this realm is a territory shared by these super sects of the Eastern Xuan Region. It will not be easy to snatch this

place away. If the disturbance is too great, it will definitely alarm the super sects in the Eastern Xuan Region. At that time, regardless of what the background these fellows have, it will likely be extremely difficult for them to mess around in the Eastern Xuan Region...”

“Is brother Lin Dong acquainted with these people?” Liu Bai and the others felt their hearts tremble upon hearing this. Clearly, they did not expect that there would actually be someone who wanted to snatch this Ancient Battlefield from the mouth of the super sects.

“Yes, I once bumped into them unintentionally, was chased by them, and even exchanged blows with them a couple of times...” Lin Dong nodded slightly. He clearly did not intend to hide anything at this moment. After all, the event had already happened.

These words of Lin Dong might appear casual but they caused Liu Bai’s and Yan Sen’s expression to changed a little. From the way these people dared to provoke the super sects of the Eastern Xuan Region, one could tell that they definitely did not have ordinary backgrounds. Yet, Lin Dong was actually able to exchange blows with these people and live till now. His capability was not just a little shocking...

“Bang bang!”

The black cloud frantically spread out in the sky. A moment later, the sky-encompassing black cloud cracked open, as black light descended and over a dozen figures completely wrapped in

black light slowly took shape in the sky.

With the appearance of these figures, the Yuan Power of the land started to boil. An indescribable and terrifying ripple spread out from their bodies. The powerful pressure directly caused everyone on the mountaintop to feel as though they could not move.

“Such frightening strength!”

When everyone on the mountaintop felt this pressure, shocked expressions instantly surged up their faces. Just the Yuan Power pressure alone was already able to pressure them to such an extent. Just where did these monsters appear from?

“Humph!”

In the sky, the eight super sect experts wore cold and stern expressions. A cold snort was emitted while a similarly incomparably majestic Yuan Power ripple erupted and spread outwards, blocking the Yuan Power pressure from the other party.

“I was wondering who it was. Turns out that it’s you people from the Western Xuan Region. You fellows are really quite bold... not only have you snuck into our Eastern Xuan Region but you actually dare to make a move!” Liu Tong’s stared at the black light human figures and laughed coldly. Evidently, he recognised them.

“Haha, it is actually deacon Liu Tong from Yuan Gate.”

The leader of the black light human figures laughed loudly. The black light above his head scattered, revealing a smiling middle-aged face.

“Zhen Zhong?” Liu Tong frowned upon seeing this person, before he spoke again in an indifferent manner, “Just what do you intend to do by interrupting my Eastern Xuan Region’s Hundred Empire War?”

“Nothing much. Our Western Xuan Region is also quite interested in this Ancient Battlefield. You have occupied it for so many years, so now it should be our Western Xuan Region’s turn...” The middle-aged man known as Zhen Zhong smiled. His voice was just like thunder that rolled and reverberated in the sky, as if it possessed a strange strength that could shake one’s heart.

“As expected, you’ve not given up. This realm has already been placed in our Eastern Xuan Region. With just the few of you, you actually dare to try to snatch it away? Dream on. As long as I transmit this information, all of you can forget about escaping alive!” Liu Tong coldly said.

“Since we have already acted, we will have naturally considered this point. Do you really believe that you can transmit information out of this space now?” A strange smile surfaced on Zhen Zhong’s face as he spoke.

Liu Tong’s eyes immediately became chilly upon hearing this. He flicked his finger and a golden light appeared at his fingertip, before attempting to flee into the void.



“Yuan Spirit transmission huh?” Zheng Zhong laughed strangely upon seeing this. He crossed his arms over his chest and did not show any intention of blocking it.

The golden light rushed out from Liu Tong’s hand. However, before it could enter the void, a large circular black seal suddenly appeared within the void. Black light flickered as the golden light was catapulted back.

Liu Tong and the other experts from the super sects immediately had a change in expression upon seeing this scene. The expert from the Great Desolate Palace immediately threw a fist forward. A terrifying power gathered under his fist, blasting the space until it became distorted. However, numerous black lines once again appeared in a strange manner when the space was distorted. It adhered onto the empty space like a spider web and easily blocked the punch.

“Haha, in order to take this Ancient Battlefield away this time, we have even brought the ‘Heaven Sealing Array’ along with us. Relax, the disturbance in this place will definitely not be detected by your respective sects. Moreover, those old monsters from the Eastern Xuan Region will naturally be delayed by my Western Xuan Region...” Zhen Zhong beamed and said.

“Heaven Sealing Array?” Liu Tong and the old man from the Dao Sect were startled when they heard this. Clearly, they were shaken by this name.

“To think that you have actually brought out even this Pure Yuan treasure. Your Western Xuan Region has really invested heavily this time.” The Dao Sect old man frowned and commented.

“Hee hee, there’s no choice. This Ancient Battlefield is a good place. There are countless number of inheritances within it. Asking us to give it up will not be so easy.” Zhen Zhong laughed.

“As long as we establish an array within this space, the elites from our Western Xuan Region will be able to directly send this realm to our Western Xuan Region.”

“These people here are likely the geniuses that your super sects have selected after much difficulty right? Haha, it’s just as well. We’ll bring all of them back as well. If they are willing to join us, they will be able to enjoy some rather good treatment. Of course, those who disobey will be relegated to be slaves.” The words that Zhen Zong spoke as he smilingly glanced at the crowd on the mountaintop, caused their expressions to change drastically.

“To think that they are actually from the Western Xuan Region...” Liu Bai’s expression was dark and gloomy as he spoke through gritted teeth. Their empires were all located in the Eastern Xuan Region. If they were to be captured and sent to the Western Region, they would lose all their pride.

The faces of the geniuses from the various empires around Liu Bai were extremely ugly, and there was even some panic in their eyes. They were clearly aware of just how miserable their plight would be if they were to be brought to the Western Xuan Region. They would be no different from slaves.

In the sky, the old man from the Dao Sect frowned slightly. However, his face did not lose its color. After looking at Zhen Zhong and the rest, he lowered his eyelids and said, “You have indeed prepared quite well. However, are you so confident of establishing an array right under our eyes?”

“The eight of us should not be people that can be so easily overlooked, no?”

Although these people from the Western Xuan Region appeared menacing, it was evident that the practitioners here had not reached an unstoppable level. It was likely that the other side did not dare to sneak in so many experts. Otherwise, it would be difficult for them to do things this stealthily.

“Haha, who dares to slight the man Wu Dao from Dao Sect?”

Zhen Zhong heartily laughed. His eyes paused on the old man from the Dao Sect. There was fear deep within his eyes. This expression was something he never had even when facing Liu Tong of the Yuan Gate. From the looks of it, Zhen Zhong truly did not dare to underestimate this old man from the Dao Sect.

“It is indeed extremely troublesome to fight with you all. Therefore, we do not plan on doing so. All we need to do is temporarily trap you...” Zhen Zhong waved his hand. The smile on his exceptionally sinister face was just like that of a black-face fox, one that anyone would be irritated at.

“Trapping us? I’m afraid that you people do not possess that ability!” Liu Tong sneered.

“I’m afraid that you will be wrong if you believe that...” A strange expression was revealed on Zhen Zhong’s face. He suddenly waved his hand before forming a series of seals at lightning speed.

“Heaven Sealing Array, Spatial Seal!”

When Zhen Zhong cried out in a low voice, the dozen experts from the Western Xuan Region also laughed in a strange manner, while similarly changing their hand seals.

Boom!

Everyone’s hand seals changed. The sky immediately started to shake as the void split open. Numerous strange black lights rushed out and transformed into an enormous ancient seal. The seal spread out like a prison, instantly sealing the Dao Sect old man and the other seven within it.

“Thump thump thump!”

Numerous shocking ripples erupted the instant the seal was formed. A terrifying attack ruthlessly poured down onto the ancient seal, shaking it till it trembled.

“Humph, although I am unable to kill you, trapping you with the

help of the ‘Heaven Sealing Array’ is no trouble at all!” Zhen Zhong sneered. Soon after, he waved his hand, “Activate the array and strengthen the seal!”

“Yes sir!”

The dozen experts from the Western Xuan Region immediately responded upon hearing the order. Immediately, they used all their might to power the array, firmly trapping the Dao Sect old man and the others.

“Cao Yu, Chang Wei, deploy the formation. We need to trap these fellows and we cannot be distracted for the time being. The matter of the formation will be handed over to your group!” Zhen Zhong suddenly raised his head and cried coldly at the black cloud.

“Kill anyone who dares to stop you!” Zhen Zhong’s sinister gaze turned towards Lin Dong and the rest on the mountaintop when he uttered these words.

“Understood!”

A response was emitted from the black cloud. A shocking Yuan Power fluctuation accompanied dozens of figures as they swiftly flew out from the black cloud.

Lin Dong’s gazed at the dozen shockingly powerful figures. His eyes focused on a familiar figure in front. It was the Death Spirit General whom they had exchanged blows with not long ago!

At this moment, all the competitors on the mountaintop had extremely grim expressions. This situation was truly not encouraging at all.

# Chapter 625: Cao Yu

---

Dozens of figures rushed out from the black cloud in the sky, before slowly coming to a halt some distance away from the Hundred Empire mountaintop. Their eyes contained a playful glint as they stared at the crowd atop the mountain.

“There doesn’t seem to be anything special about these geniuses from the Eastern Xuan Region...” A somewhat feminine looking young man at the front smilingly gazed at the mountaintop before curling his mouth and remarking.

“Haha, once we have moved this realm to the Western Xuan Region, all of these so called geniuses will likely end up as prisoners...” Behind the feminine looking young man, another man laughed heartily.

“Haha.”

A wave of laughter immediately erupted in the sky when the others heard this. It was as though they were completely looking down on these so called geniuses.

Fury surfaced in the eyes of everyone on the mountain top when they heard their mocking laughter. All of those present were prideful individuals. Hence, how could they endure being mocked so openly.

Although they were raging in their hearts, none of them dared to speak up impulsively at this moment. The current situation was

such that even those experts from the super sects were trapped. Could it be that they were the ones who had to act in this situation?

Some turned to each other, before their gazes immediately turned away. Most of their gazes were thrown towards Qin Tian, who was at the center. At the end of the day, Tianyuan Empire was the strongest empire within the Eastern Xuan Region. Moreover, they had the backing of the Yuan Gate. At this time, it seemed only natural that everyone placed their hopes on him.

As the focal point of so many gazes, a very tiny smile formed at the corners of Qin Tian's mouth, while his spine unknowingly straightened. He glanced at Lin Dong's direction from the corner of his eyes. It appeared as though he was very pleased to be the center of attention.

Qin Tian's action might be extremely minute but it did not escape Lin Dong's eyes, to which he could not resist but smile a little. This fellow was actually able to think about such nonsense at this time...

The people before them were no ordinary foes.

"Everyone, it is not wise to act so arrogantly in our Eastern Xuan Region, no?" Under the gazes of the crowd, the now straight backed Qin Tian looked towards the dozen powerful figures in the sky and spoke with a mighty voice.

"Who do you think you are?" The feminine looking man stared at



Qin Tian with a half smile and replied in an indifferent manner.

“I am Qin Tian from the Tianyuan Empire, a disciple of the Yuan Gate!” Qin Tian’s eyes were furious as he coldly said.

“Qin Tian? I have never heard of such a person amongst the younger generation of the Yuan Gate.” The feminine man ridiculed.

“Haha, big brother Chang Wei, this fellow has clearly yet to enter the Yuan Gate. How could you possibly have heard of him?” A loud laughter sounded out behind the feminine man.

“So he is merely a phony showoff.” The feminine man known as Chang Wei softly chuckled, completely ignoring the now green-faced Qin Tian.

“Alright Chang Wei, there is no need for any more unnecessary words.” A man in dark red robes right at very front finally waved his hand, silencing the mocking laughter behind him.

“Yes big brother Cao.”

This man clearly possessed a rather high position. Hence, even Chang Wei smiled and nodded after the former spoke, ceasing his mockery.

The man in dark red robes slowly lowered his head after putting a stop to the group’s mockery. His eyes were cold and indifferent

as he looked towards the crowd. A faintly discernible and strong Yuan Power vaguely spreading from his body, causing everyone's heart to suddenly tightened. This ripple was even a little stronger than Qin Tian's...

“Who is Lin Dong?” The dark red robe man's eyes swept over the crowd. His eyes merely paused on Qin Tian for a moment before demanding in a faint voice.

Everyone was startled when they heard these words. Immediately, their eyes shifted towards a tall and thin figure to the back. Clearly, they did not expect his name to be called.

Lin Dong also frowned slightly at this moment. He stared at the man and spoke in a calm tone, “Yes?”

“You should remember him?” The man in dark red robes waved his hand. After which, a person from behind him stepped forward. He venomously stared at Lin Dong. From the looks of it, it was the Death Spirit General who had fled after being seriously injured by Lin Dong.

“Hee hee, Lin Dong, do you still remember the words I said back then? I said that you will regret it!” The Death Spirit General stared at Lin Dong and laughed in a malicious manner.

“Alive as expected, what an unpleasant fellow...” Lin Dong glanced at the Death Spirit General and indifferently smiled.

“Keep acting tough. Once this realm is transferred to the Western Xuan Region, I will let you experience a fate worse than death!” The Death Spirit General wore a ferocious expression as he retorted.

“Why? Lin Dong, do you know them?” Qin Tian suddenly opened his mouth and spoke when he saw this scene. Clearly, he did not wish for the limelight to be snatched away by Lin Dong.

“I have met these people some time ago and exchanged blows with them...” Lin Dong casually replied.

“You are aware that they are after this realm? Why didn’t you report this sooner?” Qin Tian frowned, a slightly interrogative tone in his voice.

Lin Dong’s eyes narrowed slightly upon hearing this, feeling a little wronged. However, his tone did not fluctuate much when he replied, “If you randomly met someone on the way who tells you that they intend to snatch this realm from the hands of the Eastern Xuan Region’s super sects, would you believe him?”

Qin Tian was stunned. He had been rendered completely speechless.

“Qin Tian, now is not the time to talk about this. We must stop them from establishing the formation. Otherwise, once they transfer this realm to the Western Xuan Region, we will end up deep within the wolves’ lair.” Lan Ying suddenly said from the side.

Qin Tian turned his head after hearing Lan Ying's words, looking towards the man in dark red robes as he said, "There is no need to be overly worried. After all, there are quite a number of us. Their seal is unable to trap sir Liu Tong and the rest for long. Leave this person to me."

Qin Tian stepped forward while he uttered these words. Immediately, a powerful Yuan Power ripple swept outwards. That degree of strength caused the expressions of quite a number of people to change.

"Six Yuan Nirvana stage?!"

"He is indeed worthy of being someone from the Tianyuan Empire, to think that he has actually broken through to the six Yuan Nirvana stage." Shocked expressions were revealed in the eyes of the many experts from the various empires on the mountaintop upon witnessing this scene, while also causing them to rejoice a little. Right now, the stronger Qin Tian was, the more reassured they felt.

"As expected, six Yuan Nirvana stage..." Lin Dong's eyebrows raised a little. This Qin Tian did indeed possess some actual ability. Six Yuan Nirvana stage. If nothing went wrong, the Hundred Empire War champion title would likely fall into his hands.

However, Lin Dong was naturally happy to have Qin Tian fight on their behalf at such a time. He immediately withdrew and stood beside Little Marten.

“This fellow is no match for that person. Moreover, he would likely lose rather miserably...” Little Marten lazily said.

“Oh?” Lin Dong was startled. He took a second look at the dark red robe man in the sky. This person did indeed seem to be a little stronger than Qin Tian. However, a miserable defeat would be unlikely right?

Little Marten’s face had a playful smile hanging on it. Without explaining, he folded his arms across his chest as he observed the battleground.

“Six Yuan Nirvana stage is quite decent...” The dark red robe man in the sky was also a little surprised as he stared at Qin Tian. Soon after, he shook his head slightly and softly said, “There are indeed quite a number of you but all of you are merely weaklings. Although those on our side are not the strongest due to the limitations of our scheme, it is more than enough to deal with all of you.”

“Set up the formation.”

Without any more unnecessary words, he waved his hand and spoke in a faint voice.

“Understood!”

The dozen figures behind him immediately cried out in unison

upon hearing his voice. They swung their hands as clusters of black light balls appeared. Soon after, numerous black light lines suddenly rushed out. These light lines directly penetrated through the emptiness, as if they penetrated through this space...

“Qin Tian, stop them. Whoever destroys the formation will be the champion of this Hundred Empire War!”

Liu Tong’s furious roar was suddenly heard from the prison formed by the black seal when those black light lines penetrated through space.

“Humph, I’m afraid that you have found the wrong opponent if you wish to behave so atrociously in our Eastern Xuan Region!”

Qin Tian’s eyes also became cold upon hearing Liu Tong’s cry. Majestic Yuan Power swept out, directly transforming into a light figure that rushed towards the dark red robe man at lightning speed.

“Attack!”

Behind Qin Tian, the experts who had stepped into the Nirvana Golden Ranking also revealed stern expression as they closely followed.

“Things that do not know your limits...”

The dark red robe man watched Qin Tian rush over with

indifferent eyes. He slowly extended his hand and clenched it gently.

Bang!

After the hand fell, the space in front of him suddenly became distorted. An unusual black light directly shot out from the empty space, smashing into Qin Tian at lightning speed.

Urgh!

The black light struck Qin Tian as golden light wildly flickered on his body. The next instant, the golden light dimmed as a mouthful of fresh blood was spat out and his body flew backwards in a miserable manner. Finally, he landed violently onto the ground.

The Nirvana Golden Ranking experts who were just about to charge forward were halted almost instantly. Every single one of them had shocked expressions on their faces. Clearly, they did not expect that even Qin Tian, who had stepped into the six Yuan Nirvana stage, would be defeated in a single move.

Lin Dong's eyes slowly became grave at this moment. This fellow was really powerful.

The dark red robed man looked down upon everyone from the sky. His tone was indifferent, while ridiculing expression flashed across his mouth.

“Do you still wish to fight?”



# Chapter 626: Intervening

---

The man stood arrogantly in the sky with one hand behind his back, while he looked down upon everyone on the mountaintop. On his face, hung a smile that seemed to be a smile yet was not.

The entire mountaintop was rather quiet. Everyone's expressions were quite grim. Some tightly clenched their fist, wanting to cry out furiously. However, a basin of cold water seemed to have been poured on their heads when they saw the sorry state of Qin Tian as he lay on the ground. Even Qin Tian, who had stepped into the six Yuan Nirvana stage, had been so miserably defeated. It would likely be completely pointless even if they stepped forward.

Lan Ying and the other Nirvana Golden Ranking experts wore gloomy and fluctuating expressions. They had clearly been shaken by that man's previous attack.

"How is he this powerful?" Lin Dong could not help but frown while he stared at this scene before softly asking.

"It is because of that 'Heaven Sealing Array'." Little Marten replied faintly.

"It should be a Pure Yuan treasure and this person can clearly utilize some of the array's power. Although this tiny bit of power is practically a fraction of the array's power, it is not surprising for him to defeat Qin Tian in a single strike if we factor in his actual strength."

“Pure Yuan treasure?” Lin Dong’s eyebrows slightly knitted together.

“A treasure that is even stronger than a Heavenly Soul Treasure. That kind of thing is quite rare even within the super sects...” Little Marten explained.

“A Pure Yuan Treasure is extremely powerful. Moreover, the strength that it possessed far exceeds your imagination. This “Heavenly Sealing Array” should be a type of high grade Pure Yuan Array. Otherwise, it would be unable to lock this entire space.”

“Powerful.” Lin Dong quietly clicked his tongue. Using one treasure to seal an entire space. Just what kind of ability was that? Compared with the so called Pure Yuan Treasure, the Black Dragon Sky Roaring Seal in his hand really felt a little weak and insignificant.

“In that case is the mysterious Stone Talisman also considered a Pure Yuan Treasure?” Lin Dong mused for a moment before he suddenly asked curiously.

“Tch, this thing is something that I am unable to fully grasp even after so many years. How could a Pure Yuan Treasure compared with its level of secrecy?” Little Marten curled his mouth and appeared to feel quite disdainful.

“So even you did not completely figure out the properties of the mysterious stone talisman...” Lin Dong rolled his eyes at Little Marten and said.

Little Marten was immediately stunned upon hearing this. It seemed that his pride took a hit. He wanted to refute it but discovered that he seemed to be really uncertain about just what use this mysterious stone talisman did. Hence, he could only rub his nose bitterly.

“This situation does not appear to be too good...” Little Marten changed the topic as he looked at the sky and said.

Lin Dong sighed softly and nodded. Clearly, he did not expect that this Hundred Empire War would actually end up turning into this state. His father, grandfather and the others were awaiting for him to deliver the good news back. If they end up hearing that he was being captured by the Western Xuan Region, it was likely that they would not be able to take it...

“Let’s observe the situation...”

That man called Cao Yu in the sky looked at this silence on the mountaintop and smiled faintly. With a wave of his hand, the black light balls in the hands of the many figures behind him emitted even more rays of light. These light rays penetrated through the space and vaguely appeared to have formed an enormous black light formation in the sky above.

“We cannot allow them to complete the formation!”

Watching the formation that was gradually being formed in the sky, Lan Ying, Qing Feng and the others also had increasingly ugly

faces. They were aware that once the formation was completed, this realm would be transferred to the Western Xuan Region. Their situation would really become extremely miserable then.

After all, the relationship between the Western Xuan Region and the Eastern Xuan Region was quite hostile.

“Let’s fight. I do not wish to head to that terrible Western Xuan Region.”

A man with a black heavy sword on his back spoke with a gloomy expression. He was someone from the Sword Empire and possessed quite a great strength.

“With the strength of Cao Yu... who can fight with him?” Lan Ying clenched her hand tightly. If they failed to stop Cao Yu, it was likely that they would be unable to stop the other party from establishing the formation. However, even if the experts from the Nirvana Golden Ranking swarmed towards Cao Yu, it was likely that the rest would have difficulty interrupting the other party.

The genius experts from the other ten super empires had sunken expressions upon hearing Lan Ying’s words. Even Qin Tian, who had stepped into the six Yuan Nirvana Stage, was defeated by Qin Tian with one strike. Who amongst them dared to fight with this Cao Ying in a one on one battle?

“I will do it. The rest of you should lead the others and disrupt the formation!” The man carrying a heavy sword clenched his teeth violently and stepped out. He beckoned with his hand and

the heavy sword on his back flew out immediately. A sharp sword glow erupted.

“Chen Nan, you!” Lan Ying and the others were startled upon seeing this scene. Before their words sounded, however, that man had already rushed out explosively. The sword and his body became one as they transformed into a bright glow that tore through the distant sky and pierced towards Cao Yu in a lightning like manner.

“Stubborn fool.”

Cao Yu’s expression was indifferent as he watched the figure that had rushed over after transforming into a sharp sword. A cold snort sounded and a large hand was immediately extended.

Bang!

After his hand was extended, the space in front had once again erupted into a monstrous black light. Immediately, it transformed into a black light large hand that violently slammed onto the sword glow.

Bang!

The sharp sword glow basically collapsed almost instantly under that black light large hand. That figure within it also spat out a mouthful of fresh blood and shot backwards miserably.

This expert from the Sword Empire had clearly been defeated by this Cao Yu with just one strike.

“Chen Nan!”

Lan Ying and the others hurriedly rushed to Chen Nan’s side. He looked at that miserable manner of the latter and a fury surged within his eyes. He was clearly extremely agitated.

“Cough, this fellow is really strong.” Chen Nan spat out a mouthful of fresh blood as he spoke with an unwilling hoarse voice.

“Damnit, we’ll all fight!” An expert cried out furiously. Everyone around had faces that were filled with fury. They were unable to swallow the anger of having been stepped on the head by these fellows from the Western Xuan Region.

“Compared to being captured to the Western Xuan Region, we might as well fight to the death with them here.” Another expert also clenched his teeth and said.

“That’s right, we’ll battle it out with them!”

“.....”

Lan Ying also bit her red lips with the back of her teeth when she heard the various furious cries that sounded from all around. Her pretty face became slightly icy cold as he stood up. “Qing Feng, Ma

Lin, Mu Se, we'll attack together and hold back Cao Yu. The others should all attack and destroy the formation!"

"Understood!"

That Nirvana Golden Ranking expert beside Lan Ying, whose name was called, also nodded heavily. Killing intent surged within his eyes.

"Gi!"

Lan Ying also did things in a decisive fashion. Moreover, she was aware that they could not afford to delay any longer. Immediately, her body moved and she rushed out. However, a hand was suddenly extended from behind her just as she was about to step forward. After which, it was pressed onto her soft shoulder.

"All of you are no match for him. Don't go..."

Lan Ling turned her head and looked at Lin Dong with a helpless face. The back of her teeth bit her red lips and she coldly laughed, "I thought you you will continue to hide behind me."

From the looks of this, she was clearly brooding over the fact that Lin Dong only chose to step up at this moment.

"I am not a heavyweight character unlike you super empire members. Why are you placing so much hope on me?"

Lin Dong smiled faintly but was unconcerned. He merely raised his head and stared at Cao Yu. After a short silence, he sighed, "Forget it. Leave him to me."

"You?" Cao Ying and the others were startled upon hearing this. Although their hearts were gripped when watching Lin Dong and Lin Langtian exchange blows, Cao Yu was someone who could even defeat Qin Tian with just one strike.

"Why? You don't allow me to hide for a little. Are you also not allowing me to fight now that I want to?" Lin Dong stared intently at Lan Ying and involuntarily spoke in a helpless manner.

Lan Ying's pretty face immediately became red upon hearing this. She lost the sharp wit that she had from before. Instead, she spoke hesitantly, "That fellow is very strong..."

"There's no choice. I, too, do not wish to head to that whatever Western Xuan Region..." He shrugged his shoulders in a somewhat free and easy manner and laughed, "Moreover, regardless of how strong he is, we must at least give it a try, right?"

Lin Dong ceased saying anything upon saying these words. He slowly stepped forward. However, he did not even take two steps forward when he saw Little Marten appearing in front of him in a ghost like manner.

"Leave it to me." Little Marten stared at Lin Dong and said. He clearly understood Lin Dong. Although the latter was quite



powerful, it would be a little difficult for him to defeat Cao Yu.

“There is the presence of Yuan Gate here. Those fellows do not appear to be magnanimous. You cannot reveal your identity.” Lin Dong shook his head slightly and used a soft voice that only Little Marten could hear.

“You are no match for him.” Little Marten frowned and replied.

A strange smile surfaced on Lin Dong’s face when he heard this. He gently patted Little Marten’s shoulder and softly said, “That may not be certain...”

“Don’t you want to know why I have been suppressing my Mental Power? Next, I will show you why...”

Little Marten’s eyes slowly narrowed as Lin Dong rushed by him. Could this fellow really do it?

# Chapter 627: Revealing All Trump Cards

---

On the mountaintop, numerous gazes were focused on the young man who was slowly stepping forward. Their gazes contained a rather peculiar expression. Lin Dong had already proven his extraordinary strength time and time again in the earlier battles. Although he only appeared to be at the four Yuan Nirvana stage on the surface, everyone clearly understood that his battle capabilities exceeded that level.

From the way they saw it, Lin Dong already possessed the qualifications to be compared with Qin Tian.

However, in this current situation, even Qin Tian had been utterly defeated. Could Lin Dong really turn the tides?

“Lin Dong?”

From the skies above, Cao Yu lowered his head and stared at Lin Dong. The corners of his mouth lifted to form a strange arc as he softly laughed, “I have watched your earlier battle. You’re not bad but you are still not my match. I would advise against trying to show off.”

Lin Dong smiled and replied, “Who knows unless I give it a try? Don’t you agree?”

“I’m afraid that you will not even be able to preserve that pathetic life of yours if you try.” Cao Yu laughed.

“Big brother Cao, why are you wasting your breath on this brat. A mere four Yuan Nirvana stage actually dares to act mighty. Why not leave him to me?” The feminine man beside Cao Yu looked at Lin Dong in a strange manner as he released a queer laughter.

“I will handle it.” Cao Yu waved his hand. His eyes paused on Lin Dong as he spoke, “This person is not as simple as he appears. Underestimating him would cause you dearly...”

“Oh?” The man known as Chang Wei raised his eyebrows. He was clearly unagreeable with these words. Though he was not one of the top practitioners within the younger generation of the Western Xuan Region, Lin Dong and the others had yet to even enter the super sects, while he on the other hand had already trained in the super sect for two years.

“Pay attention to the others while establishing the formation.”

Cao Yu faintly commanded before slowly stepping forward. He extended his hand towards Lin Dong, curling it slightly as he laughed, “Do it. Allow me to see just how many rounds you can last against me.”

“I will leave the matter of disrupting the formation to you guys.” Lin Dong turned around and spoke to Lan Ying and the rest.

“Be careful.”

Lan Ying spoke with worry. If Lin Dong was also finished off by Cao Yu, it would be far too great a blow on their morale.

Lin Dong smiled a little and nodded. Soon after, he exhaled deeply. A sharp glint gradually surged deep within his eyes. Imitating Cao Yu, he also curled his hand. “Go ahead. Allow me to have a taste of just how powerful you experts from the Western Xuan Region are.”

Cao Yu was clearly a little irritated by Lin Dong’s stance. His eyes immediately narrowed as a cold glint flashed past them.

“Truly an arrogant fool...”

Cao Yu inwardly sneered. Without further ado, he extended his hand as his finger pressed onto the empty space.

Bang!

This seemingly casual action caused the Yuan Power of the land to boil in an instant. The empty space once again became distorted as a monstrous black light surged out. It directly transformed into a ray of black light that possessed an incomparably sharp aura as it tore through the sky and shot towards Lin Dong in a fashion that could not be dodged.

Lan Ying and the others were alarmed when they saw Cao Yu’s ferocious attack. From the looks of it, Cao Yu had no intentions of allowing Lin Dong to last for even a single round.

An attack at this speed was impossible to dodge!

It was just as Lan Ying and the others had expected. Faced with this space tearing black ray of light, Lin Dong did not plan to dodge at all.

Swoosh!

The black ray of light that contained a shocking lethal force had arrived in front of Lin Dong in the next moment. The hearts of the Lan Ying group sunk immediately when they saw this scene.

Bang!

A low and deep sound suddenly echoed out, as Lan Ying and the rest's expressions dimmed. Was it over...

"Fool who seeks death." Chang Wei and the others involuntarily laughed out loud and spoke in a strange voice upon seeing this scene.

"He is not dead." Cao Yu's eyebrows slowly knitted together. His soft voice contained a trace of surprise.

"What?" The heartily laughing Chang Wei and gang were immediately stunned when they heard Cao Yu's words, while astonishment covered their faces. They clearly understood just

how terrifying the ‘Heaven Sealing Array’ was when activated by Cao Yu. How could Lin Dong possibly withstand such power?

Cao Yu ignored them. His eyes were tightly fixed onto the spot where the black light was gradually scattering. An exceptionally sturdy figure was faintly visible there.

“Huh? That’s not right...” Chang Wei’s and Lan Ying’s group were stunned when they saw the exceptionally sturdy figure.

The black light finally completely dispersed as the strong figure finally appeared in everyone’s sights. Its body was bright red. At a glance, it was as though it had been constructed from red copper. That face was also not that of Lin Dong. Instead, an unfamiliar face flickered with a red glow...

“This is... a Blood Soul Puppet?”

Cao Yu’s pupils slightly shrunk as he stared at the bright red body. A faint yet baleful aura spread out from the body. He slowly opened his mouth, surprised that Lin Dong not only possessed a soul puppet, but it was even the strongest Blood Soul Puppet. Most importantly, the level of this Blood Soul Puppet was quite high. It had likely reached the grade five level or higher.

Cluck.

A human figure slowly walked out from behind that sturdy Soul Puppet. He raised his head and smiled at Cao Yu, “Your eyesight is

quite good.”

This Soul Puppet was naturally the Blood Soul Puppet in Lin Dong’s hands. Ever since he had auctioned for that Desolate Heavenly Cow skeleton in the Wanxiang City, Little Marten had used this set of bones to strengthen the Blood Soul Puppet. Combined with Lin Dong’s enormous stash of Nirvana pills, the current Blood Soul Puppet was many times stronger than before.

Based on Lin Dong’s guess, the current Blood Soul Puppet should have reached the grade five Soul Puppet level. Its defensive strength had become a little terrifying due to the addition of the Desolate Heavenly Cow to refine it. Cao Yu’s ferocious attack was able to seriously injure a five Yuan Nirvana stage expert. However, it merely left a shallow mark on the Blood Soul Puppet’s body.

“Lin Dong!”

Joy surfaced in the Lan Ying and the rest’s eyes when they saw that Lin Dong was fine. Clearly, they never imagined that Lin Dong would actually use the Soul Puppet to block Cao Yu’s attack.

“A strong Blood Soul Puppet. However, I wonder how many of my attacks it can withstand?” Cao Yu smiled in an indifferent manner.

“Won’t you know once you try?”

Lin Dong grinned. Immediately, a sharpness flashed in his eyes.

His foot stomped onto the ground as his body rushed out. His hand clenched around the Heavenly Crocodile Bone Spear that appeared. With a jerk, the spear transformed into numerous sharp spear glows that filled the sky, enveloping Cao Yu.

Some faint green light also quietly flowed while the spear glows gathered.

Swoosh!

Cao Yu's eyes hardened a little when he saw Lin Dong attacking. He struck his palm forward as black light immediately gathered in the sky. Space wiggled as the black light transformed into an enormous hand that violently slapped at Lin Dong.

Bang!

However, just as the black light giant hand was about to strike Lin Dong, a crimson glow suddenly arrived. With a punch, it collided head on with the giant black light hand.

Swoosh Swoosh!

A shocking ripple erupted above the Lin Dong's head. However, the latter completely ignored it. His body moved and appeared in front of Cao Yu. Sharp spear glows were aimed at all the Cao Yu's vital points.

Humph!



Upon seeing Lin Dong's crafty usage of the Blood Soul Puppet to block the attack, while he unleashed an attack of his own, Cao Yu involuntarily let out a cold snort. Bright golden light surged out immediately, directly transforming into a golden shield with golden light seemingly flowing on it.

Clang clang clang!

Sharp spear glows viciously struck the golden shield. However, it merely caused some sparks to appear, and was clearly unable to break the latter's defence.

"Is this all you've got?" Cao Ying sneered. However, his sneer had only just formed when his eyes suddenly hardened. He had realized that the spear glows did not immediately disappeared after being blasted apart. Instead, numerous green lights rushed out from within them. These green light seemed to be green scales.

The scales flashed as a faint but extremely sharp ripple spread out from them.

Chi chi chi chi!

The green scales were like rain. They arrived quickly and ruthlessly struck the gold shield. This time around, there were no sparks. The green scales pierced through the incomparably hard golden shield, before zipping towards Cao Yu's vital spots at an astonishing speed.

“This is the real attack huh...”

This sudden scene also caused Cao Yu to be startled. Lin Dong’s earlier attack was merely a ruse. The true attack was these scales hidden within the spear glows.

“There is some ingenuity but it is useless against me!”

Cao Yu’s eyes turned cold. His body shook slightly as the surrounding space became distorted. Black light spread out from these distorted areas, forming a light circle that covered his body.

Clang clang!

The incomparably sharp green scales ruthlessly struck the light barrier. However, they appeared to be just like stones sinking into the ocean. They did not cause any damage as they completely disappeared.

“Lin Dong, this realm has already been covered by the ‘Heaven Sealing Array’. I can borrow some of its strength. Forget about you. Even if all of you were to attack, you will not be able to do anything to me!” Cao Yu stood within the light circle as he sneered.

Swoosh!

However, Lin Dong completely ignored the Cao Yu. He pressed down with the tips of his feet as his body shot into the sky. He seated himself cross-legged in the sky amidst numerous stunned eyes, while wave after wave of powerful Mental Energy suddenly swept out from his Niwan Palace.

Mental Power was just like a storm that was unfurling. Moreover, it spread at a terrifying speed. It was as though a volcano that had been suppressed for countless number of years had finally erupted...

Rumble!

Dark clouds suddenly gathered in the sky while Lin Dong's Mental Energy wildly erupted and mad wind raged all around...

This scene stunned everyone. A moment later, they inhaled violently.

Is that the Wind Lightning Trial?

What is that fellow planning?

# Chapter 628: Stacking

---

Boom!

Majestic Mental Energy swept out in the sky like a hurricane. Immediately, violent gusts of wind howled over the land unceasingly, creating a dreadful sight.

As Mental Energy continued to surge, storm clouds frantically began to gather in the sky. Meanwhile, lightning swam through the storm clouds like a snake as thunder rumbled violently across the area.

Everyone watched this scene in shock. Of course, they were not shocked by the Wind Lightning Trial. After all, everyone here was fairly skilled and there were even some of them who specialized in Mental Energy and could not be more familiar with the Wind Lightning Trial. As such, instead of being shocked by the Wind Lightning Trial, they were shocked by Lin Dong's actions.

The Wind Lightning Trial and Nirvana Tribulation together. Even a Symbol Master would search for a peaceful place to undergo a trial. However, Lin Dong had chosen to activate the trial while he was facing a terrifying opponent like Cao Yu.

This move truly befuddled everyone here.

“Is that fellow planning to use the same trick again?” Lan Ying and the rest were startled, before anxiety rapidly emerged in their eyes. Cao Yu was not Song Zhen. Furthermore, Lin Dong was only

able to pull it off previously because he used it in an unconventional manner. At that time, no one had realised that he was secretly undergoing a Nirvana Tribulation. However, the current situation was different. Not only was Cao Yu far stronger than Song Zhen, the Wind Lightning Trial also caused a huge disturbance. Therefore, any fool would know what he was up to. Did he really think Cao Yu was dumb enough to forsake such an opportunity?

Beside them, Liu Bai, Mo Ling, Su Kui and the rest exchanged looks with each other when they saw Lin Dong's actions. There were traces of worry in their eyes.

“Big brother Lin Diao, isn't this too risky?” Su Rou's tiny face was filled with worry. After hesitating for a moment, she was finally unable to resist any further as she turned around and asked Little Marten.

Little Marten narrowed his eyes as he stared right at Lin Dong's seated figure. He could not fathom the meaning behind Lin Dong's actions as well. Summoning the Wind Lightning Trial a truly suicidal move.

“He is not an idiot. He must have his reasons for doing so. Let's continue to observe. There is no point in speculating at this point.”

Little Marten could only say these words at this point in time.

When they heard his words, Liu Bai and the rest laughed bitterly before they lowered their heads and sighed. Regardless, it was too

late for them to worry. All they could do now was to believe in Lin Dong.

“Hehe, a truly bold kid. He actually dares to summon the Wind Lightning Trial at such a time...” In the sky, the elite practitioners from the West Xuan Region stared peculiarly at Lin Dong as they commented.

“Big brother Cao, looks like he is deliberately provoking you...” Chang Wei released a weird laugh. Suddenly summoning the Wind Lightning Trial during a fight with Cao Yu. If this was not considered as a form of provocation, what else could it be?

Cao Yu’s face was calm while his gaze was fixed onto Lin Dong. Even though he was slightly perplexed by the latter’s actions, he did not plan to stop. Instead, he slowly lifted his palm before he calmly said, “I do not know what you plan on doing. However, since you want to die, don’t blame me...”

“Boom!”

As Cao Yu suddenly closed his palm, a terrifying shockwave suddenly erupted from within it. The surrounding space distorted, before a black glow gushed out, transforming into a nearly ten feet long black spear. Meanwhile, a peculiar symbol faintly hovered on the tip of the black spear.

“Swoosh!”

Cao Yu did not hesitate at all. His eyes turned cold as the black spear instantly shot forward. Tearing through the air, it carried a terrifying shock wave that was powerful enough to destroy a Five Yuan Nirvana stage expert as it shot towards Lin Dong like lightning.

As they watched Cao Yu's killing move, everyone's hearts rose.

The black spear was extremely swift and it appeared before Lin Dong in a flash. However, just as that black spear was about to release its destructive power, a blood red figure appeared like a phantom and suddenly jabbed out with its copper red fist. It was the Blood Soul Puppet.

Boom!

An astonishing force unfurled in midair. Even though the Blood Soul Puppet was able to block the black spear, its body was also thrown backwards. In fact, one could even see a deep scar on its copper red fist. Evidently, even with its powerful defences, the Blood Soul Puppet was still wounded by Cao Yu's attack. Fortunately, the Blood Soul Puppet was unable to feel anything. Therefore, it would battle until it was completely destroyed.

Lin Dong calmly observed this. However, his eyes remained as still as a unmoving water. In fact, he did not even show any indications of getting up. Instead, he cupped his hands together and his hand seals changed.

Boom!

As his hand seals changed, his majestic Mental Energy surged once again. At the same time, the thunderous roars caused by the storm clouds grew increasingly terrifying.

“The Wind Lightning Trial has become stronger!”

The sudden change in the Wind Lightning Trial was immediately detected by the crowd. Immediately, all of them exclaimed in shock while the doubt in their eyes grew. Evidently, they did not understand why Lin Dong had chosen to release more Mental Energy to stimulate the Wind Lightning Trial, instead of trying to restrain its power.

“The strength of this Wind Lightning Trial has already surpassed the second stage...” There were some experts here who specialized in Mental Energy. When they saw the undulations from the storm clouds, they were able to sense which stage the trial belonged to.

“Humph!”

A vicious expression faintly flashed across Cao Yu’s face. It was clear that he was secretly worried about Lin Dong’s peculiar actions deep within his heart. Immediately, he ferociously took a step forward and flicked all ten of his fingers. The black glow in the horizon trembled, seemingly filling the sky as it formed into countless black light pillars which rained down onto Lin Dong.

As the light pillars swept forth, the Blood Soul Puppet’s sturdy figure once again appeared in front of Lin Dong. A resplendent



blood red glow erupted from within its body as it protected Lin Dong like a glowing shield.

“Watch me smash your Blood Soul Puppet to pieces!”

Cao Yu was similarly frustrated by the Blood Soul Puppet. Immediately, a cold glint flashed across his eyes as the black light pillars instantly howled forth and rammed into the Blood Soul Puppet.

Thump thump thump!

A terrifying shockwave immediately erupted on the Blood Soul Puppet’s body, while waves of berserk energy frantically unfurled.

As the black light swiftly disappeared, the Blood Soul Puppet’s body appeared once again. However, this time around, there were several startling wounds on its body. Several cracks began to spread across its body, while its blood red glow had significantly dimmed. Evidently, even with its powerful defences, it was no longer able to remain completely unharmed after taking so many attacks from Cao Yu head on.

“At this rate, Lin Dong’s Blood Soul Puppet will not last for long...”

Lan Ying and the rest wore grim expressions as they gazed upon the state of Lin Dong’s Blood Soul Puppet, while their fists involuntarily tightened. Judging from the current situation, it

seemed like Lin Dong wanted to use his Blood Soul Puppet to buy him some time. Could the Blood Soul Puppet really buy him enough time to undergo the Wind Lightning Trial?

Rumble!

While Lan Ying and the rest were anxiously worrying in their hearts, the storm clouds in the sky started to churn even more violently. Meanwhile, the shockwaves contained within grew increasingly terrifying.

“The Wind Lightning Trials are stacking?!”

While the commotion within the storm clouds grew increasingly terrifying, a shocked cry suddenly erupted on the mountaintop. An expert who specialized in Mental Energy cultivation stared in shock at the sky. His expression was as though he had seen a ghost.

“Stacking the Wind Lightning Trials?” When they heard his words, Lan Ying and the rest’s hearts skipped a beat. What did he mean? Could it be that Lin Dong did not only summon one Wind Lightning Trial? Was he instead stacking them together?

When their thoughts reached such a point, their expressions turned extremely interesting. Stacking them together was not as simple as adding them together!

“The Wind Lightning Trial has reached the third stage. He plans to undergo both the second and third stage together!” On top of the

mountain, another person shrieked.

“That’s not right, the Wind Lightning Trial is still becoming stronger!”

“My god, this lunatic. Does he plan to stack three trials together? Not even a six seal Symbol Master can handle that!”

A series of shocked exclamations continuously sounded out on the mountain top. Furthermore, each time a voice sounded out, Lan Ying and the rest’s heart would violently twitch.

Stacking three trials together? Such a power could probably squash a six Yuan Nirvana stage expert to pulp? What was Lin Dong planning to do?

Rumble!

In the sky, the storm clouds manically churned. Meanwhile, the lightning snake coursing through the clouds grew from its initial thickness of an arm to its current several feet long width. From a distance away, it looked as if a mini lightning dragon was flying within the clouds.

Little Marten lifted his head, a strange look in his eyes as he stared at this sight. Following which, he turned to look at Lin Dong, who was seated below the storm clouds as a flash of inspiration flashed across his eyes.

“Is he planning to borrow the strength of the Wind Lightning Trial? What a lunatic...”

# Chapter 629: Stacking Three Trials

---

Rumble!

Thunder boomed across the sky in an astonishing manner as the storm clouds closed in. The thunderbolts flashing within the clouds made it look as though apocalypse was approaching.

The storm clouds had spread till they covered a hundred feet radius, while a berserk power seemed to simmer within it. Even the powerful five Yuan Nirvana stage individuals, were now deathly pale. They could sense a true power of destruction from within the clouds. All of them clearly understood that any defence of theirs would be futile in the face of these storm clouds.

Stacking trials!

Everyone had now figured out Lin Dong's intentions. He was actually planning on enduring three Wind Lightning Trials at the same time!

Lunatic!

Everyone spat out this word in their hearts in response to Lin Dong's crazy move. They knew that no one with any semblance of normality would dare to perform such a feat. Of course, an ordinary person would not even have the chance to perform such an act.

The amount of Mental Energy required to summon three Wind Lightning Trials simultaneously was frightening. What this meant was that the Mental Energy of the individual summoning the trials must be continuously and firmly suppressed. Moreover, no Mental Energy can leak out mid-way. This must continue until it was sufficient to summon three Wind Lightning Trials, before allowing everything to completely erupt...

If Lin Dong was able to endure these three stacked Wind Lightning Trials, Lin Dong's Mental Energy would rapidly soar until it reached the four seal Heaven Symbol Master level.

Of course, if he failed, he would immediately be blasted by this incomparably violent Wind Lightning Trial until nothing remained. The destructive force that eventually erupted from the stacking of three Trials was far from what that of three separate Trials could compare with.

“Is his head broken or something?” The experts from the Western Xuan Region also watched the thunder clouds spreading across the sky with strange expressions on their faces. The terrifying fluctuation emitted by the storm clouds caused their hearts to jump in fear. They were truly unable to comprehend just what Lin Dong was attempting to do. With the appearance of these storm clouds, there was perhaps now no need for anyone to attack him as once the lightning struck, even ashes would not remain.

“Just what is he trying to do?” Chang Wei also frowned deeply. He wanted to laugh and mock Lin Dong, but there was now an unfathomable pressure in his heart. He was no fool after all and Lin Dong's actions were really a little too strange. As the saying

went, there was definitely some strange reason behind any abnormality. Lin Dong definitely had his reasons for doing so. However, that final aim of his was temporarily unknown to all of them...

“Big brother Cao.” Chang Wei’s eyes looked towards Cao Yu at the front, catching sight of Cao Yu’s somewhat dark face. He could tell that the latter was feeling a little uneasy.

Was it because of this fellow before them?

The frown on Chang Wei brows deepened. His heart felt constricted from holding his breath. Clearly, he did not expect that they would be so affected by a brat who was only at four Yuan Nirvana stage.

“Big brother Cao, shall we watch and wait for the time being? The storm clouds are too terrifying. That brat will definitely be unable to receive the trial with his strength. If we attack hastily, we might end up being tricked. He might be attempting to use some kind of tactic to goad us into attacking, making us help him resist the Wind Lightning Trial while he gains from it.” Chang Wei’s eyes flickered before he spoke in a low voice.

Cao Yu’s eyes were narrowed. His gaze was firmly fixed on the figure seated below the storm clouds. Currently, Lin Dong had already shut his eyes, appearing as though he was making preparations to endure the trial.

Cao Yu’s eyes were dark and solemn. What Chang Wei said was

indeed quite a wise plan. As the saying goes, dealing with the ever-changing by not adopting any change and quietly wait for Lin Dong's subsequent move. However, why was it that he felt a faint unease?

“We cannot wait any longer!”

Cao Yu's eyes flashed as they suddenly hardened. He was a decisive person, hence once he made up his mind, he would not hesitate at all. Immediately, he took a step forward and his hand began to form seals at lightning speed.

“Heaven Sealing Array, Heaven Locking Symbol!”

A deep cry suddenly exploded from Cao Yu's mouth. After which, a shocking ripple spread out from within his body. The entire space swiftly became distorted, and in the next instant, numerous crack lines started to emerge as enormous black light chains shot out explosively through the cracks.

Crash.

Black light chains rushed out in a flash. They swiftly crossed each other in the sky, swiftly transforming into a black symbol.

“Swoosh!”

The enormous black symbol rushed out, immediately enveloping Lin Dong from all directions, while a terrifying aura swiftly



unfurled.

Lin Dong's tightly shut eyes slowly opened when this enormous black symbol rushed over. Immediately, the corners of his mouth quietly lifted into a slight arc.

“Is it finally here...”

The enormous black symbol swiftly flew into the territory of the thunder clouds under the watching eyes of the crowd. However, when this symbol was within a ten feet radius of Lin Dong, the billowing storm clouds in the sky suddenly shuddered. A split second later, silver lightning lit up the entire place. A loud rumbling sound accompanied countless large lightning pillars as they frantically poured down.

Rumble!

Thunderbolts rained downwards. Countless thunderbolts exploded on the enormous black symbol as wave after wave of indescribably wild and violent ripples spread outwards, forcibly striking the black symbol as it swiftly dimmed.

The frightening might of the three stacked trials had finally been displayed at this moment.

Crack!

The black symbol grew increasingly dim. Finally, numerous

cracks appeared, spreading until the symbol burst apart with a loud bang.

Humph!

Cao Yu's body jerked back when the black symbol was blasted apart as a moan was emitted from his mouth. He had clearly suffered some backlash. Immediately, his face became incomparably dark and solemn.

"To actually summon three stacking trials. What a brilliant tactic. However, aren't you afraid that you will not be able to deal with this monstrous thing that you have summoned?" Cao Yu's expression was dark and twisted as he cried out.

"I do not need to deal with this Wind Lightning Trial because it will be used to finish you off!" Lin Dong looked at Cao Yu's twisted face. A strange smile appeared on the former's face as he softly replied.

"What shameless boasting!" Cao Yu's pupils shrunk slightly, however, a sneer formed on his mouth. He did not believe that the storm clouds would attack him if he did not launch an attack. Currently, the one who was about to face the Trial was Lin Dong and not him!

The strange smile at the corners of Lin Dong's mouth grew wider. He immediately raised his head and looked at the storm clouds that now spanned several hundred feet as both of his hands slowly spread apart. Immediately, waves of black light surged out,

transforming into a gigantic black hole above his head.

A unique power suddenly unfurled from the black hole. Suddenly, the thunder cloud in the sky shrunk. In the next instant, the thunder cloud shook violently and countless enormous thunderbolts once again descended. This time around, their target was Lin Dong.

“Devour.”

The monstrous lightning appeared as a strange glint as they were reflected in Lin Dong’s eyes, while he spread his hands and softly muttered.

Boom!

The enormous black hole above his head suddenly began to rotate rapidly as waves of pulling force erupted. The lightning that originally rushed towards Lin Dong suddenly changed direction at this moment and charged into the enormous black hole.

Rumble!

Countless thunderbolts poured into the black hole, however, it did not cause any explosion. Only a loud rumble was emitted.

Meanwhile, below the black hole, Lin Dong was completely unharmed!

Everyone was astonished when they saw this sight. No one had expected that Lin Dong was actually able to receive the terrifying Wind Lightning Trial.

“Big brother Cao, the situation is not quite right. We should call big brother Mo Tong and the rest guarding outside this space!” Chang Wei cried out in a low voice, his expression drastically changing as watched this mysterious scene.

Cao Yu’s face was dark. His eyes were glued onto Lin Dong, who remained perfectly fine in the face of the sky full of thunderbolts, while the unease within his heart grew increasingly greater. After pondering for a moment, he finally nodded his head.

Chang Wei hurriedly took out a light ball from his Qiankun Bag after seeing Cao Yu nod, before quickly shattering it. Immediately, a golden light rushed out, burrowing into the space around it before disappearing.

“Shitty brat, once big brother Mo Tong’s group enters, only death will await you even if you really manage to endure the three trails!” A fierce glint flashed across Chang Wei’s eyes as he watched the golden light disappear.

This was a black spatial region outside the Ancient Battlefield realm. It was possible to enter the Eastern Xuan Region if one broke out from this place. At this moment, ten figures quietly sat within this darkness. Their bodies released an extremely astonishing ripple, a ripple that far exceeded that of Lin Dong or

even Cao Yu's group.

Swoosh!

A golden light suddenly rushed into the darkness. After which, a human figure grabbed it.

“Big brother Mo Tong. It seems that Cao Yu and the others have met with some trouble.” The eyes of the person who had received the golden light flickered as he raised his head and looked towards the front. A skinny figure was seated at that spot. On his lap was a large black blade.

“Oh?”

The shut eyes of the figure gradually opened. He frowned a little and said, “We need to guard this place just in case...”

He paused after his words sounded out before shaking his head and continuing, “Nevermind, I will go. The rest of you will remain here.”

While he spoke, he slowly stood up. However, just as he was about to move, his pupils suddenly shrunk. He turned his head, only to see a ray of light suddenly appear within the darkness as a sharp aura seemed to tear open this space.

At the edge of where the light had torn the space apart, a dozen figures rushed in. A graceful figure led them, while a clear and

elegant laughter faintly echoed from a distance.

“Haha, Mo Tong, you have travelled a great distance from the Western Xuan Region to this place. Our Eastern Xuan Region should at least perform our duty as the host right?”

The expression of the man, who carried a black blade, slowly turned grave at this moment. His eyes contained a fear that could not be hidden as he stared at the figure at the very front.

“Ling Qingzhu... I did not expect that even you would be dispatched.”

# Chapter 630: Lightning Trial Destruction Formation

---

Bang bang!

Thunderbolt raged between the sky and land. Countless lightning pillars wildly poured from the storm clouds, before they smashed towards the figure under it from every direction. However, each time these lightning pillars were about to touch that figure, it would be dragged into the enormous black hole that was rotating rapidly above. Finally, it would transform into a rumbling muffled sound that was emitted from the black hole.

“Lin Dong has actually received all those thunderbolts...”

All the gazes on the mountaintop contained a rich shock as they watched this scene. They were really unable to believe that Lin Dong had actually blocked the Wind Lightning Trial, that even a six Yuan Nirvana Stage expert would be afraid of.

“How is this possible...”

Liu Bai and the rest muttered to themselves. However, a dense joy surged into their eyes soon after. Lin Dong had once again shown them what was called a miracle.

“That strength from the black hole appears to be the Swallowing Strength of Taotie Sect. Could it be that Lin Dong had really completely snatched the strength of Taotie from Song Zhen when

they fought previously?

“It seems so. What a frightening fellow.”

Little Marten heard many private conversations from all around him. A strange expression also flashed across his eyes as he watched Lin Dong in the sky. He laughed softly, “This fellow is really unpredictable...”

With Little Marten’s understanding of Lin Dong, he was naturally aware that the black hole was not the so-called Taotie strength. Instead, it was the true Devouring Power. However, in order to avoid exposing the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, Lin Dong had purposefully used the Taotie strength to act as a cover.

Moreover, Little Marten was even able to feel a kind of familiar ripple from deep within that black hole. It was that of the mysterious Stone Talisman.

Clearly, Lin Dong had borrowed the strength of the two great mysterious objects, the Devouring Ancestral Symbol and the mysterious Stone Talisman, in order to receive the frightening lightning bolts. Otherwise, he was truly unqualified to do so.

“Borrowing the combined strength of three Wind Lightning Tribulation and using it as his own huh...” Little Marten curled his mouth slightly. His heart released a soft praise. At this moment, even he could not help but feel amazed by Lin Dong’s plan. This fellow was indeed extremely cautious. He had actually hid a final move that even he was unaware of.



Little Marten clearly knew that Lin Dong had definitely kept this tactic since a very long time ago in preparation for an emergency. This fellow always loved to keep a trump card that caused one to be incomparably shocked. These trump cards would at times even surprise someone as old and cunning as Little Marten.

After these years of training, Lin Dong was clearly no longer that tender young man from Qingyang Town. His scheming and mentality had already far exceeded those of his own age...

While other young people were acting arrogantly in their youth, this fellow was incredibly cautious and had prepared various trump cards. This was because he clearly understood that he had merely originated from a low rank empire and he did not possess a strong background. Other than Little Marten, there was no one else he could rely on. Moreover, in Little Marten's case, there were many occasions whereby the latter was unable to unleash his full strength due to his status as a Celestial Demon Marten. Therefore, Lin Dong could only rely on himself most of the time when faced with a perilous situation...

Little Marten smiled gently. This fellow was always able to perform something that an ordinary person could not even imagine. Most importantly, he was able to succeed most of the time.

“Big brother Cao, what should we do now?” Chang Wei and the rest had a somewhat ugly expression as they watched this scene in the sky. Their hearts were clearly a little uneasy. With the wild violence sweeping across this place, they were unable to even

establish the formation.

“What are you afraid of? I don’t believe that with my strength at the peak of the six Yuan Nirvana Stage and the “Heaven Sealing Array”, I am unable to finish off even a brat at four Yuan Nirvana Stage!” Cao Yu spoke in a cold and stern voice.

Chang Wei and the rest widened their mouths upon hearing this but ceased saying anything else. Cao Yu was right. He was still able to use the strength of the “Heaven Sealing Array”. That was a genuine Pure Yuan Treasure. Its strength was sufficient to restrain the heavens and earth. It was likely not impossible to deal with Lin Dong.

“Rumble!”

While they were conversing, the thunderbolts in the sky became increasingly wild and violent. Lightning glow lit the entire place. Countless thick thunderbolts were wildly pouring into that enormous black hole.

Chi chi!

With an increasing number of thunderbolts pouring into the black hole, even the surface of the black hole began to vaguely possess layers of lightning arcs. Those lighting glow directly seeped out and headed towards Lin Dong below. Immediately, Lin Dong’s sleeves were directly turned into dust. Even his skin revealed a charred black colour wherever the lighting glow flowed passed.

“What a wild and violent thunderbolt strength. Lin Dong’s eyes became slightly focused as he felt the piercing pain that was transmitted from his hand. This was merely some of the remnant strength that had seeped out from the black hole. He really did not dare to imagine just what kind of scene it would be if the black hole was to burst apart at this moment. It was likely that not even his ashes would be left behind.

“Clang!”

Lin Dong exhaled a deep breath of air. He glanced at the storm clouds in the sky that did not show any signs of weakening. His body trembled slightly and numerous green light surged out from within it. After which, layers after layers of green dragon scales began to appear on the surface of his body. Finally, it transformed into a dragon scale armour that protected him within it.

Chi chi!

These lightning glows would be reflected upon making contact with the dragon scale. In this way, it greatly reduced the intense pain that he was suffering.

The devouring swiftly increased in intensity. This kind of devouring continued for nearly ten minutes. At the end, the hundred over feet radius around Lin Dong was basically filled by this incomparable wild and violent lightning glow. Even Lin Dong’s actual body had an uncontrolled and fierce lightning glow lingering over it. Under the erosion of this kind of lightning glow,

even the dragon scale, which possessed such a strong defence, was gradually turning charred black. There was vaguely a sign of it cracking apart.

Every pair of surrounding eyes could only watch this scene in bewilderment. No one could even block it at all. This was because everyone knew that the surrounding of Lin Dong's body was already permeated with wild and violent thunderbolts. If anyone dared to unleash an attack, those wild and violent thunderbolts would be attracted by that attack. That person would end up attracting the lightning and destroy his own body...

Bang.

Another enormous thunderbolt spluttered out from the thunder cloud. After which, it was absorbed into the huge black hole. Immediately, there was vaguely some lightning arcs shooting out from which the black hole. From the looks of it, even the black hole formed by the Devouring Power was somewhat unable to continue devouring...

Lin Dong's gently shut eyes also opened at this moment. His eyes looked through the lightning curtain in front of him and saw Cao Yu's gloomy face below. The corner of his mouth slowly lifted into an icy cold smile. After which, he slowly raised his hand and pointed towards Cao Yu in the distance. His hand seal changed in the process.

Buzz!

The enormous black hole in the sky gradually wiggled as Lin Dong's hand seal changed. The mouth of the black hole was turned downwards. It appeared just like a black cannon mouth that was locked onto Cao Yu from a distance.

Creak creak!

Lightning glow flickered within the black hole. A kind of annihilation like fluctuation quietly spread apart. The attack had yet to be unleashed, but the space in front was already distorted.

Just when the black hole was locked onto the direction of Cao Yu, Chang Wei and the others behind instantly felt the skin on their heads become numb. A kind of dense feeling of danger rose within his heart.

“Putting on an act. I want to see just what can you do to me!”

Cao Yu's expression was dark and solemn. Fury surged within his eyes. After which, both of his hands formed a seal with lightning like speed. Immediately, the surrounding space began to wiggle wildly. Soon after, numerous shocking black light directly surged out from the space. It became just like numerous large black dragons that intersected in front of him.

“Heaven Sealing Array!”

Black light crisscrossed with each other at a lightning speed. It actually vaguely transformed into a thousand feet large black

array. There appeared to be some mountains appearing on the array. A kind of extremely shocking fluctuation spread apart in a partially visible manner.

The array hung in the sky and appeared incomparably strange. When the array wiggled, it seemed as though the entire place was about to be suppressed by it.

The lightning glow within Lin Dong's eyes flickered. There appeared to be some thunderbolt gathering within it. He watched that black coloured array that was formed and a wild heat slowly rose on his face.

It was the first time that he had controlled such a large and terrifying force.

Lin Dong's hand was gently extended out. His finger pressed on the empty space. After which, a soft sound also rumbled and resounded amidst the thunderbolt that permeated through the sky.

“Go!”

A word sounded. The entire place appeared to have turn silent instantly. That rapidly rotating black hole suddenly came to a halt. Within the serene darkness, bright sunlight like lightning glow suddenly appeared to be like a volcano that had been pressured for numerous years as it shot out with lightning speed while being accompanied by an earthshaking momentum!

Bang!

The entire place trembled. A thousand feet large lightning tore through the sky, appearing to be a real lightning pillar. It displayed a terrifying manner that could destroy everything in its path, as it violently struck onto the black array in front of countless pairs of stunned eyes!

# Chapter 631: Break Free

---

Dazzling lightning tore apart space like an ancient thunder dragon. Accompanied by an indescribable madness, it flashed across the sky. Finally, it slammed heavily onto the black array under numerous shocked gazes.

Boom!

The entire place appeared to turn completely silent at the moment of impact. Soon after, an overwhelming lightning glow and black light violently swept apart in a wild manner from the point of collision.

It was just like a luxurious lightning fireworks!

Lightning flashed like a falling star that spread over the sky. It erupted in all directions before drawing countless number of orbits in the sky. Finally, it landed in the mountain range, bringing about a loud rumbling sound.

Everyone was startled when they saw the shocking collision in the sky. A fight at that level had far exceeded the territory that Lin Dong and Cao Yu could reach.

Just a little remanent ripple from that collision was sufficient to crush a five Yuan Nirvana Stage expert until nothing remained.

Lan Ying and the rest on the mountain top were dazzled as they



stared at the lightning glow fireworks in the sky. Destruction filled that beautiful scene.

“What a monster...” Qing Feng inhaled a deep breath. His tone was filled with shock. He was really somewhat unable to imagine that such a terrifying attack had come from Lin Dong, whose strength was merely that of four Yuan Nirvana Stage.

“It is likely that no one in this Hundred Empire War is able to receive this attack. This fellow had actually hidden so deeply...” Lan Ying was touched as she slowly nodded. It was likely that even Qin Tian would not dare to receive this attack by Lin Dong head on. From this, everyone could tell that if the two of them were to engage in a normal fight, it was likely that the champion of this Hundred Empire War would definitely be Lin Dong.

The genius experts from the various empires beside Lan Ying also nodded. Even these arrogant individuals had no choice but concede after witnessing Lin Dong’s attack.

While everyone were adopting praising expressions, Qin Tian, who was supported by the arm at the side, had a completely gloomy expression under his lowered eyes. His fists were tightly clenched. There was an extremely dense jealousy and dissatisfaction in his eyes.

With his talent, he had been looked up by countless number of people ever since he was born. Even in this Hundred Empire War, where numerous talents had gathered, he also stood at the peak and overlooked all his competitors. However, he did not expect that he was actually directly defeated by Cao Yu from the Western

Xuan Region with a single strike!

On the other hand, Lin Dong, who had come from a low rank empire, had become their saviour. At the same time, he had also become the most dazzling person in this Hundred Empire War!

This position originally belonged to him!

Qin Tian clenched his teeth with great force. His eyes were filled with dissatisfaction and hatred.

Bang!

Lightning glow raged wildly in the sky. Finally, it crazily struck onto that enormous black array. That dark array also trembled intensely under the frightening attack from the lightning glow. Waves after waves of black light continued to spread. However, before it could form an attack, it was scattered by the wild and violent lightning glow.

Cao Yu had an extremely gloomy expression as he looked at the black array trembling intensely from behind it. He could clearly sense the terrifying pressure that eroded over the array. That kind of pressure caused even him to feel shocked.

“Big brother Cao, the array does not appear to be able to block that fellow’s attack!” Chang Wei and the others looked at the trembling dark array in fear. Without realising it, the teasing expression that was originally on their faces had completely

disappeared. Instead, a trace of horror vaguely appeared.

“Where are Mo Tong and the rest?” Cao Yu clenched his teeth. Regardless of how unwilling he was, he no longer dared to act arrogantly at this moment.

“Big brother Mo Tong and the others have been blocked. It seems like our plans were leaked. Those super sects’ experts from the Eastern Xuan Region have begun to infiltrate this realm.” A person beside Chang Wei spoke with a pale face.

“The experts from the Eastern Xuan Region have arrived huh...” Cao Yu’s expression changed slightly upon hearing this. They did not bring many people along for this mission. After all, if a large number of them were to invade this space, it would definitely be detected by those super sects of the Eastern Xuan Region. Although the Eastern Xuan Region’s sects continued to fight repeatedly amongst themselves, the Western Xuan Region was a common enemy of theirs. Once these super sects were to discover that they had entered this Ancient Battlefield, those super sects would definite dispatch experts over. At that time, their group would definite end up being outnumbered.

“It is all thanks to this damn brat!” Chang Wei gritted his teeth and said. If it was not because of this person’s sudden appearance, it was likely that they would have already finished the formation. How else would they end up in this kind of miserable situation.

“Big brother Cao, the array is about to be broken!”

Cao Yu's expression was dark and solemn. He was just about to think of some countermeasure when a sharp voice was suddenly emitted from the side. It shocked Cao Yu to the point of hurriedly turning his head. There were indeed numerous slight crack lines appearing on the large array that hung in the sky...

This was a sign that the array was about to collapse!

"That bastard..." Cao Yu involuntarily cursed. He did not expect that with his six Yuan Nirvana Stage strength and the "Heaven Sealing Array", he was still unable to block Lin Dong's attack.

Cao Yu's heart felt quite stifled. He clearly knew that it was impossible for Lin Dong to beat him if they were to fight head on. Furthermore, he could only stack these three trials together once. In other words, Lin Dong only had one opportunity. However, it was this single opportunity that caused him to feel incomparably stifled.

"Crack!"

However, regardless of how he felt suffocated or furious, the crack lines on the black array did not reduce because of it. Instead, they swiftly became dense. There was a slight cracking sound vaguely being emitted.

"Crack crack crack!"

The cracking sound became increasingly loud. A moment later,

the black array had already instantly been covered by crack lines...

“Quick, withdraw!”

Cao Yu’s eyes immediately shrunk upon seeing this scene. He was aware that he was unable to block any longer. All he could do was to clench his teeth unwillingly, wave his hand and withdrew quickly.

Chang Wei and the rest beside him were also frightened until their expressions changed. They were aware that if the wild and violent lightning glow was to pour over, they would definitely end up dead. All of them immediately retreated hastily.

Bang!

When Cao Yu’s group chose to flee, the enormous black array finally reached its limit. Finally, it emitted a ‘bang’ under the attack from the lightning glow and completely burst apart.

“He has actually shattered the array.”

“Lin Dong has won!”

Everyone on the mountain top watched this scene. A wild joy surfaced on their faces immediately. They were aware that Cao Yu’s group, which had lost the protection of the array, would definitely lose their most powerful tactic!

The battle between Lin Dong and Cao Yu also finally ended with the former gaining the upper hand!

“Bang!”

The array was shattered. Monstrous lightning glow wildly penetrated through it like a lightning dragon. After which, it contained an incomparably wild and violent momentum as it rushed out crazily.

“Bastard, it’s not over yet?” Cao Yu and the others, who had retreated explosively, looked at the wild violence of the lightning glow. Immediately, their expressions had become extremely ugly.

“Let’s attack together!” Cao Yu let out a low roar!

Chang Wei and the others could only clench his teeth upon hearing Cao Yu’s low roar. He prepared to maneuver his Yuan Power to attack with the others.

Swoosh!

Just as they were about to attack, however, that incomparably wild and violent lightning glow suddenly whistled passed their head. It actually did not attack them.

This scene caused Cao Yu and the rest to be stunned. They

immediately turned their heads around. “He wants to rescue the experts from the super sects!”

The lightning glow tore through the empty space like a thunderbolt in front of the frightened eyes of Cao Yu’s group. After which, it directly smashed towards the black seal in the distant sky. The interior of the seal prison currently trapped the old man from the Dao Sect and the others from the super sects.

Lin Dong clearly understood that defeating Cao Yu and the others at this moment would not resolve the problem. He must help the old man from the Dao Sect and the rest to escape. This was because they could only completely resolve the problem after they escaped. Otherwise, just one random person from Zheng Zhong’s group would be able to deal with all of them, who belonged to the younger generation.

“Cao Yu, what are you doing?”

Zhen Zhong, who was doing his best to trap the old man from the Dao Sect and the rest from outside the black seal prison, was also shocked by this sudden attack. His expression became green as he cried out explosively.

They were currently having an even match with the old man from the Dao Sect and the others. Any little external interference would cause all their effort to come to naught.

Cao Yu’s expression was pale white. His face was filled with bitterness. He had also done his best but he was ultimately

defeated by Lin Dong's crazy move...

Bang!

Lightning glow wildly poured over the black seal prison. Immediately, the entire place trembled. After which, Cao Yu saw numerous crack lines begin to surface on that seal prison...

It is over...

Cao Yu's heart immediately sunk when those crack lines appeared. He was aware that the operation of their Western Xuan Region would likely end in failure this time around...

The main reason for the failure was actually because of a little fellow, who was only at four Yuan Nirvana Stage...



# Chapter 632: Meeting Ling Qingzhu Again?

---

Clang!

The incomparably wild and violent lightning glow frantically rammed into the seal prison. As terrifying energy seeped out, even space itself started to twist and distort.

Crack!

Cracks spread rapidly on the seal prison, and upon seeing this, the expressions of Zheng Zhong's group turned ashen. They knew that if the old man from the Dao Sect and rest were to escape, trapping them all again would not be easy.

“Strengthen the seal with everything you’ve got!”

Zheng Zhong roared in a low voice. Just as he was about to activated the power of the ‘Heaven Sealing Array’, numerous extremely frightening undulations suddenly erupted from within the prison. Clearly, the Dao Sect old man and the rest were making use of this chance and were crazily unleashing all their attacks.

“Crack crack!”

Under the all-out attacks of the Dao Sect old man group and the lightning glow, the cracks on the seal prison swiftly extended at a shocking rate.

“Oh no! The seal prison is about to break!”

When he saw this unstoppable destruction, the expression of a shady looking old man beside Zheng Zhong changed, as he cried out in alarm.

“Bang!”

Before his cry could fade, his pupils suddenly shrunk tightly. The seal prison had begun to swell rapidly at this moment. He could only hear a shockingly loud sound as the seal prison exploded.

Frightening energy ripples swept across the sky like a huge wave as eight rainbow lights flew out from the explosion, before swiftly scattering.

“Damnit!”

Upon seeing the now free Dao Sect old man and the rest, Zheng Zhong immediately became extremely furious. His red eyes turned to Cao Yu as he roared, “You useless garbage. You can’t even deal with younger generation members who have yet to enter the super sects?!”

Cao Yu’s group wore faces full of shame. They also felt incomparably stifled and wronged within their hearts. Normally, the people here would be completely outclassed by them. However, no one had expected the appearance of someone like Lin Dong. This fellow fought in a manner that completely defied logic,

summoning three Wind Lightning Trials the moment he appeared. Moreover, the most unbelievable part was that this fellow was actually able to harness the power of the Wind Lightning Trial to break their defences...

“Zheng Zhong sir, it is all because of that brat Lin Dong. He summoned three Wind Lightning Trials, and even though big brother Cao used the power of the ‘Heaven Sealing Array’, he was still defeated by that brat...” Chang Wei explained bitterly.

“Lin Dong?”

Zheng Zhong eyes hardened. His dark and stern eyes swept over and immediately locked onto Lin Dong. Under such a glare, Lin Dong immediately felt a chill around him as his heart suddenly shivered. The Blood Soul Puppet appeared in front of him while his face filled with caution.

Now that the Wind Lightning Trial had dissipated, he had lost his greatest trump card. Even though his Mental Energy had already soared to the four seal Heaven Symbol Master level, he understood that it was still not enough to bring him anywhere close to Zheng Zhong’s level. After all, the latter rivalled the super sect elites...

“Haha, Zheng Zhong, are you not ashamed of threatening a younger generation member despite your status? Is the skin on your old face really so thick?” Just as Lin Dong was taking precautions, an elderly figure suddenly cut in front of Zheng Zhong’s gaze. Lin Dong looked over, only to discover that it was the Dao Sect old man known as Wu Dao.

“Haha, this little fellow has done well, and has done us a great service. If he is willing, he can become a direct disciple at my Great Desolate Palace.” That expert from the Great Desolate Palace laughed loudly. His laughter was like thunder that rumbled over the entire sky.

“This little fellow’s performance is worthy of being the champion of this Hundred Empire War.” The pretty woman from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace also remarked with a smile.

Liu Tong from the Yuan Gate frowned slightly upon hearing this. He glanced in the direction of Qin Tian, a trace of displeasure in his eyes. Clearly, he was a little resentful that the latter was unable to stop Cao Yu.

Qin Tian lowered his head even further upon receiving Liu Tong’s gaze. His fists tightened until cracking sounds could be heard.

“Humph, Wu Dao, Liu Tong, it is a little too early for all of you to be celebrating. Even though you have escaped, do you think that we are unable to deal with you?” Zheng Zhong’s expression was dark and cold, while a furious smile hung on his face.

“With the ‘Heaven Sealing Array’, you are indeed rather powerful. However, as long as we are no longer trapped in one location by you, we will be able to disrupt all of you, causing you to be unable to establish the formation. As time goes on, the experts from our Eastern Xuan Region will naturally come and assist us. At

that time, I would really like to see what else you have up your sleeves.” Wu Dao smilingly said.

Zheng Zhong’s expression sunk immediately upon hearing this. He laughed coldly, “Go ahead and try!”

“Do it!”

A cry was emitted from Zheng Zhong’s mouth. Immediately, the people behind him suddenly began to form a series of hand seals. Space wriggled as a terrifying black light once again surged out.

“Cao Yu, kill all those that hinder us!” While Zheng Zhong was preparing to attack, he also let out a stern cry towards Cao Yu.

“Understood!”

Cao Yu nodded heavily. He immediately turned his head around and venomously stared at Lin Dong, before his sinister voice rang out, “Now that you have lost the Wind Lightning Trial, let me see how else you can retaliate!”

Lin Dong merely smiled a little in response to Cao Yu’s vicious gaze. His hands slowly spread out as majestic Mental Energy spread apart. This surging feeling was many times stronger than what it was before.

The current Lin Dong not only possess a Yuan Power cultivation of the four Yuan Nirvana stage, but his Mental Energy cultivation

had also reached four seal Heaven Symbol Master. With the two, he would even be able to fight against a six Yuan Nirvana stage expert. It would no longer be like before where he barely posed a threat.

Cao Yu's pupils shrunk slightly when he sensed the vast and mighty Mental Energy from Lin Dong's body, while an additional trace of genuine seriousness appeared within his eyes. Before, Lin Dong was someone who needed to rely on tricks in order to contend against him. However, the current Lin Dong could go toe to toe with a six Yuan Nirvana stage expert...

“Being able to attain such accomplishments in Mental Energy and Yuan Power cultivation is testament to your ability. This Hundred Empire War of the Eastern Xuan Region does indeed have some true worth. However, even though you can fight against a six Yuan Nirvana stage expert, you still cannot match up to me!” Cao Yu laughed coldly.

Lin Dong did not refute these words. Qin Tian's strength was also at the six Yuan Nirvana stage. However, he was defeated in one single move when Cao Yu activated the power of the ‘Heaven Sealing Array’. The reason that Lin Dong could withstand the earlier attack was completely due to the usage of the Blood Soul Puppet. However, the Blood Soul Puppet had paid the price was now practically ruined.

“Just do it.”

Regardless, the current Lin Dong did not have any intentions of withdrawing. He extended his hand and smiled slightly towards

Cao Yu. At this moment, he only wanted to rely on his own strength to battle against Cao Yu.

“Stubborn fellow!”

Cao Yu’s eyes turned cold. He finally ceased uttering any unnecessary words. His hand seal changed and a strange black light once again surged out. It vaguely transformed into a black skull surrounded by a thick black smoke, which released a sharp sonic wave.

“Heaven Sealing Skull!”

Cao Yu waved his hand and the enormous black skull immediately rushed out. Accompanied by thick smoke as it swept towards Lin Dong with a great momentum. Space itself became distorted wherever the sonic wave passed.

Lin Dong’s eyes were grave as he observed Cao Yu’s attack. He was just about to maneuver his Yuan Power and Mental Energy to fight with his opponent when his expression suddenly changed. He had discovered that the space in front of him was actually starting to wiggled. After which, a figure appeared from nowhere. A hand thrust forward as majestic Yuan Power surged forth and crushed the skull until it exploded.

“Who?”

This sudden scene also caused Cao Yu’s expression to changed

drastically while he cried out in fury.

“Haha, Dao Sect disciple, Zhao Qian.” The man wearing pale-white clothes in front of Lin Dong raised his head and laughed towards Cao Yu.

“A disciple of the Dao Sect? Have the experts from the super sects arrived?” Lin Dong was also startled because of this.

“Friends from the Western Xuan Region, news of what has happened within this Ancient Realm has already been transmitted to the various super sects of the Eastern Xuan Region. Currently, the experts from the various sects are hurrying over. If everyone hesitates a little longer, it is likely that all of you will be trapped...” The white clothed man appeared and blocked Cao Yu. After which, he looked into the distance and chuckled as he spoke out in a clear voice.

“What? Have we been discovered?”

The expressions of Zheng Zhong’s group changed drastically upon hearing this voice. They suddenly turned their heads and discovered that numerous distortions had appeared in the area. It was possible to see numerous blurry figures gradually appearing from these distorted spots. From their clothes, one could tell that these people were members of the super sects!

“The experts from the eight super sects have arrived...”



Lin Dong raised his head and looked at the distorted spaces, a trace of surprise in his eyes. Were these the disciples of the super sects? They did indeed possess extremely powerful auras.

As Lin Dong's gaze swept across the distorted spaces, the surprise on his face suddenly started to freeze. His lips were pressed tightly together as his heart began to beat even more intensely.

The spot where his eyes stopped at was yet another distorted space. However, there was a figure standing elegantly at that spot. That cold demeanor and appearance was the same as it was a couple of years ago...

Ling Qingzhu...

At this moment, Lin Dong's fists slowly tightened.

# Chapter 633: Four Years

---

The empty space distorted, forming a black tunnel. There were already over a dozen figures that had already arrived through it. Lin Dong's eyes were currently glued onto a spot at the front of the group, where a beautiful figure stood.

The beautiful figure was wearing a light green dress which complimented her tall, soft and lovely body. Even from a distance away, one could see her flawless snow white skin. A piece of gauze covered her face but the outline of her almost perfect features were still visible. Paired with her flowing eyes, it made the world seem as if it had lost its colors.

Barefooted, she gently stood atop a green lotus like a daughter of the moon palace or a fairy that had fallen to the mortal realm. A sight that could not help but make many feel inferior.

This appearance was exactly the same as four years ago. However, her cold demeanor was even colder than it was back then.

Huuu!

Lin Dong's body trembled slightly as he raised his head and exhaled deeply. He forcefully suppressed his heart, which had not felt so restless in a long time.

Unknowingly, four years had passed since then.

The immature youth back then had unwittingly become a young man. He had walked out from a low rank empire and arrived at this Ancient Battlefield where geniuses were as numerous as the clouds. In the end, he managed to stand above everyone else.

When Little Marten had instigated Lin Dong to participate in the Hundred Empire War and be honed by it, the former knew that Lin Dong had agreed partly because of one sentence the the lady known as Ling Qingzhu had said...

“If you wish to repay me for rescuing you, we can talk about it after you possess the qualifications to participate in the Hundred Empire War.”

“Lin Dong, hopefully, you will not be so weak the next time we meet. Someone truly strong does not merely rely on his tongue...”

Little Marten clearly understood that with Lin Dong’s character, it was basically impossible for him to take such words from those around him to heart under normal circumstances. However, it was clear that Lin Dong had difficulty ignoring these words from the first woman in his life.

Although part of the reason for Lin Dong’s efforts over the years was to raise his strength and protect his family, perhaps only Lin Dong himself was aware that deep within his heart, he was haunted by the pride of a man.

He did not wish to be looked down upon by those clear eyes.

Yet, he was also aware of the enormous gap between his status and Ling Qingzhu's. The latter was able to easily attain what he had to spend a great effort to on. Moreover, her talent made many geniuses pale in comparison.

She was a truly a lady blessed by the heavens. How could it be easy to catch up and surpass her?

If it were not for that absurd situation in the ancient tomb back then, Lin Dong believed that he and Ling Qingzhu might never have interacted with each other.

However, there was no 'if' in this world. Hence, two parallel lines changed their original trajectory, while Lin Dong had also dedicated all his effort into making himself powerful.

Ling Qingzhu had believed that it was impossible for him to defeat Lin Langtian back then. However, the genius who was once the most dazzling person of the Lin Clan, had already been completely wiped out by Lin Dong earlier.

Ling Qingzhu had believed that it was impossible for him to attain the right to participate in the Hundred Empire War back then. However, at this very moment, no one dared to deny that Lin Dong was this Hundred Empire War's champion and had also become the most dazzling existence in this Hundred Empire War...

The current Lin Dong was also no longer that same innocent youth who had never seen the world. In this Ancient Battlefield, he

had become aware of how small and weak the Great Yan Empire was. He also understood just how someone of Ling Qingzhu status had viewed those so called geniuses from the Great Yan Empire back then.

Lin Dong did not wish to act triumphantly in front of the woman who had left such a deep mark on his heart. All he wanted to do was to let the latter understand, that the weak youth in her eyes back then, would definitely exceed her expectations.

Lin Dong's looked at the elegant figure with a cold fairy like demeanor standing on a green lotus. A moment later, he suddenly smiled and slowly descended from the sky.

“Oh? It was extremely difficult for you to meet her again. Yet, you didn't go and greet her?” Little Marten teasingly stared at Lin Dong and said. He had also recognised Ling Qingzhu. Moreover, he also understood just what kind of mark this woman had left on Lin Dong's heart.

“It is still a little early...”

Lin Dong softly replied. He could sense an extremely powerful pressure from Ling Qingzhu. It was clear that Lin Qingzhu had become much stronger compared to four years ago. Even the current Lin Dong was still unable to match up to her.

This kind of result did not cause Lin Dong to despair. Ling Qingzhu was a child blessed by the heavens. It was within reason to have such an achievement in four years.

Moreover, the reason Lin Dong chose not to meet her was not because he felt inferior. It was because he had said back then that the next time he appeared, he would directly tell her that a woman that he had slept with, would be his forever...

Currently, Lin Dong did not think that he possessed the qualifications to say these words. The current him was no longer the arrogant and ignorant youth from back then.

However, this meeting had at least allowed Lin Dong to know that there was still a gap between them. However, this gap was no longer as vast as before.

This beautiful figure no longer caused him to feel a distant and untouchable feeling in his heart like before.

“There will definitely be an opportunity to meet in the future.” Lin Dong raised his head and stared at the cold figure in the distance while he slowly spoke.

“Damnit!”

Zheng Zhong’s expression was rather twisted as he watched the distorted spaces. From these spots, he could sense the auras many experts becoming increasingly clearer. It was obvious that their plan this time around had been completely exposed.

“They have arrived rather quickly...” Wu Dao was also a little

surprised. He immediately smiled towards Zheng Zhong and said, “Looks like your plans this time have failed again.”

“Bastard!”

Zheng Zhong’s face was steely green, and an incomparable rage boiled in his heart. They had laid in waiting for so long, however, all their hard work was wasted in the end.

“Since you are here, there is no need to leave. Our ‘Yuan Gate’ will represent the Eastern Xuan Region to trial you properly!” Liu Tong laughed coldly. Currently, the situation of Zheng Zhong’s group had completely turned around.

“Consider us unlucky this time around. However, whether we remain behind is not something that you, Liu Tong, is qualified to decide.” Zheng Zhong mocked.

“You still dare to act tough at such a time!” Liu Tong was extremely furious. He stepped forward as majestic Yuan Power surged out and directly transformed into a Yuan Power light plate. The plate flashed, tearing through the skies towards Zheng Zhong at a terrifying speed.

“Everyone, attack together. Do not allow them to escape!” Liu Tong also cried out when he attacked.

“Humph!”

Zheng Zhong's expression was dark and solemn. His hand seal changed and the black cloud in the sky wiggled. Finally, an enormous black crack was torn in the space. Black light surged out from within the crack. In the end, it transformed into a black scroll that hovered in front of Zheng Zhong. An extremely frightening ripple was continuously spread out from within the black scroll.

“Heaven Sealing Array?”

Liu Tong's expression immediately changed when he saw the black scroll. There was a rich greed deep within his eyes.

Swoosh!

The black scroll shook gently and a black light pillar shot out. It swept downwards and shattered Liu Tong's attack. Immediately, Zheng Zhong's hand seal changed. Circular black light wildly swept out from the scroll, forming into an array under their feet.

“Heh, the Eastern Xuan Region does indeed live up to its reputation. You will be allowed to manage this Ancient Battlefield for a while longer. However, in the next big Xuan Region battle, this entire space shall belong to my Western Xuan Region. Haha!” Zheng Zhong laughed coldly at Liu Tong's group when the formation took shape.

“They plan on escaping!”



Liu Tong's expression changed immediately upon seeing this scene. He was just about to attack when monstrous black light erupted from the array. Black light pillars instantly wrapped around Zheng Zhong's group. After which, a ripping sound appeared. Space was torn and the array disappeared into nowhere. All the experts from the Western Xuan Region, including Zheng Zhong, also disappeared at the same time.

“Bastard!”

Liu Tong immediately cursed furiously after seeing Zheng Zhong's group swagger away.

“Deacon Liu Tong, no need to be so furious. They possess the Heaven Sealing Array after all. No one can stop them if they truly wish to leave...” Wu Dao smiled and spoke in an indifferent manner.

“I think that we should continue with the Hundred Empire War. However, I believe that there is already a prime candidate for the champion spot.”

“Humph!”

Liu Tong snorted coldly in his heart when he heard this. His eyes were a little gloomy. No one knew what he was thinking.

“They've escaped...”

The experts from the various super sects felt a little regretful as they watched Zheng Zhong and the others flee. However, they could do nothing about it.

“A wasted trip. Let’s pack up and leave.”

Some of the disciples from the super sects were not interested in staying any longer. All of them bowed towards the elders from their sects in the distance before turning around to leave.

“We should also leave...”

Atop a green lotus near a distorted space, Ling Qingzhu’s eyes quickly swept across the area. After which, she turned around, leading the dozen over figures behind her as they disappeared.

After their figures disappeared, Ling Qingzhu and the others transformed into numerous rainbows that rushed towards the exterior of this space and headed towards the Eastern Xuan Region.

“Tch.”

When they were entering the exterior of the realm, a golden light suddenly shot over, and was received by a lady behind Ling Qingzhu.

“Senior Mu, what is it?” Someone asked curiously.

“A Yuan Spirit Transmission. Nothing much. It’s only news about the current Hundred Empire War.” The lady smilingly replied.

“What is there to talk about. The champion is most likely someone from the Tianyuan Empire. We are already used to it...” A person curled her mouth and said.

“Haha, the Yuan Gate is indeed strong, but no matter how strong it is, the super genius from the Yuan Gate known as Little Yuan Lord is merely a frantic pursuer of our senior sister Qingzhu.”

“Hehe, it is rumoured that he even plans of asking his elders to propose a marriage. A couple of ladies by the side giggled.

“Noisy.”

At the front, as she stood on a green lotus, Ling Qingzhu’s pretty eyes shifted a little. Her cold voice caused the ladies to extend their tongues, but they did not dare to continue making fun of her.

“All of you are wrong this time. The champion of this Hundred Empire War is not someone from the Tianyuan Empire.” The lady, who had received the Yuan Spirit Transmission, laughed.

“Oh? Then who is it? To actually be able to surpass those from the Tianyuan Empire...” Everyone exclaimed in surprise. Even Ling Qingzhu also slightly reduced her flying speed.

“I am not too familiar with this person and have no idea which empire he comes from. It seems to be someone called Lin Dong.”

Swoosh!

The lady's voice had just sounded out when Ling Qingzhu's figure suddenly froze. Disbelief suddenly surged in her usually cold and quiet lake like eyes.

Was it that Lin Dong? Did he really participate in the Hundred Empire War?

# Chapter 634: Origin

---

In the darkness, Ling Qingzhu's moving figure suddenly froze. Her bright eyes were no longer as calm as before. Instead, a rich disbelief had taken its place.

Her emotions, which only surfaced rarely just like the blossoming of the epiphyllum flower, suddenly arose at this moment because of a single name uttered by her companions.

Lin Dong...

It was an ordinary name. However, it stirred violent ripples in Ling Qingzhu's calm lake like heart.

She would never forget what happened four years ago in that tiny Great Yan Empire.

Over the past four years, she had buried that incident deep within her heart. Along with it, she had also buried the one called Lin Dong in the deepest recesses of her heart and tried to forget about him with the passage of time.

However, despite burying it for four years, everything had been completely awakened with that name at this moment. The scene from four years ago also flooded out from the deepest parts of her mind, and was still so vivid...

After what had happened back then, even with Ling Qingzhu's

character, she was secretly filled with shame, rage and killing intent towards him. She had once contemplated killing Lin Dong in order to wipe this incident clean forever...

Of course, she did not do that in the end. Perhaps it was because of the steely mettle the immature youth had displayed back then, while he was being pressured by a far stronger Lin Langtian, that had touched her. Or she was actually a kind person deep in her bones. Or it could be due to other reasons she was unaware of...

In the end, she chose to let Lin Dong off and even saved him from Wang Yan. Perhaps only she knew just how complicated her emotions were back then.

Ling Qingzhu still remembered the youth's disheveled yet exceptionally bright expression back on that mountain peak, when he proclaimed to her that he would surpass Lin Langtian, and that ruffian like tone when he declared that when he appeared in front of her once again, he would tell her that any woman that he slept with would be his...

At that time, Ling Qingzhu did not believe his words. She very clearly knew how weak Lin Dong was, and the distance between them was far beyond his imagination. After all, she was a member of a super sect and he was merely a branch family member from a low rank empire.

The two of them belonged to completely different worlds. If nothing unexpected happened in this world, the two of them would never have met.

Ling Qingzhu did not mention this back then. In the face of the youth's bold promise, perhaps she could only treated it as a joke in her heart, or the right of frivolous youth...

Ling Qingzhu knew that once she left Great Yan Empire, this incident would be buried forever in her memories. Perhaps, she may not even step foot into that empire ever again and would gradually forget everything that happened and the people there...

Even the young man called Lin Dong.

This was what she had secretly believed until that name once again resounded in her ears. Only then did she realize that all her suppressed memories were still as vivid as before...

That pitifully weak youth who was once forced into such a sorry state by Lin Langtian's aura, that youth who was forced into a perilous situation by Wang Yan...

He had finally walked out of the tiny Great Yan Empire and rose above the rest in the Hundred Empire War.

He had actually delivered on the promises that he had made back then.

The gauze on her face gently trembled as Ling Qingzhu gently bit her red lips. A complicated expression flowed in her bright and clear eyes. She could only imagine the effort and price Lin Dong

must have paid in order to reach this level.

This guy... the steely mettle that had touched her back then seemed to have not changed at all.

“Senior Qingzhu? What is it?”

Behind Ling Qingzhu, the other girls were also startled when she suddenly stopped. Promptly, they cautiously asked.

Ling Qingzhu gently lifted her head and breathed in an icy-cold breath of air through her gauze. As the cold flowed through her heart, she used it to suppress the surging emotions within.

“It’s nothing.”

Ling Qingzhu softly said. She leaned back her head and turned her eyes to the back, as if she wanted to see through space and catch a glimpse of that familiar figure again. Moments later, she finally turned around, gently clenching her slender jade-like hand. No longer hesitating, the green lotus beneath her feet flickered, before it transformed into a meteor and flew out.

“Lin Dong, it is indeed surprising that you can make it here. However, now that you are here, you will finally understand the gap between us. I am not looking down on you. The fact that you can reach such a stage is more than enough proof of your talent.”

“However, this alone is still not enough for you to utter those



words you had said previously before me.”

“You are the first man to have taken my body. If you are truly capable, make yourself the last. However, it is not so simple to conquer me, Ling Qingzhu.”

“Hopefully, you will have the genuine qualifications to utter those words in front of me the next time we meet in the Eastern Xuan Region. Regardless of the outcome, at the very at least, I admire your courage and conviction...”

“She’s gone...”

Atop the Hundred Empire Mountain, Lin Dong stared at the spot where Ling Qingzhu vanished as his lips gently pressed together, and his originally surging heart gradually calmed down. However, he did not feel anxious. Since he had reached the Eastern Xuan Region, he believed that he would have the opportunity to meet her again in future.

“The currently Ling Qingzhu is quite powerful.” Little Marten casually said. “From what I can tell, she should have reached the peak of Nirvana stage and she is merely one step away from the Life and Death stage.”

“Peak of the Nirvana stage.”

Lin Dong’s pupils shrunk a little before he involuntarily sighed in his heart. She was truly a lady blessed by the heavens. In merely

four years, she had improved tremendously. Her progress made even himself feel as if there was no chance of catching up.

“Heh heh, I believe in you. I believe it will be quite satisfying to conquer such a lady.” Little Marten patted Lin Dong’s shoulder before he laughed in a strange manner.

Lin Dong rolled his eyes at him.

“Oh? Is brother Lin Dong interested in Ling Qingzhu?” While Lin Dong and Little Marten spoke, Liu Bai clearly saw the direction Lin Dong had been staring at. Immediately, he asked with a twinkly smile.

“Do you know her?” Lin Dong was somewhat startled as he asked.

“Heh, is there anyone in Eastern Xuan Region who does not know Ling Qingzhu of the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace? She is the direct disciple of the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace Empress and she holds an extraordinary status. Furthermore, her looks are out of this world and countless geniuses from various super sects have a crush on her. It is a pity that no one has been able to peel off her gauze and peek at her beauty.” Liu Bai laughed. There was an unconcealable passion in his words as he spoke.

Lin Dong scratched his nose in an unnatural manner while a peculiar expression filled his eyes. Not only did he peel off her gauze and saw her face, he even...

When he thought of that absurd deed that happened back then, even someone like Lin Dong involuntarily felt a slight heat in his heart. To a man, there was nothing more satisfying in this world that conquering an ice queen...

Of course, Lin Dong was not dumb enough to mention this incident. Even though he had stood out in the Hundred Empire War, there was still an extremely huge gap between him and the direct disciples of the super sects. If news that he had defiled this goddess got out, several of Ling Qingzhu's admirers would come hunting for him.

“So she is from Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace...”

Nonetheless, Lin Dong managed to uncover Ling Qingzhu's background from Liu Bai. He had never expected that she was someone from Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace. In a manner of speaking, Lin Dong had quite a strong affinity with this sect. In fact, back in Great Yan Empire, he even managed to obtain a Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace's martial art from that fellow.

With these thoughts in mind, Lin Dong involuntarily chuckled before he stretched his back. When his eyes once again turned to look at that spot where Ling Qingzhu vanished, a small smile appeared on his face. Meanwhile, a tiny bit of anticipation gushed out from his heart.

Ling Qingzhu, you had better be careful if we meet once again.

# Chapter 635: Sect Selection

---

The super sect experts above the Hundred Empire Mountain slowly descended after the battle came to an end, before finally coming to rest in the skies above the mountaintop.

The commotion on the mountaintop immediately died down when everyone saw this, and a passionate look burned in the eyes of many. Evidently, they were aware of what was going to happen next...

“Everyone, I think that there is no need to continue this Hundred Empire War until the end this time around, is there?” Wu Dao beamed as he looked at the mountain top, before looking towards the remaining experts from the various super sects.

“The final Nirvana Golden Ranking battle is merely to select the most outstanding champion. I think that there is already someone suitable for that spot, no?” The expert from the Great Desolate Palace also nodded and laughed.

From the side, some of the other experts from the super sects also nodded slightly upon hearing this. After which, their gazes turned downwards in unison and finally gathered onto a tall young figure below.

Liu Tong’s eyebrows knitted together slightly. Qin Tian’s failure to obtain the champion spot was now somewhat out of his hands. However, there was nothing he could say at this moment. He had declared earlier that the person who could stop the formation

would become the champion. There was no way for him to take back his words.

The so-called Hundred Empire War champion might appear to be just an empty title, but it was quite important to their super sects. This was because according to the rules, the super sect that the champion joined would be able to gain the largest number of disciples in the Hundred Empire War.

If one wished to ensure the continuous prosperity of one's sect, the pouring in of new blood was critical. These geniuses that stood out in the Hundred Empire War all possessed extremely outstanding talent. Their enlistment into any sect would be of extremely beneficial for a sect's long term prospects.

Although the selection of disciples from the Hundred Empire War was merely one of the means for these super sects to recruit disciples, it was obvious that no sect would find having too many of them a bother. Over the years, the eight super sects had argued frequently on the distribution of the disciples recruited in the Eastern Xuan Region.

It was also due to these arguments that some rules had been made. An example was this Hundred Empire War. It used the champion's sect selection to decide which super sect could obtain the most disciples.

If one divided the disciple resource in the Hundred Empire War into ten, the sect which the champion joined would be able to get another portion on top of their original portion. This was basically double of the other sects.

The victors of the last couple of Hundred Empire Wars were mostly from the Tianyuan Empire. As a faction under the Yuan Gate, these champions would naturally join the Yuan Gate without exception. This had also allowed the Yuan Gate to become the greatest beneficiary from the Hundred Empire War...

However, this time around, the appearance of Lin Dong had upset the situation. Even Liu Tong did not dare to guarantee that Lin Dong would choose to join the Yuan Gate. Although their Yuan Gate was truly the strongest super sect in the Eastern Xuan Region, Liu Tong felt a faint unease regarding Lin Dong...

The eyes of the eight super sect experts hovering in the air were currently gathered onto Lin Dong below them. Even the gazes from the surrounding mountaintops also turned as all of them gathered on Lin Dong.

The sudden arrival of every gaze in this place caused Lin Dong to be stunned. Only then did he sense that this champion spot was not as simple as he had imagined.

“Lin Dong, which super sect do you intend to join?” Wu Dao smilingly stared at Lin Dong. That friendly tone made Lin Dong’s hairs stand a little.

Wu Dao’s voice had just barely faded when the remaining seven pairs of eyes focussed even more intently at Lin Dong.

With such a lineup staring at him, even Lin Dong could not help

but feel a little uneasy despite his character. He was merely a disciple who wished to join a super sect. There was no need to put such terrifying attention on him right...

By the side, Little Marten narrowed his eyes slightly as he watched this scene. The selection of a super sect was very important. This was because Lin Dong needed to train there for a period of time after this. Once one joined a super sect, one's body would be imprinted with the brand of this sect. The competition between the sects of the Eastern Xuan Region was extremely intense. They were all large boats, and if a large boat overturned, the disciples within it would also end up in an incomparably miserable fate.

From what one could tell of the current situation within the Eastern Xuan Region, the Yuan Gate was definitely the strongest. Hence, it was likely that the resources it had would also surpass the other super sects. If one trained in the Yuan Gate, one would be treated rather well, and perhaps even have a rather bright future.

Of course, Little Marten greatly disliked this strongest super sect of the Eastern Xuan Region. The Celestial Demon Marten and the Yuan Gate were bitter enemies. The ancestors of both parties had been killed by the other side. Therefore, he personally did not wish for Lin Dong to join the Yuan Gate. Of course, if Lin Dong still chose them in the end, Little Marten would not object.

Amongst the remaining seven super sects, the Dao Sect was a pretty good option. Of course, if Lin Dong wished to be closer to Ling Qingzhu, joining the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace was also not bad...

Lin Dong's physical body was also quite strong, and the Great Desolate Palace was widely known for their powerful physical bodies.

Lin Dong's Mental Energy also seemed to be quite decent, and the Divine Sect focused on Mental Energy cultivation...

When Little Marten thought about it, he suddenly felt a little strange as he discovered that Lin Dong, this jack of all trades, seemed to have quite a number of super sects that he could choose to join.

While these thoughts were running through Little Marten's mind, Lin Dong also frowned a little. Countless people around were quietly staring at him. Their eyes contained an envy that was somewhat difficult to hide. If these people wanted to join a super sect, they would have to see if the other party wanted to accept them. However, he had it easy. All of these super sects could only watch and wait for him to make his choice...

The top of the mountain was silent for a moment before Lin Dong finally raised his head. After which, he respectfully cupped his hands towards the eight people in the sky and said, "Elders, Lin Dong wishes to join the Dao Sect."

Clamor.

Lin Dong's words undoubtedly stirred a commotion on the mountaintop. Quite a number of people were stunned. They



clearly did not expect that Lin Dong would choose the Dao Sect.

Although the Dao Sect was not considered as the weakest amongst the eight super sects, it was also not considered to be the strongest. Moreover, the Dao Sect has the least disciples amongst the eight super sects. From a certain point of view, it's reputation was inevitably a little inferior.

Therefore, many people were unable to comprehend why Lin Dong would give up the strongest Yuan Gate and join the Dao Sect...

Lin Dong also felt a little helpless in the face of the surrounding commotion. The Yuan Gate was indeed extremely powerful. If he joined, he would indeed possess an extremely strong backer. However, it was clearly impossible for Lin Dong to do so due to Little Marten. Moreover, once Little Marten's identity was revealed and the Yuan Gate wanted to attack him, Lin Dong would definitely help Little Marten given his character. Therefore, he might even be expelled and hunted by the Yuan Gate. Since that was the case, why would he enter and go looking for trouble?

As for the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace, it was also quite powerful. However, Ling Qingzhu was there. Moreover, her status was definitely extremely high. Should Lin Dong enter with a disciple status, it would not be befitting of the arrogant words he had once spoken in front of her. Lin Dong could imagine just how awkward it would be after meeting Ling Qingzhu there as a disciple of the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace...

After some thought, Lin Dong had also eliminated the Great

## Desolate Palace and the Divine Sect.

Therefore, after much pondering, it appeared that the Dao Sect was most suitable for him, although that old fellow Wu Dao seemed to have some intention of cheating him...

The expressions of the eight super sect experts in the air were interesting after they heard Lin Dong's choice. Wu Dao's smiling face appeared as though it was a blooming flower. The remaining people had regretful faces. Only Liu Tong had a dark look flashing across his eyes. Lin Dong had given up the Yuan Gate and chose the Dao Sect. This had undoubtedly cause him to lose a great amount of face. It was unavoidable for him to be reprimanded for his bad performance when he returned this time around.

“Lin Dong, this decision is no trifling matter, and it concerns your future. Do not end up making a mistake that you will regret for the rest of your life.” Liu Tong faintly spoke. Everyone could hear some fury and a hidden threat in his voice.

Lin Dong's eyes hardened and felt some displeasure in his heart. Liu Tong was a little too narrow-minded. If the Yuan Gate were filled with such people, it would be far better not to join them.

“Liu Tong, choosing a sect is an individual's decision. These words of yours are really a little shameful.” Wu Dao raised his eyes and said.

“Your Yuan Gate might be strong but my Dao Sect is also no pushover. Back then, a single disciple of my Path Sect could charge

into your Yuan Gate and kill three great elders alone. How is such capability weak?”

“Wu Dao, you actually dare to bring this matter up?” Liu Tong’s expression changed drastically as he cried furiously.

“What this old man said is the truth. What can you do to me?” Wu Dao’s eyes also suddenly turned dark and cold at this moment. He stared at Liu Tong and slowly replied.

“Humph Wu Dao, that evil creature back then was someone from your Dao Sect Desolate Hall. Looks like your Desolate Hall still bears a grudge regarding this matter. Heh, if you are unhappy, you can come looking for us! That evil thing even forced our sect master to intervene, so at least he should be satisfied with his death.” Liu Tong’s expression was cold and stern as he spoke.

“You still dare to utter such nonsense? This old man shall cripple you today!”

A savage expression surged up on Wu Dao’s face at this moment. He suddenly took a step forward as monstrous Yuan Power immediately swept out.

His Yuan Power was extremely strange. It was as though it contained an extremely powerful energy. It rose endlessly while it fluctuated, appearing to be filled with an endless amount of vitality.

“Mysterious Life Stage?”

Liu Tong was clearly also able to sense Wu Dao’s bizarre Yuan Power. His pupils immediately shrunk tightly as he also cried out in fury, “Cripple me? You dare!”

A similarly incomparably majestic Yuan Power surged out from within Liu Tong’s body after the cry sounded out. Although it was inferior to Wu Dao, it was also extremely frightening.

The atmosphere in the sky instantly became hostile.

Everyone on the mountaintop watched the two people from the two super sects that had suddenly turned on each other, as a chill ran through their hearts. After which, numerous eyes turned towards Lin Dong. This fellow was really someone who caused trouble wherever he went...

## Chapter 636: Joining the Dao Sect

---

Majestic Yuan Power rippled in the sky, accompanied by an endless pressure as it spread. Under this pressure, everyone on the mountaintop felt the Yuan Power within their bodies begin to show signs of solidifying, immediately causing shock to arise in their hearts. As expected of the super sect experts, just their pressure alone was already so powerful...

Wu Dao and Liu Tong faced each other in the sky, a dark and cold look in their eyes. One could faintly see murderous desire surface within their eyes. It was very difficult to imagine that these two had joined forces to fight the experts from the Western Xuan Region not long ago. Now however, they showed signs that they were about to meet on the battlefield.

Lin Dong was also a little stunned when he saw this scene. Clearly, he also did not expect that the two of them would turn against each other so quickly. Moreover, it was obvious from their expressions that they would not hold back at all.

“Looks like there is something amiss between the Yuan Gate and the Dao Sect...” Lin Dong softly muttered.

“If that fellow from back then was allowed to grow smoothly, he would definitely be a giant like existence now. Such a loss was truly like cutting off the flesh of the Dao Sect. Do you think that kind of genius with both unparalleled talent and character was so easy to find?”

Lin Dong nodded slightly. He did not know much about that legendary ruthless senior from Dao Sect. Therefore, he was unaware of just how powerful this person would be now if he was allowed to live. However, from Little Marten's words, he could vaguely understand a little. After all, there were not many people who could get Little Marten, this proud fellow, to say such words.

“Why did that senior charge up to the Yuan Gate? Why did the chief of the Dao Sect sit back and let him be killed by the Yuan Gate?” Lin Dong could not help but ask.

“I am also not very certain about what happened back then. After all, it was a matter that occurred in the Eastern Xuan Region. However, even if the chief of the Dao Sect was to intervene, it was likely impossible to rescue that fellow. It was not without reason that the Yuan Gate could become the strongest super sect within the Eastern Xuan Region. Heh, otherwise... my Celestial Demon Marten tribe would have long charged over and killed all of them...” Little Marten laughed coldly.

Lin Dong fondled his chin. He had merely come from a low rank empire and he only possessed some vague perception about those super sects, that had only existed in the legends in the past. Hence, he was truly unable to tell just how strong they were...

When Lin Dong was softly conversing with Little Marten, the atmosphere in the midair also became increasingly tense. However, just when the aura of the two rose to the peak, the experts from the remaining super sects at the side finally opened their mouths.

“You two, now is the time to select disciples. The both of you are also considered as elders within your own sects. Doing such an impulsive thing will give these disciples a bad impression.” The one who spoke first was the pretty lady from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace. Her eyebrows were slightly vertical. She appeared quite elegant.

“Haha, that’s right. It is not good for the both of you to fight here. Since Lin Dong has chosen to join the Dao Sect, we will naturally allow him to follow his desire. Saying anything else will only make us seem too narrow-minded.” That old man, who was carrying a sword case on his back, also laughed faintly.

The remaining experts from the super sects at the side also nodded upon hearing this, indicating their agreement.

A deep expression flashed in the depth of Liu Tong’s eyes when he saw this. He was aware that the other super sects were upset over the fact that their Yuan Gate had monopolized the past few Hundred Empire War champions. Now that it was possible for them not to allow the Yuan Gate to become the greatest beneficiary from this Hundred Empire War, all of these fellows were happy to quietly add insult to injury.

“Humph.”

Although Liu Tong felt displeased within his heart, he also understood that it was impossible to alter the situation. All he could do was to let out a cold snort. He swung his sleeve and withdraw the majestic Yuan Power into his body. After which, he stared at Wu Dao in a dark and cold manner. He said, “Forget it. It

is difficult for your Dao Sect to stand out. We shall give in to you this time around. However, I'm afraid that you will teach your disciples wrongly and end up ruining their future."

"There is no need for you to worry about it." Wu Dao spoke in a faint voice.

"Heh, you should wait until the next Great Sect Competition before uttering those words. I'm afraid that you will end up losing quite a number of young Dao Sect geniuses at that time." Liu Tong laughed.

Wu Dao's expression immediately sunk when he heard this. The Great Sect Competition was a place where the various super sects in the Eastern Xuan Region used actual battle to train their disciples. The Dao Sect was specifically targeted by the Yuan Gate during these years. Quite a number of talented striking disciples were attacked viciously by the young experts from the Yuan Gate during the Great Sect Competition. This had ended up resulting in quite a great lost for the Dao Sect.

Liu Tong looked at Wu Dao's dark and sunken expression. Only then did his heart feel a little better. He waved his sleeves and coldly said, "Alright, let's not talk nonsense. Hurry up and choose the disciples."

Wu Dao ruthlessly stared at Liu Tong. After which, he turned his eyes away. His gaze looked towards the mountain top and he spoke in a deep voice, "Those present who are willing to join my Dao Sect should release their aura. Those who are not willing only need to keep their aura in their bodies."



Some commotion was emitted on the mountain top after Wu Dao's voice sounded. Soon after waves after waves of auras surged out. Only a minority kept their auras. No matter how one put it, the Dao Sect could also be considered one of the better ranked super sect within the Eastern Xuan Region. Hence, it was quite a good opportunity to join them.

Wu Dao looked at this scene before his expression became a little warmer. After which, he shook his sleeves. A large curtain of light appeared. Finally, they transformed into numerous light pillars that covered some of the stronger human figures on the mountaintop one after another.

Lin Dong watched Wu Dao, who was beginning to select disciples. He mused for a moment before suddenly looking at Mo Ling, Liu Bai and the others. He asked, "Are all of you willing to join the Dao Sect?"

Mo Ling and the rest were startled upon hearing this. They immediately spoke in a somewhat embarrassed manner, "We are not considered top notch in this place. Even if we wish to join the Dao Sect, it will depend on whether the other party is willing to accept us..."

Dao Sect was also one of the eight super sects. Why would they not want to join them? However, they were after all not Lin Dong and were not able to choose. All they could do was to wait for those experts from the super sects to select them...

Lin Dong smiled. He was going to head to the super sect next. That place was a foreign land and it was boring for him to go alone. If he could bring Mo Ling, Liu Bai and the rest along, they could be considered a team. It was always good to have more people no matter where one went. Moreover, he and Mo Ling trio came from the Great Yan Empire and they had managed to fight all the way to this place with much difficulty. Naturally, he did not wish to see them fail to be selected. Additionally, if he could bring the three of them into the Dao Sect and word of it was to be transmitted back to the Great Yan Empire, it was likely that the royal family of the Great Yan Empire and the others should know how to repay this favour.

Swoosh swoosh!

Just when Lin Dong was preparing to speak to Wu Dao, a light pillar from the sky had already fell, covering Mo Ling, Liu Bai, Yan Sen, Mu Hong Ling and the rest within it.

“This old fellow...”

The corner of Lin Dong’s mouth was lifted into a smile when he saw this scene. It seemed that this old Wu Dao was constantly focusing on him. This old man was interesting. From the looks of it, he was clearly thinking of repaying some of Lin Dong’s debt from before.

Mo Ling and the rest also had excited faces. Their eyes were filled with gratitude when they looked at Lin Dong. All of them understood that if it was not because of Lin Dong, it would be quite difficult for them to join the Dao Sect given their talent.

“I also want to join the Dao Sect.”

Standing beside him, Su Rou was a little anxious when she saw this scene. The young lady was unable to control her emotions. She immediately raised her hand and her big eyes looked at Wu Dao. That innocent manner caused quite a number of people to smile when looking at her.

Wu Dao involuntarily laughed softly upon seeing this. He waved his sleeves and a light pillar headed towards Su Ruo. However, the light pillar had just shot out when it was suddenly shattered by a Yuan Power.

“Haha, Wu Dao, leave this little girl to my Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace. She should be a little better off coming to my place. I wonder if you can do this favour for my Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace?” That pretty woman from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace stepped forward and spoke with a somewhat embarrassed face.

Su Rou had caught her attention since the beginning. She was a little unable to control herself now that she saw this girl being about to be selected by Wu Dao. That was why she suddenly intervened.

Wu Dao was also startled. He hesitated as he looked towards Lin Dong.

“I want to go to the Dao Sect!” Su Ruo’s pretty face became a

little anxious as she cried after seeing this scene.

The pretty woman's figure moved and directly appeared in front of Su Rou. After which, she extended her hand and touched the latter's face while adopting a gentle expression. She smiled slightly and softly said, "Little girl, it is a good thing to chase after your lover. However, at times, pestering the other party too much will cause him to feel irritated. You are currently too weak. If you come to my Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace, you will definitely be able to become strong very quickly. Only then will you be able to capture a man's heart when you meet him in the future..."

Swoosh.

Su Rou was merely a young girl who had yet to experience the world. How could she resist such words from this beautiful woman. Immediately, her face turned fiery hot. Her small hands forcefully entangled together. Clearly, she was at a huge loss.

Standing beside her, Lin Dong did not hear what the pretty woman had said. However, he was happy that Su Rou was so highly valued by this expert from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace. Of course, he did not overdo it by saying anything else. He would still respect Su Rou's final decision.

The words from the pretty woman in front of her earlier had clearly left a strong impression on her heart. After she hesitated for a long while with a boiling red face, she finally made up her mind and nodded. She timidly asked, "If I join the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace, will my big brother be able to do so too?"

Su Kui, who was standing beside Su Rou, involuntarily rubbed his head in embarrassment when he heard Su Rou's words.

"Of course." A joy flashed across the pretty eyes of the beautiful woman when she saw Su Rou nodding as she immediately agreed to her request. Su Kui's talent might not have caught her eye but she was willing to overlook it in order to recruit Su Ruo.

"Big brother Lin Dong, I will not be following you to the Dao Sect. I will go to the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace..." Su Ruo turned her head before she summoned her courage and told Lin Dong.

"Aye, you should make your own decision. We will not be beside you when you train at that place. Therefore, you cannot act like before." Lin Dong smiled slightly. He extended his hand, rubbed Su Rou's head and said.

"Understood."

Su Rou's big eyes became a little red because of Lin Dong's words. Her eyes were filled with reluctance. Although she had experienced many dangerous battles after following Lin Dong's group and she would be occasionally scolded by Little Marten, she was able to sense that everyone was treating her sincerely.

"The interior of the super sect is not as peaceful as you imagined. You should change that timid character of yours in the future. Do not come crying to us when the time comes. No one will bother

about you.” Little Marten still had that lazy manner that could anger a person to death. However, only a person familiar with him would be able to discover a little gentleness on his handsome demon like face.

Su Rou was clearly already used to this kind of impolite speech from Little Marten. Moreover, she was also able to sense a kind of concern from it. She immediately nodded solemnly at his words.

While they were chatting, Wu Dao in the sky had already finished his selection. Being the first sect which could select disciples, he had clearly gained a great benefit. Hence, his old face was filled with smiles.

After he had complete his selection, the remaining seven super sects’ experts finally began their selection. Light pillars immediately covered the sky. They were just like numerous light pillars that divided these geniuses from various empires on the mountain.

Lin Dong could not resist smiling as he looked at the mountaintop which was covered by an excited atmosphere. He stretched his lazy waist and turned his head. His gaze leaped past the core region and looked towards the distant area that could not be reached...

One year ago, those few people that had come from a low rank empire had stumbled and charged into this Ancient Battlefield, where numerous experts gathered. At that time, they were the lowest existence in this battlefield. It was likely that even Lin Dong at that time was unable to imagine that he would ultimately surpass those geniuses that had come from the super empires and

become the most dazzling existence in this Hundred Empire War...

A smile was lifted on the corner of Lin Dong's mouth. He could already imagine just what kind of great storm it would cause in the Great Yan Empire when this news was transmitted back there.

# Chapter 637: Conclusion of the Hundred Empire War

---

Curtains of light covered the Hundred Empire Mountain top. Nearly everyone who could make it to the mountain top had a Heaven Grade Nirvana Seal and most of them were fairly talented. Therefore, with the exception of a few individuals, most of them would be selected by the super sects. However, they would only become disciples after entering the super sects. If they wanted to improve and become direct disciples, they would still have to work rather hard.

At this stage, the Hundred Empire War had officially concluded. However, this domain would remain open for a period of time. During this period, the super sects would continue to monitor this place. If there were other stellar performers, they would be accepted by the super sects. Of course, the disciples that were taken in during the second round would have a 'Second' marked in front of their names and their status would be lower than ordinary disciples.

Even though they were only branch disciples, it was still extremely desirable for most. After all, the super sects were extremely stringent...

As the disciples were distributed, the Hundred Empire War officially came to an end.

Lin Dong stood to one side, and a sea of black bobbed heads gathered behind him. All of them looked to him with respect and admiration. All of them were now disciples of Dao Sect and Lin



Dong's status would definitely exceed them. Hence, regardless of what empire they came from, they no longer dared to act arrogantly in front of him.

“Now that the Hundred Empire War has ended, all of you will follow me to the Dao Sect. News of what has happened here will swiftly spread back to your own respective empires. Meanwhile, the rewards from the Dao Sect will soon be delivered to your empires.” Wu Dao stared at that crowd before he stroked his beard and spoke.

Wu Dao's words obviously caused grateful expressions to surface on many faces. All of them represented their empires to take part in the Hundred Empire War. Now that they had finally succeeded, when they thought of the joy that this news would bring to their own empires, all of them were overjoyed.

There were countless empires in the Eastern Xuan Region and many new empires were destroyed and created daily. Therefore, one way to judge the strength of an empire was by the number of members who had joined a super sect. Even though the super sects would not intervene in the wars between the empires, the disciples who had joined the super sects would be naturally unwilling to see their own empires be destroyed. Therefore, once their empires are in danger, those disciples would naturally come to their aid.

Of course, it would be fine if those disciples merely held an ordinary status in the super sects. However, if those disciples were truly valued by their super sect, their super sect would not ignore their plight as well. As such, their super sect would likely intervene as well.

It was precisely because of this reason that the empires in the Eastern Xuan Region tried desperately to send members to the super sect in hopes of gaining their protection and ensure the longevity of their empires.

“Buzz buzz!”

After Wu Do spoke, his hand seals instantly changed. Majestic Yuan Power quickly gathered in front of him before directly transforming into a giant formation a moment later. Brilliant rays of light swirled across his formation.

All of the super sects had constructed a space imprint in the Ancient Battlefield and they could activate it at will to send members back to their own sects.

Lin Dong watched as the now complete formation as he involuntarily took in a deep breath. Was it finally time to go...

“Let’s go.”

Regret lingered in his heart for a moment, before Lin Dong took the first step into the formation without any hesitation. Soon after, Little Marten, Little Flame and the rest quickly followed behind him.

After the last individual stepped into the formation, the dazzling light began to flow. Lin Dong lifted his head and took one last peek

at this domain. In the end, a trace of anticipation flowed deep within his eyes.

Eastern Xuan Region, Super Sects and... Ling Qingzhu...

I, Lin Dong... am coming...

Dazzling light exploded in the skies. When it reached its peak, it suddenly vanished, and as the light vanished, it took that crowd along as well.

One year of hard work. The Hundred Empire War had finally ended.

Great Yan Empire, Imperial City.

The smell of incense lingered across the quiet yet majestic imperial study, causing one to feel invigorated. In the middle of the study, a muscular figure was quietly browsing through the various documents on his desk. A faint yet powerful aura was emitted from his body.

The fearsome tiger of the imperial family, Mo Jingtian, and the current ruler of the Great Yan Empire. After a year, his aura was clearly stronger than before.

Bang!

The serene study room was suddenly disrupted by an extremely piercing noise of the door opening. Mo Jingtian's face instantly darkened. He lifted his head and was just about to erupt in rage when a faint yet sharp voice was transmitted into his ears.

“Your majesty, the Hundred Empire War is over!”

Swoosh!

The rage on Mo Jingtian's face instantly disappeared together with his originally gloomy expression. He suddenly stood up, his voice a little shaky due to anxiety, “What about Mo Ling?”

“Your Majesty, the third prince has been accepted by Dao Sect, one of the eight great super sects!” The man was overjoyed as he replied in a trembling tone.

“Dao Sect?!”

Even a man like Mo Jingtian could not help but involuntarily suck in a breath of cold air as he stood in shock. There were many super sects in Eastern Xuan Region. However, he knew of the eight strongest ones. He had originally thought that it would be great if Mo Ling could enter any of the super sects. However, Mo Ling was actually chosen by one of the eight great super sects, the Dao Sect...

That was one of the largest factions in the entire Eastern Xuan Region!

“How is this possible?” Mo Jingtian was so shocked that it took him a moment to recover. Promptly, he muttered to himself. He was clearly aware of the cruel nature of the Hundred Empire War. In fact, there was no one who had accomplished such a feat ever since the founding of his Great Yan Empire.

“Your majesty, not only did the third prince join the Dao Sect, even Du Yun, Man Shan and the rest have joined Dao Sect!”

This sensational news stunned Mo Jingtian so greatly that he fell back into his seat. There was actually three members that had been selected by the Dao Sect. Did that not mean that their Great Yan Empire now had three super sect members?

“How is this possible?” Waves of disbelief continuously struck Mo Jingtian’s heart. He stared at the messenger, his hand continuously toying with a jade ball, as he muttered to himself.

“It is all because of Lin Dong!”

The messenger’s face was still filled with an almost maniacal joy. Obviously, this was the most shocking news that he had received in his life.

“Lin Dong? That Lin Dong from the Lin Clan?” Mo Jingtian was startled as he said.

“He was crowned as the champion of this Hundred Empire War and the Dao Sect highly values him. That is why they decided to

accept the third prince and the rest!”

Boom!

That rare jade stone in Mo Jingtian’s hand was instantly turned to dust. However, he had no time to feel any regret about it. As he stared in shock at the man in front of him, a single word continuously filled his mind...

“Hundred Empire War... Champion?!”

Mo Jingtian’s palm gently trembled as he tugged his sleeves. At this moment, his pupils had unknowingly shrunk. He clearly knew what this title represented...

This title represented the most capable younger generation member in the entire Eastern Xuan Region!

In the past, such an individual typically came from super empire. Low rank empires like them were basically treated as cannon fodder in the Hundred Empire War. In fact, even surviving was a challenge. To contend for the championship spot would merely bring disgrace to themselves!

However, a youth from their Great Yan Empire had stood out in the Hundred Empire War and now stood at its peak...

The shock caused by this news made Mo Jingtian unable to breathe!

“Are you certain?” Mo Jingtian opened his dry mouth as he asked in a coarse voice.

“Your Majesty, this is the Yuan Spirit message sent by Dao Sect.” The man quickly took out a golden glowing ball. Within the golden glowing ball was a golden piece of paper.

Mo Jingtian quickly received it. The imposing aura given off by the glowing globe caused the Yuan Power in his body to solidify. He knew that his news was genuine.

“That kid...” Mo Jingtian pursed his lips as an image of the scrawny young man from one year ago flashed past in his mind. At that time, he would not even have dreamt that Lin Dong would accomplish such a feat. Looks like it was a good move to ask Mo Ling and the rest to follow Lin Dong.

“A truly terrifying fellow has emerged from the Lin Clan...” Mo Jingtian solemnly sighed. There was an unconcealed envy within his words.

“Your Majesty, there has been quite a few skirmishes recently between the Lin Clan and the Wang Clan...”

“Send word to the Wang Clan, from this day on, the Lin Clan is now the leader of the Four Great Clans. If they do not know how to behave themselves...” Mo Jingtian’s eyes narrowed as a trace of killing intent slowly emerged.

“Yes!”

The messenger’s heart was shocked. Looks like the Wang Clan was truly unfortunate this time. In fact, was there anyone in the Great Yan Empire who would dare to oppose the Lin Clan in future?

“Your Majesty, the Yuan Spirit Message should have also been sent to the Lin Clan and the other factions in the empire...”

Mo Jingtian slowly nodded his head. He knew that from this day on, the Lin Clan would become the most powerful faction in the empire. In fact, even their Imperial Family would not dare to do anything to them.

Because, the Lin Clan had produced a Lin Dong.



# Chapter 638: Dazzling Great Yan

---

Great Yan Province, Lin City.

As the hometown of the Lin Clan, Lin City was always fairly crowded, and its size also placed it amongst the top cities in the empire. From a distance away, it looked impressive and majestic.

At the center of Lin City, the clan meeting hall, which was usually reserved for special occasions, was currently filled with a massive crowd. All kinds of noises gathered together, the resulting buzzing noise making one feel as if one was in a beehive.

All the Lin Clan elders were present at the middle of the meeting hall, and at this very moment, all of their attention was directed towards the chief's seat. A man was seated at that spot. An absent-minded look currently filled his usually fearsome face.

“Clan Leader.”

As the most senior elder in the clan, Lin Mu could not help but cough gently as he watched Lin Fan's expression. Half an hour ago, Lin Fan had issued the highest command in the clan and summoned all the elders back to their headquarters. One should know that this command had only ever been issued twice ever since the founding of the Lin Clan.

Furthermore, both times concerned the survival of the Lin Clan, and this time was likely no exception.

When their thoughts reached this point, the elders' expressions faintly changed. Had something monumental happened?

Lin Mu's soft cough awoke the dazed Lin Fan. His eyes slowly swept across the hall, as the noise instantly died down.

"Haha."

Soon after Lin Fan's eyes swept across the hall, he suddenly started laughing mysteriously. As he lifted his head, his laughter grew louder and louder until even tears started trickling out of his eyes.

Every elder and senior member in the hall was petrified till their faces turned pale. Just what kind of huge incident had occurred? To actually shock the clan leader to such an extent?

At one side of the hall, Lin Ke-er, who was wearing a white dress, turned pale when she saw Lin Fan's actions. Her jade-like hands involuntarily gripped tightly onto her father's arm.

"Clan Leader, is this because of some nefarious plot by the Wang Clan? Rest assured Clan Leader, regardless of their tactics, our Lin Clan is not so easily bullied!" Lin Mu spoke out in a low voice.

"If the Wang Clan dares to declare war on us, our Lin Clan will battle them till the death!" Another elder sternly shouted.

“Right!”

In the meeting hall, the crowds were angered until the atmosphere turned boiling hot.

Lin Fan’s laughter gradually subsided. He wiped his face and promptly waved his hands, before he spoke in a somewhat coarsely voice, “Elders, you do not worry. In the future, the Wang Clan will no longer dare to display even the tiniest bit of disrespect to our Lin Clan...”

“Huh?”

The elders who were originally planning to fight to the death were instantly stunned. All of them were confused as they turned toward Lin Fan.

“The Hundred Empire War is over...” Lin Fan softly said.

“Hundred Empire War?”

All the elders were once again shocked. Promptly, they recovered their senses as joy filled their faces, “Was someone from our Lin Clan selected by a super sect?”

Lin Fan slowly nodded his head.

Crash!

The atmosphere in the meeting hall instantly erupted while exuberant cheers poured forth and swamped every corner of the hall.

“It must be Lin Langtian! I’m afraid he is the only one who can do so in our Lin Clan!”

“That may not be the case. Lin Dong is not weak and even Lin Langtian can’t handle him.”

“I think that Lin Langtian has a better chance. After all, his talents have been acknowledged by everyone here...”

“Yes. He is indeed the most outstanding talent in our Lin Clan. Heh, that branch family kid merely got lucky...”

“Once news of this gets out, they will probably lose their final backing...”

In the corner of the hall, Lin Ke-er gently bit her red lips and secretly sighed in her heart when she saw the exploding atmosphere in the hall. Did Lin Dong lose to Lin Langtian in the end?

“He has joined one of the eight great super sects in Eastern Xuan Region, the Dao Sect.” Lin Fan’s mumbling voice slowly spread, suppressing the din in the hall.

“One of the eight great super sects, the Dao Sect?” Everyone’s eyes instantly widened. Such an existence was simply beyond their imagination.

“In this Hundred Empire War, he surpassed the talents from the various empires and took the champion spot.”

The large hall turned completely silent and everyone felt a little breathless. The champion of the Hundred Empire War? Ever since the founding of Great Yan Empire, no one had ever accomplished such a feat right? To think that someone from their Lin Clan had actually done it?

Lin Fan lifted his head. A trace of blood in his eyes as he stared at everyone present, his soft voice still trembling as he announced, “It’s Lin Dong.”

Crack! Several chairs instantly exploded in the meeting hall as several people fell on their butts to the ground. However, no one took notice of them as they stared in disbelief at Lin Fan.

The person who had been selected by one of the eight great super sects, the Dao Sect, the one who surpassed the geniuses of the various empires and towered over the rest. Lin Dong?!

The branch family member from Yan City, Lin Dong?!

Lin Ke-er’s jade-like hand was covered her red lips in surprise. The shock in her heart almost made her faint...

She never imagined that the one to create such miracles would actually be Lin Dong!

Lin Ke-er was dazed as she reminisced about the incident that had occurred in the old tomb outside Yan City. The scrawny young man covered in bloody wounds, who stubbornly continued to struggle under Lin Langtian's pressure.

In a few year, the injured young wolf had undergone a metamorphosis and was now an eagle that soared through the skies...

“Clan Leader, is this true?” Lin Mu opened his mouth and spoke, before realizing that his voice was a little coarse. He had placed Lin Dong in rather high regards. However, even he had never expected that Lin Dong could actually accomplish such a feat in the Hundred Empire War. A place where numerous geniuses from everywhere gathered together.

Lin Fan slowly nodded his head. Promptly, he placed both of his palms on a table to push himself up. As he stared at the crowd, his solemn voice filled with an authoritative tone slowly sounded out.

“Immediately inform the Yan City branch family that Lin Zhentian is appointed as the supreme elder of Lin Clan. Lin Xiao, Lin Ken, Lin Mang and the rest will all be invited into become elders. If anyone dares to badmouth the Yan City branch family in future...”

Lin Fan's suddenly stopped, as a shocking killing intent surged onto his face.

“Will be immediately banished from the clan! Regardless of his status!”

The entire hall turned silent immediately. As everyone gazed at Lin Fan's solemn expression, all of elders who were prejudiced against the Yan City branch family immediately shut their mouths. All of them clearly knew that the Yan City branch family would become the most powerful and untouchable existence in the entire Lin Clan, and maybe even the entire Great Yan Empire!

All of this was because... Lin Dong came from the Yan City branch family!

The Yan City branch family of the Lin Clan had produced a Hundred Empire War champion!

This news quickly swept across the entire empire like a hurricane. Every part of the empire was completely stunned by this news.

Any faction who knew a little about the Hundred Empire War was completely shocked by this news. It was shocking beyond imagination.

None of them could imagine how a branch family kid from a low rank empire was able to accomplish such a feat. A feat that not

even the geniuses from the various super empires could pull off. However, reality had been laid bare in front of them and all they could do was bitterly grit their teeth and curse in a slightly envious tone.

“That monster...”

Yan City.

This city was now clearly the most happening place in the entire Great Yan Empire. For several days, their Lin Family had been completely flooded by various congratulatory messages. Every faction, even those with whom they were not acquainted with, showed up to congratulate them. This caused a massive headache for the Lin Family.

In the mountain situated behind the Lin Family, Lin Xiao squatted in front of a bamboo house within a bamboo forest. There were several wooden poles nearby. This was the place where Lin Dong had trained at back then.

Lin Xiao's rough and large hands caressed the wooden stakes that were filled with cracks, as if he could still see the scrawny figure that used to train here back then.

“You have been here for one entire day. Aren't you tired?” Footsteps sounded out behind Lin Xiao, before a large coat was gently placed over the latter's back.



“How are father and the rest?” Lin Xiao turned around and looked at Liu Yan, before he asked with a smile.

“Ever since father heard the news, he has yet to close his mouth.” Liu Yan gently smiled and replied.

“Dong-er is truly outstanding. Even more outstanding than his old man...” Lin Xiao sighed. However, the pride and contentment on his face could not be concealed.

“Dong-er must have suffered tremendously during the Hundred Empire War.” Liu Yan was somewhat upset as she spoke. She was not like Lin Xiao and the rest, who only saw Lin Dong’s accomplishments. As his mother, she was clearly aware that based on Lin Dong’s stubborn character, he must have suffered tremendously in that place.

“He is a man. His shoulders are meant to carry heavy burdens. Dong-er is tremendously talented and the small Great Yan Empire is not enough to contain him. As his father, I am really proud to have a son like him. Haha.” Lin Xiao laughed heartily.

“It is all because of you. Not only is Dong-er like this, even that lass Qingtan is the same. A girl should stay at home, how dare she secretly run off!”

As if she had remembered something, Liu Yan’s eyes were red as she spoke angrily, “If something happens to Qingtan, I want to see if you can live with yourself for the rest of your life!”

“Haha, that lass can’t let go of Dong-er and she wants to chase after him. There is no helping it. Furthermore, the elder following her is extremely powerful and must have an extraordinary background. With her protection, Qingtan should be fine.” Lin Xiao laughed as he said.

“As for the argument that you had with that lass, after her brother knows, she will have to face the consequences. Haha.”

Liu Yan softly sighed. There was no point in discussion such matters at this time. As she recalled how that normally obedient lass actually argued with her over this matter, she felt suffocated in her heart.

“Don’t worry, the younger generation will do alright on their own.”

Lin Xiao smiled as he hugged Liu Yan. Promptly, he lifted his head and stared at the distant sky before muttering to himself, “Dong-er, since you want to explore, go out and explore the world. A man should do so. However, it doesn’t matter how famous you become, if you are tired, you can always return home. Father may not be as accomplished as you, but I will make sure that you will never suffer when I am around.”

# Chapter 639: Dao Region, Dao Sect!

---

The Eastern Xuan Region, a continent that contained an endless number of legends. Since ancient times, numerous great world-shaking experts were born in these lands. The strength they possessed shook their predecessors and illuminated the way for new generations of practitioners. Their great might and dignity still shocked and awed people all over the world even after hundreds or thousands of years. At the same time, it also caused countless people to feel a degree of respect towards this place.

The empires within the Eastern Xuan Region were as numerous as the stars in the sky. Empires rose and fell everyday, and an endless competition shrouded the entire continent.

The true rulers of this land that towered over those uncountable empires were the titanic beings known as the super sects.

They sat above all empires and possessed inheritances from the ancient times.

Amongst these super sects, there were eight great super sects stood at the pinnacle.

The Yuan Gate, Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace, Dao Sect, Thousand Puppet Sect, Symbol Valley, Sword Sect, Great Desolate Palace and Divine Sect.

These eight great super sects were the true overlords of this land. The strength that each of them possessed could instantly destroy

any empire.

Of course, in this continent that riddled with scuffles, even the super sects were unable to completely detach themselves. Not only did the eight great super sects have numerous conflicts between themselves, there were also quite a number of other super sects eyeing their positions.

After all, though the eight great super sects might be the strongest within the Eastern Xuan Region, there were more than eight super sects. The strength of some of these remaining super sects might be lacking in comparison, but they were no pushovers either. After all, everyone wished to climb upwards in this world.

On the whole however, the structure of the current Eastern Xuan Region was still being controlled by the eight great super sects. However, there was still an endless amount of undercurrents present under this seemingly calm surface.

The eight great super sects stood in eight different directions of the Eastern Xuan Region like great divine beings. They were just like the guardians of the land.

There was a vast mountain range tens of thousands of kilometres wide in the south-western area of the Eastern Xuan Region. This mountain range was covered by clouds and mist all year round, an incomparably mysterious sight.

This extremely large mountain range was called the Dao Region. Located in the Dao Region was one of the Eastern Xuan Region's

eight great super sects, the Dao Sect.

Hundreds and thousands of empires dotted the area around this Dao Region. These empires viewed the Dao Sect as their leader and treated the Dao Sect as a holy land. They also relied on the Dao Sect to survive.

Deep within this endlessly vast Dao Region mountain range, there was an area covered in mist that was clearly split off from everywhere else. Countless extremely tall and large mountains clustered together here. One could vaguely see an endless number of grand buildings on the top of these enormous mountains.

Numerous cities appeared under this fog under the cluster of giant mountains. It was extremely lively there. From a great distance away, it appeared just like a country.

In the deepest part of the mountain range, an enormous curtain of light spanning several tens of thousands of feet flowed down from the sky like a dome. It's size was so overwhelming that it appeared as though even day and night were under it.

One could see numerous large halls within the light curtain that gave off an ancient and vicissitude aura. Wind sounds echoed endlessly in the skies within this dome, and if one looked down from above, it was possible to see many ant like figures charging through the clouds with an indescribable ancient majestic feeling.

Buzz!

At this moment, the light curtain in the distant sky suddenly distorted. After which, a large amount of light gathered, before finally transforming into an enormous formation. Hundreds of figures appeared within the formation in a flash of light, and were instantly dumbstruck when their eyes were shifted downwards.

“Hiss...”

At the front of the crowd, Lin Dong’s face was filled with shock due to the scene below. Soon after, he inhaled a deep breath of cool air, before once again gazing at the light curtain before him that seemingly covered the sky. After which, he turned towards the enormous mountain and the ancient aura that it contained. It felt as if he had time-travelled back to the ancient times.

Although the Ancient Treasure Trove was quite large, it was after all only some ruins, while the place that currently appeared in front of Lin Dong’s eyes, was a genuine super sect!

A great being of this world!

“Welcome to the Dao Sect.” Wu Dao smilingly watched the group of people who were seemingly shocked to the limit. There was some pride on his face as he laughed.

“This is the Dao Sect huh...”

Lin Dong involuntarily licked his lips. He had once envied the disciples of the ancient sects when the ancient sect remains. Never

did he imagine that would now be able to enjoy the same privileges.

“Let’s go, follow me into Dao Sect. All of you are still not considered as true Dao Sect disciples. Do not randomly roam around.” Wu Dao waved his sleeves as a golden light rushed out, before entering the light curtain.

Buzz buzz!

The light barrier rippled a little, and the faint undulations that resulted caused Lin Dong’s scalp to feel numb. He was truly unable to imagine just who had constructed such a frightening defence.

“There is a formation hidden within the light curtain, and is likely a great ancient sect formation of the Dao Sect. If it is activated, even an expert at the Mysterious Life Stage will be destroyed immediately until nothing remains. Even the strongest of Life Qi would be unable to save him.” Little Marten’s expression was also somewhat grave, as he observed the light curtain in front of him. Even he felt an extreme amount of danger from this light curtain.

Lin Dong nodded, not feeling surprised at all. It would be strange if something that was used by the Dao Sect as their great sect protecting formation did not possess such power.

The light barrier rippled as a pathway was slowly being torn open. Wu Dao waved his hand and the light array that had followed Lin Dong’s group entered the interior of the Dao Sect

with him as he rushed through the light door.

Bang!

The moment they entered the light door, Lin Dong's group sensed a rich and almost viscous natural Yuan Power pounce at them. Their bodies were immediately shaken by the sudden change, and some of them were flipped by this Yuan Power hurricane.

“Such rich natural Yuan Power!”

As Lin Dong felt the Yuan Power that permeated this land, his facial expression immediately changed a little. The natural Yuan Power of the world within this light curtain was likely over a dozen times richer than that of the outside world. Clearly, this was a powerful tactic that the Dao Sect had employed. It forcefully and continuously absorbed the natural Yuan Power from hundreds of thousands of kilometres around into the Dao Sect for its disciples to use.

This move was truly a little terrifying.

Swoosh swoosh!

While Lin Dong's group was in shock due to the terrifying Yuan Power, a dozen rainbows rushed across the sky. Finally, they transformed into a dozen human figures wearing dark red robes.



These people had hurried over to take a look because of the arrival of Lin Dong's group. Their faces only relaxed when they saw Wu Dao.

"Greetings deputy hall chief Wu Dao." The dozen figures respectfully cupped their hands together and bowed.

"These are the disciples selected from the Hundred Empire War." Wu Dao softly chuckled as he casually explained.

The dozen figures only came to a sudden comprehension at this moment. Their eyes immediately swept over Lin Dong's large group. There was some sternness within their eyes and quite a number of people avoided their gaze. Evidently pressured by the aura from their bodies.

"As expected of the Dao Sect. Just patrolling disciples alone are already so powerful..." Lin Dong's heart was slightly shaken because of their powerful auras. From what he could tell, the strength of this group were all at or above the five Yuan Nirvana stage. Moreover, their fighting strength was clearly much greater than an ordinary five Yuan Nirvana stage expert. Otherwise, they would not possess such a demeanor.

Although their auras were strong, they did not cause Lin Dong any pressure. With his current strength, he could contend against a six Yuan Nirvana stage expert. Moreover, in terms of tactics, he did not really fear these disciples.

After the patrolling disciples' eyes swept around, they paused a

little longer on Lin Dong's group. Clearly, these people had also sensed they were somewhat extraordinary. They immediately nodded quietly. It seemed like the Hundred Empire War had produced quite a number of decent disciples...

“Deputy hall chief Wu Dao, please lead these disciples and head to the Hall Selection Stage. The other three great hall deputy chiefs are already waiting.” A patrolling disciple spoke respectfully to Wu Dao.

Wu Dao frowned a little upon hearing these words. He snorted, “These fellows are already unable to wait any longer and anxiously want to recruit some new members huh?”

The patrolling disciples were a little embarrassed when they heard this, but they did not dare to say anything in response.

“Go, go, I know what to do.”

Wu Dao waved his hand in an irritable manner and chased the patrolling disciples away. After which, he waved his hand with a somewhat gloomy face and led everyone towards a large mountain in the distance, which was covered by clouds.

Lin Dong looked at Wu Dao, who had a somewhat ugly expression. He did not understand why the latter would suddenly become displeased.

“There are four great halls where the Dao Sects groom its

disciples. They are named Sky, Earth, Flood and Desolate. Based on what I know, the Sky Hall should currently be the strongest, the Earth Hall is second while the Desolate Hall is last. Wu Dao is the deputy hall chief of the Desolate Hall.”

“The disciples that enter the Dao Sect will choose one of the four halls. However, since the Desolate Hall is ranked last, those with great talent will usually be poached by the Sky Hall and the Earth Hall.” Little Marten’s voice sounded out beside Lin Dong’s ears and resolved the doubt within the latter’s heart.

“Which hall should I join then?” Lin Dong immediately understood, and asked softly.

Little Marten mused for a moment before slowly spitting out two words.

“Desolate Hall.”

# Chapter 640: Four Great Mysterious Scriptures

---

Desolate Hall?

After listening to the name that came out of Little Marten's mouth, Lin Dong gawked and said with a little doubt: "Didn't you say that the Desolate Hall was the weakest?"

"At the beginning, there was no difference between the the four halls of the Dao Sect and only during the later period, did a slight difference emerge. During that time, the strongest was not the Sky hall, but the Desolate Hall." Little Marten said casually.

"Oh?" Lin Dong was somewhat astonished, as he had never imagined that the currently bottom ranked Desolate Hall actually had a period of glory.

"So why are they ranked last now?" Lin Dong asked.

"Within the four great halls of the Dao Sect, there are 4 great mysterious scriptures, Sky Hall's "Heavenly King's Scripture", Earth Hall's "Earth King's Scripture", Flood Hall's "Flood Scripture" and lastly Desolate Hall's "Great Desolation Scripture"..."

"These four great mysterious scriptures are the top martial arts of the Dao Sect, and their creator was an extremely frightening existence even during the primordial times. The scripture that is

most obscure is the “Great Desolation Scripture”.” Little Marten said as his expression slowly turning serious. This change in expression and his rarely seen serious expression allowed Lin Dong to understand the might of the “Great Desolation Scripture”.

“Although the “Great Desolation Scripture” is extremely powerful, it too has a weakness. That is, it is extremely demanding on the individuals who tried to comprehend it. Therefore, till this present age, although many talents have been recruited into the halls, the number of people that managed to comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture” can be counted using one hand.”

“Since there was no one who could comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture”, it was natural that elite disciples of the Desolate Hall could not compete with their counterparts of the three other halls, who were able to comprehend the three other great mysterious scriptures. Therefore, year by year passed with them remaining at the bottom.”

Lin Dong thought that this was very obvious, as the four great mysterious scriptures were the trump cards of the four great halls. However, it seems like the Desolate Hall was especially unlucky to own a seemingly unrivalled but extremely obscure “Great Desolation Scripture”. To a certain degree, no matter how powerful it was, if one was unable to understand it, it was still useless.

“Of course, Desolate Hall is actually biding their time, as they only need one disciple who is able to comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture” by a stroke of destiny. With that, they will be able to completely reverse the situation. At that time, winning

back the title of the number one Hall in one stroke would not be a surprising feat.” Little Marten said with a smile.

“Is it that formidable?” Lin Dong said while smacking his lips and thought, “This Great Desolation Scripture is that fearsome? There’s nothing much to make out of it if no one can comprehend it; yet the moment one does, he will immediately shock the world.

“This isn’t just a rumor as every single Desolate Hall disciple who managed to comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture” wound up becoming extremely powerful. Let’s not talk about the distant past, do you know who was the most recent person to comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture”?” Little Marten grinned.

“Who is it?” Lin Dong replied by reflex before giving a shudder, while his face showed some countenance: “Could it be that ruthless senior who charged into the Yuan Gate and slaughtered three of their elders?”

“Heh, that’s the fellow. Now do you know the reason why Wu Dao does not see eye to eye with Liu Tong? The Desolate Hall has finally managed to raise a prodigy that could comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture”; yet in the end, he was killed by the Yuan Gate. This grudge is not something that can be easily resolved with words alone...” Little Marten said while nodding his head.

“No wonder.” Lin Dong said and solemnly nodded his head, and in his heart a voice of appreciation arose as he thought, “From the looks of it, the Great Desolation Scripture truly is the most mysterious amongst the four great mysterious scriptures.

Compared to the “Azure Dragon Transformation Art” given by Qing Zhi, which is more powerful?”

“Did you want me to join Desolate Hall because you wanted me to learn that “Great Desolation Scripture”?” Lin Dong said as he finally understood what Little Marten meant.

“Yes, since we have joined the Dao Sect, you must definitely obtain that item.”

Little Marten nodded his head and said, “Furthermore, in the other three great halls there are vast numbers of prodigies and geniuses, which would make it hard for you to stand out if you join them. What’s more, that old geezer Wu Dao has taken an interest in you, it’s better to be the head of a dog than the tail of a phoenix. Just wait till you succeed in learning the Great Desolation Scripture, there will definitely be a place for you in this generation of elite disciples within the Dao Sect. This is the only way you can catch up to Ling Qingzhu.

Lin Dong rolled his eyes, however he made no attempts at refuting that. Although he was the champion of the Hundred Empire War, this place wasn’t within an empire – it was one of the biggest super sects within the Eastern Xuan Region.

Every disciple here was carefully selected. Furthermore, the Hundred Empire War was not the only channel in which these super sects recruit their disciples. Therefore, being the champion of the Hundred Empire War, was not going to give him any edge in the Dao Sect.

“Alright let’s join the Desolate Hall.” Lin Dong said as he saw the shadow of Wu Dao in front of him. He had already made up his mind. Furthermore, Little Marten’s words have successfully piqued his interest towards the “Great Desolation Scripture”.

While Lin Dong was having a conversation with Little Marten, the light formation carrying them slowly descended on the top of a giant hill. On the top of the hill stood many huge halls, and on the very peak covered in clouds, a vast green platform appeared.

On top of the platform, were humongous columns that created a majestic atmosphere, and Lin Dong’s group slowly descended under the assistance of the light formation.

“Haha, Wu Dao, you have finally returned.”

Just as Lin Dong and the others were descending, a voice filled with laughter could be heard coming from the front. Lin Dong raised his vision until he saw over ten shadows standing on top of the platform.

At the front, stood three middle aged men, with hands crossed behind their backs and giving off an imposing aura. Lin Dong could feel an extremely boundless fluctuation coming from them, and if his guess was right, the three of them should be the vice heads of the three other great halls.

Lin Dong’s gaze swept past the three of them and looked behind them, where there stood three disciples – two males and one



female. All three of them had a powerful aura emanating from them, which exceeded those emitted from the patrolling disciples that they had previously seen.

Amongst the three of them, the person that caught Lin Dong's eye was that young lady. She looked quite young and seemed similar to Su Rou, although she presented a much nobler stature. Wearing a red skirt, she had a slim and graceful figure.

The young lady had quite a beautiful appearance. However, that was not why Lin Dong paid special attention towards her. Instead, it was because of the faint mysterious fluctuation that was emanating from within her body. Also, other than that fluctuation, he faintly heard the soft and clear sound of a musical instrument.

This was the first time that Lin Dong had ever encountered such a scenario, which immediately piqued his interest.

“Are you guys that impatient?” Wu Dao casually said as he landed on the platform and proceeded to shoot a look at the three guys standing in front of him.

“Haha, news of the Hundred Empire War had already been transmitted to the sect. Who would have thought that this round's winner did not actually get snapped up by the Yuan Gate and instead chose to enter our Dao Sect. This is truly invigorating.” said the middle aged man who was standing in front of the young lady in red. He proceeded to give a loud laughter, with the laughter giving of a feeling similar to the rumbling of thunder, shaking and buzzing the surrounding air.

He is the vice head of the Sky Hall, Wei Sheng.

“Who is the champion of this round’s Hundred Empire War?” said the vice head of the Earth Hall with a wide smile on his face, as his gaze unceasingly swept over Lin Dong and the rest, with his eyes showing a slight hint of earnestness.

Wu Dao gave a light snort and raised his chin towards Lin Dong, who proceeded to finally take a step forward and respectfully gave the three men a salute before he said: “Disciple Lin Dong greets the three vice heads.”

The instant Lin Dong stepped forth, the gazes of the three vice heads and the young lady dressed in red were instantly focused on his body, as they were all interested in this disciple, who managed to raise some heads within the sect before even entering it.

“Hmm, with the power of the fourth Yuan Nirvana Stage, he actually managed to become the champion of the Hundred Empire War, this is truly surprising.” said the vice head of the Sky Hall, Wei Sheng as he stared at Lin Dong with his eyes sparkling, laying bare Lin Dong’s Yuan Power cultivation level in a single glance.

“Four Yuan Nirvana Stage?”, after hearing this sentence, the young lady standing near him gawked. This strength was not considered as outstanding. How did he actually manage to become the champion of the Hundred Empire War?

“That’s not right, there is also Mental Energy. Nice one brat, he

actually managed to cultivate his mental energy to Four Seal Heavenly Symbol Master, no wonder.” Wei Sheng’s senses was quite sharp, and after a detailed survey, he even managed to uncover Lin Dong’s Mental Energy cultivation level. This caused Lin Dong to be quite shocked, as he had always kept his Mental Energy under wraps and had never released it outwards. Hence, he had never expected that it would be unmasked. This goes to show that it was not by fluke that Wei Sheng was able to become the vice head of the Sky Hall.

“Four Seal Heavenly Symbol Master?”

When this statement entered their ears, the faces of the young lady dressed in red and the two males who were giving off an imposing aura, showed a surprised expression, as they had never thought that Lin Dong could actually cultivate both his Yuan Power and Mental Energy to such a level.

“A four Yuan Nirvana Stage together with being a Four Seal Heavenly Symbol Master, this definitely can be compared favourably to a Five Yuan Nirvana Stage expert. However based on what I know, Qin Tian from Tianyuan Empire is at Six Yuan Nirvana Stage. Since you could surpass him, you must have some hidden tricks up your sleeves. Tsk tsk, just by relying on your upbringing from a low level empire to reach this stage is surely not simple...” said Wei Sheng as he continued to click his tongue. From the looks of it, he knew quite a bit about Lin Dong already.

After seeing the look Wei Sheng gave as he stared at Lin Dong, Wu Dao’s expression turned into one of discontentment. However he had no choice as the Sky Hall is currently the strongest hall and

had the most say. If Lin Dong agreed to join them, there was no one who could overturn this decision.

As he lamented the fact that such a good seedling was once again going to fall into the hands of the Sky Hall, Wu Dao felt a sense of irritation.

“Haha, Lin Dong is not bad, come join my Sky Hall,” said Wei Sheng, as expected by Wu Dao, after staring at Lin Dong for a while and spreading his arms before giving a smile.

The nearby vice heads of the Earth Hall and Flood Hall gave an angry puff, as they also felt regretful that this seedling was going to once again fall into the hands of the Sky Hall.

Wu Dao’s face turned ugly. However he could only wave his sleeves in discontentment, before saying helplessly to Lin Dong: “The Sky Hall is currently the strongest of the four great halls, if you wish you could go and join the Sky Hall.”

After hearing that, Lin Dong looked at Wei Sheng who was showing a beaming face before looking at depressed Wu Dao. Giving a sigh of hopelessness, he gave a salute towards the former.

“I’m honored by the love vice head have shown. However, I wish to join the Desolate Hall.”

The apologetic sound of a youth resounded across the platform. However it made everyone present gawk.

# Chapter 641: Choosing a Hall

---

## Joining the Desolate Hall?

Everyone on the hall selection stage was stunned by Lin Dong's words. One by one, their gazes turned towards him in shock. Only Little Marten and Little Flame remained calm.

“Lin Dong, you...” Even Wu Dao had a stunned expression due to Lin Dong's words. Clearly, he did not understand why the latter would give up on the strongest Sky Hall and choose to join their Desolate Hall instead.

The surprised expression on the deputy Sky Hall chief gradually faded away. He stared intently at Lin Dong before frowning slowly. After which, he spoke in a deep voice, “Lin Dong, you are quite talented. Do not ruin your future. Although I have no intention of looking down on the Desolate Hall, I do dare to say to you that your talents will be best developed in the Sky Hall.”

Although the mouths of Wu Dao and the others twitched a little because of Wei Sheng's words, they did not object. Currently, the Sky Hall was indeed the strongest amongst the four halls.

Lin Dong smiled bitterly and said, “I think that the Desolate Hall is likely more suitable for me. Deputy hall chief Wu Dao, what do you think?”

Lin Dong's eyes also looked towards Wu Dao when he spoke until the end, while he purposefully dragged his words. Was this old

fellow not going to speak up? At the very least, this old fellow should not allow him to endure the sharp eyes of these upper echelons of the Dao Sect alone.

Wu Dao's old face quivered a little upon hearing this. Lin Dong could see some joy within his eyes. However, after this old fellow hesitated for a moment, he finally uttered some words that almost made Lin Dong vomit blood, "The Sky Hall is indeed stronger than the Desolate Hall..."

"This old fellow is too honest, no? Lin Dong was speechless. He clearly did not expect this old fellow to push aside a good seedling that had been delivered to him.

"However, if you really wish to join our Desolate Hall, this old man will definitely support you. In any case, we will not ill-treat you." Wu Dao clenched his teeth and said.

Lin Dong finally sighed quietly. After which, his eyes were apologetic as he looked towards Wei Sheng, who had a somewhat ugly expression. He did not wish to offend the deputy chief of the Sky Hall the moment he arrived at the Dao Sect.

Wei Sheng knitted his brows and stared at Lin Dong. A moment later, he could only shake his head and spoke in a faint voice, "Since this is your choice, this hall chief is not in a position to say anything. I just hope that you know what you are doing."

Lin Dong finally let out a slight sigh of relief when he heard that Wei Sheng's tone did not contain much grudge. The upper echelon

of this Dao Sect was not as narrow minded as he had imagined.

“You are really too selfish...”

However, a clear lovely voice suddenly sounded when Lin Dong sighed in relief. Lin Dong was startled. He raised his head and saw that the red clothed young lady was bunching her eyebrows together and staring at him.

“In what way am I selfish?” Although this young lady in front of him was a little live beauty, Lin Dong still felt quite displeased with her words. He immediately frowned and demanded.

“You are quite talented. If you join the Sky Hall, you will naturally be able to utilize the most of your potential. If you become stronger, this will be good for our sect. Yet, you have chosen to give up on this path. From a certain point of view, you have caused the strength of our sect to be a little weaker. Aren’t you being selfish?” That red clothed young woman’s voice was very clear. A soft musical instrument sound accompanied her words when she spoke. One’s heart felt relaxed and happy upon hearing it. However, the sharpness of her words caused everyone to be stunned.

“Such a sharp tongue...”

These words not only echoed the thoughts within Lin Dong’s heart. Even Liu Bai and the rest behind him ended up facing each other. They must admit the eloquence of this young lady. Originally, it was merely an ordinary selection. Yet she had

actually dragged this issue to such major sect related matters.

“I think that there is no strongest hall. There should only be a hall that is most suitable for oneself, right?” Lin Dong rubbed his nose and said.

“That is true in theory. However, the current reality is that the Sky Hall is the strongest of the four halls!” The red clothed young lady raised her eyebrows. Her eyes were filled with an offensive stance as she stared at Lin Dong.

“I dare to tell you that even after joining the Desolate Hall, you will likely not even possess the qualification to be even shortlisted for the next hall test. At that time, your Hundred Empire War champion’s reputation might just become a joke.”

Lin Dong frowned slightly. His eyes also stared at the red clothed lady in front of him without giving in. He said, “Since you have elevated this issue, I shall also tell you my reason. I do not like to do things in in a mediocre fashion. Joining the Sky Hall might be the most beneficial to me, but it will not allow me to improve myself to the greatest extent. This is because... the Sky Hall does not have the “Great Desolation Scripture”.

“If I am able to to comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture”, do you think that the strength of the Dao Sect will be strengthened or weakened by a little?”

Everyone were once again startled when Lin Dong’s spoke. Only then, did they come to a sudden realization. This fellow was



actually headed to the Desolate Hall for the Great Desolation Scripture. However, this person was a little too arrogant, no? The Great Desolation Scripture is the most mysterious and unfathomable martial arts amongst the four great mysterious scriptures. Even after so many years, the number of geniuses in Desolate Hall, who have comprehended it, would not exceed ten. Yet, Lin Dong actually dared to utter such words?

The red clothed young lady was clearly startled by Lin Dong's words. However, her lips immediately lifted into a slight arc. After which, she extended her hand. Her long finger pointed at Lin Dong as her red lips parted slightly, "Such arrogant words. You really think too highly of yourself!"

Only when the red clothed young lady pointed her finger, did Lin Dong realised that her hand was exceptionally beautiful. It was long and fair, appearing just like a perfect suet jade. Her long suet jade fingers were well proportioned like the golden ratio. It did not possess the slightest flaw. Light flickered slightly on her finger, causing one's eyes to be a little dazzled.

This was Lin Dong's first time seeing such a beautiful hand. A surprise also flashed across his eyes. The red clothed young lady in front of him might not possess the most beautiful appearance amongst all the ladies that he had seen, but her hand was something no one could compare with.

"It is a little too early to discuss this. Whether I will be able to comprehend the "Great Desolation Scripture" will be witnessed by all of us in the future. What do you say?" However, Lin Dong had not reached the point of losing himself even though he was truly

surprised. His eyes turned, looked towards the red clothed young lady and laughed in a faint voice.

“The might of the Great Desolation Scripture is something that I am indeed aware of. Those seniors that had once understood the Great Desolation Scripture were indeed renowned figures in our Dao Sect. However, do you know just how many people had successfully comprehended it since the founding of the Dao Sect?”

The red clothed young woman laughed coldly and said, “Don’t say that I am looking down on you. You can only blame yourself for being too ambitious. Since you wish for me to wait and see, alright, I, Ying Huanhuan, shall wait and see if you are be able to comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture”. In fact, I will do anything you wish if you succeed. However, if you fail to do so, it is likely that quite a number of Sky Hall disciples will come looking to spar with you, junior.”

“I look forward to it.”

Lin Dong smiled slightly. He was not afraid of these ruthless words from the other party. Even if he was unable to comprehend the “Great Desolation Scripture”, Lin Dong was not some weakling that anyone could pinch at will.

“Humph.”

Ying Huanhuan could only let out a soft snort after speaking until this point. Her eyes contained some anger. Her usual sharp tongue was actually being blocked by Lin Dong today. This caused

her to feel a little displeased in her heart.

“Since you little fellow has the wild ambition to target the Great Desolation Scripture of the Desolate Hall, this hall chief shall not say anything more. If you are truly able to accomplish your dream, it is likely that everyone within our Dao Sect will be glad. However, at times, one should do things within one’s limits.” Wei Sheng spoke faintly. Even he did not have anything to say when Lin Dong brought out the Great Desolation Scripture. After all, even he had no choice but to admit that the Great Desolation Scripture was indeed the most powerful amongst the Four Great Mysterious Scriptures. If it was not because it was too difficult to comprehend, the Desolate Hall would have steadily held the strongest spot amongst the four halls.”

“Is there anyone else who wish to join the Desolate Hall?” Wei Sheng’s eyes looked towards the other disciples that had been selected from the Hundred Empire War and asked.

Little Marten and Little Flame did not say anything unnecessary after hearing this. They directly stood beside Lin Dong. Liu Bai, Mo Ling and the rest hesitated for a moment before following. Things were clear cut for them now. In any case, they had already followed Lin Dong to the Dao Sect. It was best that they followed him all the way. Moreover, with their talent, it was likely that they would barely be able to enter the Sky Hall even if they could do so. In that case, it was best to follow Lin Dong and muddle within the Desolate Hall.

Although these people had followed Lin Dong, most people did not act rashly. After all, these people did not have any relationship

with Lin Dong. Naturally, they would not follow him to the weakest Desolate Hall.

Lin Dong appeared quite calm in the face of this kind of situation. He had no intention to gathering people and forming a group. Mo Ling, Liu Bai and the rest had followed him because they treated him as a friend. It was very natural for the others not to do so.

Wei Sheng waved his sleeves upon seeing this scene. After which, some light rushed out. He chose some of the most talented individuals within the group. Soon after, the Earth Hall's and Flood Hall's deputy hall chief also acted and divided the remaining people, who were fairly talented. Finally, those who were left behind were some whose talent were a little weaker.

“The disciple selection is over. We shall take our leave first.”

Wei Sheng did not plan to stay any longer after the disciple selection was completed. He cupped his hands together towards Wu Dao before taking a deep look at Lin Dong. With a wave of his sleeves, Yuan Power surged. It transformed into a wild wind and directly swept away those disciples that had been selected.

“That brat called Lin Dong, remember your words. I am waiting for you to surprise me. However, before this, you should first obtain the qualification to study the Great Desolation Scripture first.”

Ying Huanhuan shook her hands towards Lin Dong in a gloating fashion. After which, her lovely body moved and she swiftly

followed Wei Sheng.

While they were leaving, the deputy hall chief of the Earth Hall and the Flood Hall also led their people away. In a moment, this stage had become much emptier.

“Ugh...”

Lin Dong stretched his lazy waist and sighed helplessly. From the looks of it, he seemed to have offended this young lady of unknown origin the moment he arrived.

“Hey, little fellow, it is unexpected that you are actually in possession of such boldness...” Wu Dao turned his head and smilingly stared at Lin Dong. A laughter filled his eyes.

“Deputy hall chief Wu Dao, we will be following you in the future. Please take good care of us.” Lin Dong laughed. He had a little less of the restrain that he had in front of Wei Sheng, when he was in front of Wu Dao.

“Don’t use this on me. Although this old man is extremely happy with what you did, everything should still be done according to the rules.” Wu Dao smilingly chided. After which, he suddenly whispered, “But little fellow, once the matter of you rejecting to join the Sky Hall today spreads, the disciples from the Sky Hall might end up paying special attention to you...”

The smiling face of Wu Dao caused Lin Dong to be a little

speechless. Was this old fellow gloating?

“That’s right, that Ying Huanhuan has an elder sister called Ying Xiaoxiao, a senior in the Sky Hall. She could be considered the strongest amongst the younger generation members of Dao Sect. Since you have argued with Ying Huanhuan today, it is likely that she will pay attention to you in the future. Good luck. I am rooting for you.” Wu Dao fondled his chin and randomly said.

“Damnit...”

Even with Lin Dong’s character, he involuntarily ended up cursing when he heard his words. This was just great. He had merely just selected a hall to train. Yet, he had entered up attracting all sorts of troubles...

It was likely that his future days here would not be so smooth sailing.

## Chapter 642: Reward

---

Desolate Hall is situated in the southwest corner of Dao Sect. A dozen over giant peaks that touched the heavens, formed a circle. On top of these giant peaks, streams of silver-like waterfalls poured down. A loud rumbling sound ricocheted across the entire domain.

On top of these large peaks, one could see numerous large halls. Meanwhile, countless number of figures were just like ants as they traversed across it. It released a vibrant and prosperous atmosphere.

Surrounding these large peaks, was a several thousand mile long river that swept across it. It looked just like a river in heaven. When one got near to it, one could actually realize that this enormous river was actually formed from Nirvana Qi!

A genuine Pill River!

The resources of these super sects evidently did not lose out much to those ancient sects.

When Lin Dong saw that hovering Pill River, that was the first thought that flashed past his mind. Promptly, he was secretly excited by it. He had previously experienced the benefits from cultivating in a Pill River. However, due to time constraints in the Ancient Battlefield, he could not linger on and he only briefly enjoyed it before he left regretfully. Therefore, when he saw that there was actually a Pill River in Desolate Hall, his heart was naturally filled with joy.

“In Desolate Hall, there are three thousand disciples and three hundred direct disciples. All of them are excellent members who have been through the most stringent tests. On the outskirts, there are tens of thousands of branch disciples. If they are able to pass the tests, they are always welcome to become full fledged disciples of Desolate Hall.” Standing beside Lin Dong, Wu Dao pointed at several dozen large peaks. There was a tinge of pride in his tone.

“Three hundred direct disciples, three thousand disciples, tens of thousands of branch disciples...”

When Lin Dong heard the figures, he was instantly shocked. He was clearly aware that in order to become a direct disciple of a super sect, according to the Hundred Empire War’s rules, one must step into the Nirvana Golden Ranking. However, right now, just the number of direct disciples of Desolate Hall, already stands at three hundred.

The three hundred of them were obviously the elite and they must be top geniuses just like Lanying and the rest.

Even after adding together the total number of Nirvana Golden Ranking members in the current Hundred Empire War, there was less than half of this number. Based on this, it seems like these super empires truly had many other avenues to recruit members.

Lin Dong did not inquire about the three other halls. However, with just a rough gauge, he was able to deduce that their numbers surely exceed the Desolate Hall.



It seems like the total strength of the Dao Sect was truly terrifying. This also allowed Lin Dong to clearly witness the terror of a super sect. By possessing such strength, in the Eastern Xuan Region, how could any empire compete with such a monstrous beast.

With these terrifying disciples as a foundation, one's sect would definitely become powerful.

“Lin Dong, based on your performance, you naturally possess the qualifications to become a direct disciple. However, there is something that this old man must mention. Even in the Desolate Hall, you will face intense competition. Therefore, if you want to enjoy preferential treatment, you must prove yourself. Else, you will be quickly replaced.” Wu Dao's expression was solemn as he stared at Lin Dong and said.

“This type of competition is also a way to train our disciples. Therefore, we will not easily intervene in fights between disciples. If you want to continue to enjoy your privileges, the only thing you require is the ability to assert your right.”

“You are the current champion of the Hundred Empire War and you have recruited many disciples for our Dao Sect. We will naturally have to reward you for it. However, whether you have the ability to enjoy this reward, will still depend your own abilities...”

“What reward?” Lin Dong smiled as he curiously asked.

“Pill River Head Immersion.”

Wu Dao gently smiled as he pointed to that massive Pill River and leisurely said: “In the deep region of the Pill River, there will be some extremely pure Nirvana Qi generated each year. We term it as the Nirvana Golden Qi. That stuff is extremely beneficial for Nirvana stage practitioners.”

“At that time, the hall master and I will personally manipulate the Nirvana Golden Qi to temper your body and your internal Yuan Power. If you are able to handle it, your strength would surely surge.”

“Sounds pretty good.” Lin Dong’s eyes gently lit up. Something that required the combined efforts of both hall master must be pretty good.

“Of course it is. This Nirvana Golden Qi is originally reserved for Desolate Hall’s top disciple. If it was not for the fact that you have performed a service of great merit, you will not be able to enjoy it.” Wu Dao rolled his eyes at Lin Dong and said.

“Who is the strongest disciple in Desolate Hall now?” Lin Dong gently smiled and asked.

“The four senior direct disciples. All of them are at seven Yuan Nirvana stage and they are no pushovers.” With his hands behind his back, Wu Dao sadistically teased.

“Seven Yuan Nirvana stage huh.” Lin Dong’s eyes gently hardened. Promptly, he slowly nodded his head before he softly said: “They are powerful indeed. However, it is not difficult to overtake them.”

With Lin Dong’s current strength, he could fight evenly with a six Yuan Nirvana stage expert. Therefore, if he continued to improve, he could most likely contend with a seven Yuan Nirvana stage expert. Right now, he had just entered the Desolate Hall. Therefore, he should have time to slowly catch up with those seniors.

When he saw Lin Dong’s smiling face, Wu Dao secretly nodded his head. He had personally witnessed Lin Dong’s rise during the Ancient Battlefield. For a young man from a low rank empire to stand out in the battlefield, was already a miracle by itself.

“If you want to obtain the qualifications to learn the Great Desolate Scripture, you must defeat them. However, that is for later.”

“With regards to the Pill River Head Immersion that we promised, there are only a few rare individuals in Desolate Hall that have enjoyed this treatment. Since you are only a new disciple, there are bound to be some disciples who feel disgruntled. With regards to this issue, you would have to rely on your own abilities. We will not intervene.” Wu Dao casually said.

“Understood.” Lin Dong gently smiled as he nodded his head.

“Besides, what do your two other friends plan to do?” Wu Dao’s eyes suddenly turned towards Little Marten and Little Flame, before he asked.

He was clearly aware of their true identities. Therefore, he understood that Little Marten would not join Dao Sect.

“In two day’s time, I will depart together with Little Flame.” Little Marten casually said.

“Depart?” When Lin Dong heard his words, he was instantly shocked.

“Don’t worry, I will take him out for a spin. There is a place in Eastern Xuan Region which is extremely beneficial for him. It is best for him to train over there.” Little Marten smiled as he said.

“Big brother, second brother said that I will be able to improve rapidly at that place. Let me follow him first. If you face any problems, use the Yuan Spirit to send a message to second brother. We will come immediately. Little Flame scratched his head while he grinned.

“Don’t worry, with me around, nothing will happen.” Little Marten smiled at Lin Dong.

When he saw the situation, Lin Dong hesitated for a moment. Promptly, he chose not to dwell on this issue. The reason why

Little Marten chose to follow Lin Dong was because he was worried for him. Now that he had joined the Dao Sect, as long as no accidents occur, he should be in safe hands. In that case, Little Marten could enjoy more freedom.

Furthermore, Lin Dong knew that Little Marten had many secrets. Since the latter did not wish to tell him, he did not want to ask him as well. Right now, he was still not powerful enough. Therefore, Little Marten's knowledge was of little use to him.

“Alright, we have reached the Desolate Hall. All of you will take the rest of the day to recuperate. Tomorrow, we will head to the Pill River stage. At that time, we will perform the Pill River Head Immersion for you.” Wu Dao led the crowd to a huge mountain. With a wave of his arm, several disciples immediately leapt forth. Following which, he looked at Lin Dong and the rest before he spoke.

“Yes!”

When they heard his words, the crowds responded respectfully.

Wu Dao gently nodded his head. Promptly, a smile appeared on his face: “Besides, congratulations on becoming official disciples of Desolate Hall. This can be considered as your home in the future.”

When they heard his words, a grateful expression surfaced on Liu Bai and the rest's faces. After a long and arduous journey, they had finally become disciples of a super sect.

Just like the spot where Lin Dong and the rest reached, in the eastern side of Dao Sect, there was also towering mountains. The atmosphere here was actually more majestic than the Desolate Hall.

This was the place where the Sky Hall was located.

In the sky above the Sky Hall, there was also a hovering Pill River. Furthermore, this Pill River was larger than the one at Desolate Hall. At a cursory glance, you could see no end to it and could only feel that rich and potent Nirvana Qi drifting off from the river. It even caused its surroundings to warp.

Upon closer inspection, one could see several floating platform above the Pill River. Seated above the platform, were several disciples quietly training. Streams of powerful vibrations continuously emerged from within their bodies.

Most of these platform were scattered around the surroundings of the Pill River. Nonetheless, typically speaking, the closer it go to the center of the Pill River, the less platforms there were. Meanwhile, the number of disciples seated above also decreased.

Swoosh.

A splitting wind sound suddenly rang out above the Pill River. Faintly, it was accompanied by the crisp sound of a instrument, which sounded just like a teana. That noise caused several disciples to open their eyes to stare at that alluring figure flashing past the horizon. Meanwhile, they seemed to be intoxicated by that sound.

The alluring figure in the sky did not bother about their glances as she directly headed to the deepest spot in the Pill River. Finally, she landed above the final platform.

When that alluring figure landed, her red dress swayed. It was actually Ying Huanhuan, who had previously bickered with Lin Dong.

When she landed on that platform, she immediately looked in front. At the edge of that platform, was a lady quietly seated down. Meanwhile, rich and potent Nirvana Qi swiveled around her.

That lady was dressed in black ceremonial robes and she had a slim figure. Her soft green hair was casually tied up by a green lace and the tip was faintly curved at a sharp angle. Her hands were placed on her knees and there was a seal on her jade fingers. Above her handseal, a green longsword was placed between two seals, while a faint sword aura slowly emerged. It actually forcefully split apart the surrounding Nirvana Qi.

“Sis.”

When Ying Huanhuan saw the lady dressed in black ceremonial robes, she involuntarily pouted her tiny mouth.

The lady in front of her was actually the number one younger generation member in Dao Sect, the Big Sister of Sky Hall, Ying Xiaoxiao.

## Chapter 643: Guidance

---

On the platform, when the black-dressed lady heard the crisp voice behind her, her tightly-shut eyes opened slowly. The corners of her mouth curled upwards slightly, making her cold-looking face somewhat gentle in an instant.

“I thought you followed Uncle Wu Dao to select the new disciples? Why the long face?” The black dressed asked as her lily-white hands took hold of a green-colored long sword. Then, she stood up gracefully while looking at Ying Huanhuan with a tinge of joy in her eyes.

“Don’t mention it,” Ying Huanhuan furrowed her eyebrows and pouted her lips. She then continued, “Initially, I wanted to see how capable the champion of the Hundred Empire War is. In the end, it turns out that he is just an arrogant idiot.”

“Why?”

The black-dressed lady shifted her gaze towards the surging Pill River and exclaimed softly without making a big fuss.

“That fellow actually forsaked the chance to enter the Sky Hall and chose the Desolate Hall instead,”

Ying Huanhuan grumbled angrily.

“Oh?” The black-dressed lady was slightly startled. She was just



as surprised as Ying Huanhuan. Apparently, this was the first time she heard of such an incident.

“That fellow said that he wants to learn the Great Desolate Scripture.”

“He’s quite ambitious,” The black-dressed lady replied softly.

“He’s indeed quite ambitious, but I’m afraid his ambition is what that’s going to kill him in the end. If the Great Desolate Scripture is so easy to be mastered, the Desolate Hall would have surpassed the Sky Hall a long time ago. That time, Sis meditated before the Desolate Tablet for a month and still failed to learn anything from it. How can that fellow succeed then?” Ying Huanhuan snorted.

“I have no affinity with the Great Desolate Scripture. Others might actually be able to do so,” The black-dressed lady pointed the tip of her green-colored long sword towards the Pill River. Traces of powerful sword aura began to emerge from the sword.

“To master the Great Desolate Scripture, one needs more than just affinity. Sis, don’t tell me you think that fellow has a chance of succeeding?” Ying Huanhuan asked.

The black-dressed lady turned her head slightly and replied softly, “Twenty-percent chance.”

“Are you saying he has a twenty-percent chance of succeeding? How can it be, you haven’t even met him yet!” Ying Huanhuan

exclaimed while her eyes widened up.

“A person who comes from a low-ranked empire and is able to surpass those super empires’ geniuses is no simpleton. Becoming the champion of the Hundred Empire War doesn’t depend on luck alone,” The black-dresses lady explained with a gentle voice.

“Who knows what will happen? There’s nothing special about that lad...” Ying Huanhuan pouted her mouth unbelievably. Then, she continued, “That fellow still dares to wager with me...”

Ying Huanhuan rolled her eyes upon finishing her sentence. Just as she was about to start speaking again, the indifferent voice of the black-dressed lady came from behind, “Don’t bother me with this kind of issue. There are a lot of people who are willing to stick up for you. You don’t need me. I don’t want to be distracted by such issues. I have more important things to care about.”

“You merely lost by a single move to that Ling Qingzhu from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace, ain’t it.....” Ying Huanhuan grumbled. However, just as she finished her sentence, she could sense the sword aura that was pervading the platform intensified in an instant. Following which, she quickly shut her mouth.

“Little girl, if you feel that you have too much freedom these days, I can confine you for a few days,” The black-dressed lady’s cold voice silenced Ying Huanhuan instantly. Upon hearing this, Ying Huanhuan turned her body and left without any hesitation.

Upon hearing Ying Huanhuan scuttle away, the black-dressed

lady pursed her lips lightly. The green-colored long sword in her hand bolted upright abruptly. At that instant, the aura of the sword pervaded the entire sky. A ten thousand feet long rift split across the surging Pill River instantly. After quite a while, the rift then began to soothe down gradually...

Vigorous Nirvana Qi formed in front of the black-dressed lady. Indistinctly, the Nirvana Qi materialized into an illusory figure. That figure appeared to be Ling Qingzhu.

The black-dressed lady's eyes were as deep as an abyss. She reached out her slender lily-white index finger and dabbed the illusory figure lightly with it. Then, the aura of her sword surged forward and destroyed the illusory figure into nothingness.

“Ling Qingzhu... I will defeat you....”

....

The next day, as the morning sunshine poured over the Dao Sect, an unusual commotion broke out stealthily across the enormous mountains of the Desolate Hall.

This commotion originated from the spreading of the news that there was a Hundred Empire War's champion among the Desolate Hall's newly-selected disciples. Furthermore, this champion unconventionally forsook the chance to enter the Sky Hall. Instead, he chose to enter the Desolate Hall. Naturally, the issue that the Desolate Hall's disciples cared about the most was that this new disciple was going to receive the Pill River Head Immersion on

his first day!

Generally speaking, only those disciples who performed exceedingly well would be qualified to receive the Pill River Head Immersion. Clearly, a lot of disciples had been working hard for this privilege. However, no one had expected the privilege of the Pill River Head Immersion this year to be seized by a newcomer.

Undoubtedly, this issue had infuriated numerous disciples. Even though they knew a Hundred Empire War's champion could significantly increase the number of potential disciples in the future and such reward was completely deserving, they were still not happy about it. A newcomer like him, who had not even familiarized himself with the place, dared to claim such privilege. From the current batch of disciples' perspective, he obviously did not show any respect to his seniors!

On the south of the Desolate Hall near to where the Pill River was, there was an exceptionally enormous mountain. On the mountain summit, there was a vast platform. At this point of time, the platform was swarming with people's shadows, appearing extremely crowded.

In front of the platform, there was a group of people crowding around. In the centre of the group, there was a grey-clothed guy looking gloomily at the Pill River ahead of him. Everyone could sense the anger within him.

“Senior Tong Chuan, don't be angry anymore. No one has expected this...” Numerous Desolate Hall's disciples were consoling the grey-clothed guy, attempting to soothe the anger in

his heart.

While speaking, these disciples felt somewhat helpless. Even though they felt that Tong Chuan had the highest chance of obtaining the privilege of the Pill River Head Immersion among the direct disciples and he was fully committed to getting it, they did not expect a newly-joined disciple to crash the party. Furthermore, this newcomer was one step faster in seizing the nomination. It was no wonder that Tong Chuan was so outraged.

“Humph, he’s merely a new disciple. Even if he is the champion of the Hundred Empire War, he still has to understand the concept of seniority! He has to stay in the Desolate Hall for at least two years to be qualified for the Pill River Head Immersion!” Tong Chuan roared coldly.

Upon hearing these words, the Desolate Hall’s disciples surrounding Tong Chuan could only laugh bitterly. It seemed like Tong Chuan had no intention of letting the matter rest. Soon after, these disciples began to sympathize with the new disciple. Even though he had done a meritorious deed for the Dao Sect, the Desolate Hall still had its own rules and regulations. Certain privileges had to be earned with capabilities. If Tong Chuan was to take action on purpose, even if the new disciple was able to obtain the privilege of the Pill River Head Immersion, his reputation would suffer significantly.

With regards to his capability, the disciples surrounding Tong Chuan had not much worries about the latter. Tong Chuan had been in the Desolate Hall for three years and he had reached the Six Yuan Nirvana Stage. He was considered rather powerful among

the direct disciples. Furthermore, that new disciple was reported to be only at the Four Yuan Nirvana Stage.

At this moment, the number of disciples who had received the news and rushed towards the platform before Pill River was rather huge. Other than Tong Chuan, there was a lot of other direct disciples. However, these direct disciples were not as infuriated as Tong Chuan. They merely folded their arms and waited eagerly for what was going to happen next. They clearly knew that the new disciple, whose name was Lin Dong, would not obtain the privilege of the Pill River Head Immersion so easily.....

Swoosh!

As numerous disciples waited on the Pill River platform, the sound of wind breaking echoed through the air suddenly. Soon after, more than ten figures flew from afar and landed on the platform. The guy leading the group was Lin Dong himself.

As Lin Dong and his counterparts arrived, the initially rowdy platform quietened down instantly. Numerous gazes converged on them. Most of their eyes contained a playful tinge.

Lin Dong, who had just landed on the platform, could naturally sense the unusual atmosphere. However, his face did not show the slightest bit of surprise. He clearly understood that even though he was a direct disciple, a new disciple like him could not easily convince the crowd of his strength. Those disciples who were of higher seniority, were bound to brood over the fact that he obtained the nomination for the Pill River Head Immersion...

Lin Dong also knew how to deal with this kind of situation...

“Such a group of vigorous young men. Seems like you won’t be lonely in the future...” Little Marten chuckled as he looked smilingly at the surrounding Desolate Hall’s disciples.

Lin Dong nodded his head slightly.

“Are you the direct disciple that has just entered the Desolate Hall, Lin Dong?”

Not long after Lin Dong appeared, Tong Chuan could not help but took a step forward and asked with a deep voice.

“There’s going to be a good show...”

When the crowd saw Tong Chuan take a step forward, the same words echoed through their minds.

“Nice to meet you, Senior,” Lin Dong smiled and cupped his fist.

“Lin Dong, you have indeed done a meritorious deed for the Dao Sect by becoming the champion of the Hundred Empire War. However, I don’t think it’s wise to take credit for this. Every year, only one person is allowed to enjoy the Pill River Head Immersion. Given your current status in the hall, I’m afraid you’re not qualified to enjoy this privilege. Therefore, Senior shall advise you

to come and fight for this privilege again two years later. That might be a better decision for you,” Tong Chuan said indifferently.

“Is it that I don’t have the capability or the qualifications?” Lin Dong smirked.

Tong Chuan squinted his eyes and replied, “Since you have asked, I can only tell you that you have neither!”

“Understood....”

Lin Dong nodded his head. Then, under the numerous astonished gazes from the Desolate Hall’s disciples, Lin Dong cupped his fists towards Tong Chuan.

“Senior, please guide me!”

Tong Chuan was not the only one who wanted to establish dominance. As a newcomer, Lin Dong clearly understood the importance of such action as well. And right now, it seemed like the perfect chance to do so.



# Chapter 644: Fight

---

When Lin Dong's words resounded across the platform, a soft whoosh could be heard coming from all directions. Quite a few Desolate Hall disciples were stunned as Lin Dong's straightforwardness had completely exceeded their expectations.

“He sure is a bold and charismatic fellow...”

A few of the direct disciples were observing this moment play out, while a hint of admiration surfaced in their eyes. Tong Chuan could not stomach what happened today, and the one way he could settle this was not complex, which was to fight.

Strength was an entry pass at any place, and it was no exception within the Desolate Hall.

Tong Chuan actually understood that even after he personally taught Lin Dong a lesson, it was still nigh impossible to change the fact that he would receive the Pill River Head Immersion. Since Lin Dong had made contributions towards the Dao Sect, the two heads of the Desolate Hall would not withdraw his reward just because of his opposition.

The reason he continued to do so was ,firstly, he was unable to swallow this down, and secondly he thought that he could press down the invincible air of this new disciple. This was to let him know that although he was the champion of the Hundred Empire War, he would still have to obediently withdraw the air of arrogance brought by this title.

However, what caused Tong Chuan to feel surprised was that Lin Dong actually turned from a guest into a host, and before allowing him to explain fully, he had already sent out his challenge.

Due to his actions, regardless of whether he ended up winning or losing, at the very least, his courage had caused quite a few people to hold him in high esteem. The matter of humiliation would not be further mentioned. Regardless, Lin Dong was still a new member of the Desolate Hall. Losing to a senior disciple like Tong Chuan would not be considered as humiliating.

At an area that was quite far from the Pill River, two shadows were floating in the air, with their gazes aimed towards the Pill River. One of them was the vice head of the Desolate Hall Wu Dao, while the other one was a old man dressed in white, with a head full of white hair, making him appearing quite senile. However the occasional glow that passed by swiftly indicated that he was a senior of uncommon background.

This old man dressed in white was none other than the present head of the Desolate Hall, Chen Zhen.

“Heh, this brat sure has a unique way of doing things...”Wu Dao said while grinning and staring at the Pill River platform from far away.

“Seems like you truly hold Lin Dong in high regard...”said the old man dressed in white softly before giving a faint smile.

His talent coupled with his disposition would make him one of the top picks and a very good seedling. If he is groomed properly, I feel that he would be able to become the most outstanding person within the younger generation members of Desolate Hall.”

Wu Dao gently caressed his beard, before contemplating for awhile and said: Actually, even if he was compared to those monstrous talents of the Sky Hall, he might not fall in a disadvantageous position.”

“There aren’t many youngsters that could make you utter such words...”

Desolate Hall master Chen Zhen gave a laugh while he stared far into the distance, before nodding his head and said: “ There are quite a few secrets within that brat’s body, however that does not matter to us. The current him is already the disciple of our Dao Sect. As long as he does not do anything that would bring harm to the sect, he would forever be a disciple of our Dao Sect.”

“Who do you think would have a greater chance of victory between them?” Chen Zhen asked as he looked towards Wu Dao.

“Tong Chuan will likely suffer.”

Wu Dao grinned as he replied. Thinking back, in the Ancient Battlefield, even Cao Yu was forced into a sorry state by Lin Dong. If one tried to judge Lin Dong’s prowess from his appearance alone, one would be truly mistaken.

“Oh?”

Chen Zhen raised his eyebrows before looking at the platform with gusto and said with a faint voice: “I want to see just how outstanding is that little fellow, that you hold in high regard.”

“You are definitely courageous.”

Tong Chuan stared at the skinny looking youth in front of him, his eyes narrowing and flames of anger could be faintly seen within them. Thinking about it, this was the first time that he had be treated so haughtily by a new disciple. As such, he felt no need to be polite and took a step forward, before his wild Yuan power erupted just like a thunderstorm. This level of fluctuation was a level stronger than the Tianyuan Dynasty Qin Tian.

“On the account that you are my junior, I’ll not bully you. After ten rounds, if you have not lost, I, Tong Chuan will not say a single word on the matter of the Pill River Head Immersion. Do you dare to accept this challenge?”

Tong Chuan low and deep voice, carried by his vigorous Yuan Power resounded across the platform akin to the rumbling of thunder.

“Senior please carry on, I am afraid there might not be a need for 10 rounds!”

Lin Dong’s body faintly trembled as Yuan Power within his body

started to surge. Although it was not as fearsome as that of Tong Chuan, it immediately dispelled the pressure that was being emanated by Tong Chuan.

“Having courage is a good thing. However, one must know when not to go too far! Since you are that haughty, alright then, let me test out what ability do you, the champion of the Hundred Empire War have!”

Tong Chuan gave a cold snort, as the flames of anger in his eyes grew larger, he felt that if this new disciple was not taken care off today, there would be no place for him in the future!

“Boom!”

Tong Chuan gripped his large hand, before a radiant golden light erupted from his body and directly transformed into a large golden blade. A frightening and astonishing fluctuation was being emitted by that large blade.

“Bang Bang!”

Tong Chuan took a step forwards, as the large golden blade in his hand gave a sudden tremble. Instantly, ten blade rays exploded out, which caused even the air to be sliced apart, creating incisive howling noises that reverberated sharply.

Facing Tong Chuan’s attack, Lin Dong merely extended his palms and with a grasp, green light seemingly erupted from his palms

and directly morphed in a green coloured scale shield.

Ting Ting!

The blade slashes sliced heavily on the green coloured scale shield. However, it only caused some sparks and did not achieve any noticeable results.

“Ke!”

After easily blocking Tong Chuan’s probing attack, Lin Dong did not consider the need of continuing such useless probing. After experiencing bout after bout of vicious battles in the Ancient Battlefield, he did not enjoy these soft probing attacks. Immediately, his body rushed forward explosively. As he gripped his palm, a black iron seal appeared within his palms.

“Boom!”

With the appearance of the black iron symbol it caused violent winds to stir up, before turning into a vast and enormous shadow that viciously pressed down on Tong Chuan, crushing him beneath it.

“Heavenly Soul Treasure??”

Tong Chuan was startled by the sudden appearance of the black metal symbol, causing a serious glow to flash past his eyes, before swiftly retreating, while his hands moved lighting fast to break the

symbol.

“Demonic Desolation Fist!”

When the seal started to fluctuate, Tong Chuan sent a fist rumbling forward. Dreadful Yuan Power started to condense on his fist, before finally emitting a Desolate Aura akin to a great desolation and viciously smashed against the black iron symbol that was oppressing him.

Bang!

A loud and clear sound resounded out as the black iron symbol was literally smashed by Tong Chuan’s fist, before a frightening amount of power started to radiate outwards, causing even the air to start twisting. After seeing this scene, it caused Liu Bai and the rest’s facial expressions to change. It seems like he was indeed a worthy of being a direct disciple of Desolate Hall. In fact, the person in front of them was likely more powerful than Qin Tian...

“Although you have a Heavenly Soul Treasure, don’t assume that it is something that you can rely on!” shouted Tong Chuan as he dashed forward explosively. His arm suddenly trembled and unleashed the same vicious fist as before. However, this time around, the howling noise blotted out the whole sky. This grade of boundless eruption of power had everyone change their countenance.

Facing the incoming fist shade whose howling filled the skies, Lin Dong did not retreat and instead advanced forward. With a

movement of his body, he landed on top of the black iron symbol that was flying upside down. After stabilizing himself, with a single thought, vigorous Yuan Power, Mental Energy and Devouring Force rapidly entered the archaic formation within his body.

“Rumble Rumble Rumble!”

Following the unison of the three different energies within the archaic formation, the Yuan Power that was gushing out of Lin Dong turned into a mysterious greyish black colour. It faintly emitted the strength of destruction, which was several times stronger than his previous Yuan Power.

“That light”

On the platform, there were numerous Desolate Hall disciples who were watching this scene. Upon seeing that light, their vision all hardened as they simultaneously discovered the sudden birth of a fearsome and mysterious energy within Lin Dong’s body.

When the three sources of energy fused together, Lin Dong’s power rose instantly. His aura was not weaker than the Six Yuan Nirvana Stage of Tong Chuan!

“Dragon Gate!”

Lin Dong stomped his feet, causing the boundless greyish black air to directly integrate with the black iron symbol with lighting



fast speed. At the same time, the black coloured dragon spirit, which was residing in the iron symbol, opened its dragon eyes, causing a sinister aura to rapidly fill the surrounding air.

As more and more greyish black energy integrated with the iron symbol, the dragon spirit took to the skies, as a vigorous strength started to emanate from the ice cold looking black dragon scales that fully covered its humongous body.

“He actually summoned the dragon spirit.”

When the humongous dragon spirit appeared, there were many surprised shrieks coming from the platform, as they were all astonished by Lin Dong’s move.

Roar!

The dragon spirit faced the heavens and roared, instantaneously showing off its anger , while a fearsome amount of energy formed a humongous arcing shield, causing cracks and fractures to appear on the platform below.

“Bang Bang Bang!”

The large desolation fist afterimage filled the air with vicious fist winds as it directly landed on the body of the dragon spirit and exploded outwards. However it was unable to halt the momentum of the dragon spirit.

With the unison of the three energies within his body and coupled with the might of a Heavenly Soul Treasure, Lin Dong's current strength could be compared favourably to a Six Yuan Nirvana stage expert. Hence, he was obviously not weaker compared to Tong Chuan.

It was at this moment that Tong Chuan finally realised. Immediately, his facial expression turned exceptionally serious. He tried his best to restrain the slight fluttering of his heart by taking a deep breath. He slowly raised the golden large blade in his hands, however there was a faint pale white tinge present on his face.

Ring!

In contrast to the paleness on his face, the golden large blade in his hands started to violently tremble. The golden light was mysteriously withdrawn and on the golden light, appeared faint and subtle cracks. From afar, it looked like a vast piece of parched land, as a Desolate Aura started to emanate.

“This light,”

After seeing the light, the expression on those Desolate Hall disciples' faces changed, as they could recognize the martial art that Tong Chuan was executing.

One roar after another started to resound from the platform as Tong Chuan suddenly raised his head. Promptly, his hand seemingly transformed into an earth desolating blade. As he suddenly sliced down, an icy cold sound, which carried the air of

desolation started to spread from his mouth.

“Desolation Blade!”

# Chapter 645: Desolate Blade

---

The large parched blade suddenly hacked downwards. At that moment, the air around Tong Chuan disappeared at a shocking rate. A barren like ripple scattered around the place.

Tong Cheng's blade appeared to be ordinary but the frightening strength contained within was something that only Lin Dong, who had been targeted by the blade glow, could sense.

“He is indeed worthy of being a direct disciple of the Desolate Hall!”

Lin Dong looked at the barren space around Tong Cheng. His eyes were quite solemn. However, he had no intention of withdrawing. A thought passed through his mind and the black dragon spirit that was whizzing down, grew increasingly powerful. As it bared its fangs and waved its claws, a frightening energy shockwave caused the crack lines on the platform to become increasingly dense.

“Hiss!”

Tong Chuan's eyes were icy cold as he looked at the black dragon that was being rapidly growing in his eyes. A low cry was suddenly emitted. Immediately, a blade glow that was filled with a barren aura suddenly shot out from his parched large blade.

The blade glow was extremely mighty. It was a couple of dozen feet large as it swiftly flashed through the air in a lightning like

manner just like a meteorite. After which, it heavily slammed onto the black dragon spirit with a shocking momentum.

Clang!

A clear sharp loud sound suddenly sounded out in the sky. Soon after, an extremely wild and violent energy attack suddenly erupted from the sky.

The energy attack spread apart. Those people nearby hurriedly pulled back. Numerous golden light flickered on the flat platform in order to protect themselves from the eroding energy wind.

While the resisted, the crowd's attention remained focused on mid-air. The Desolate Blade was a fairly powerful martial arts from the Desolate Hall. Since it was currently used by Tong Chuan's six Yuan Nirvana Stage's strength, it's might became even stronger. Although Lin Dong was able to summon a dragon spirit, he might not be able to block such a sharp blade.

Sizzle sizzle!

The blade glow heavily hacked onto the head of the dragon spirit in front of everyone's eyes. That unique barren aura was actually wildly eroding the body of the dragon spirit. That originally somewhat icy cool black dragon scale also swiftly shrivelled under the erosion from the Desolate Aura.

Tong Chuan also sensed the increasingly weak dragon spirit due

to the erosion of the barren aura. The corner of his mouth was immediately lifted into a cold smile. The Desolate Blade in his hand once again hacked furiously downwards.

“Desolate Blade slaying dragon spirit!”

Crack crack crack!

Another incomparably wild blade glow attack appeared. This time around, the black dragon spirit immediately cracked, forming numerous crack lines in the process.

“That dragon spirit is unable to endure any longer.” Everyone quietly shook their heads when they saw this scene. It seemed that the dragon spirit that Lin Dong had summoned, was unable to endure the might of the Desolate Blade.

“The Desolate Hall’s martial art is quite unique. That barren aura that they had obtained from training is quite strong.” Little Marten looked at this scene in the sky and nodded.

“Is Lin Dong able to endure it?” Liu Bai’s and Mo Ling’s group involuntarily asked. Lin Dong was basically representing all of the newly joined disciples. If he was to be defeated today, it was likely that none of them would have a good time in the future.

“Relax, it is not so easy to deal with Lin Dong.” Little Marten spoke with a faint smile.

Mo Ling and the rest quietly sighed in relief after hearing Little Marten spoke in this manner. At this moment, they could tell that Little Marten seemed to be the most unfathomable person in the group. Hence, since he had spoken in this manner, it seems like Lin Dong would not be in deep trouble.

While they were conversing, that enormous dragon spirit in the sky also began to cracked apart inch by inch. Clearly, it had already reached its limit.

“Is it over?”

Quite a number of people contemplated this thought in their hearts when they saw this scene. However, they did not have any intention of mocking the other member. It was already quite an accomplishment for Lin Dong, who was merely a newcomer, to force Tong Chuan to use the Desolate Blade.

Tong Chuan also raised his head and looked at the collapsing dragon spirit. His face revealed a smile. However, his eyes suddenly shrunk before his smile could widen.

Bang!

The cracking dragon spirit suddenly exploded at this moment. Soon after, a green light directly rushed out from within. After which, it flashed downwards at a shocking speed and appeared in front of Tong Chuan. With the help of the light reflection, everyone could clearly see that Lin Dong was within the green light!

At this moment, Lin Dong's body was covered with green dragon scales that appeared like a layer of scale armour.

“Green Dragon Arms!”

Lin Dong's eyes were icy cold within the green light. A low roar sounded within his heart. Immediately, his right hand instantly wiggled and swelled. Within a short instant, it had transformed into an enormous dragon arms. A terrifying strength erupted and shook the space until it became a little distorted.

“Bang!”

Lin Dong did not hesitate after the green dragon arms took shape. His fists blew apart the air immediately before he rushed towards Tong Chuan in an incomparably fearsome manner.

A terrifying energy pounced over in a substance like manner. Immediately, even Tong Chuan's Six Yuan Nirvana Stage golden body felt a kind of piercing pain. His eyes quickly turned exceptionally solemn. That was because Lin Dong's punch posed a serious threat to him.

“Hack!”

The parched large blade within Tong Cheng's hand was lifted high up. After which, it once again hacked downwards with great force. That strange force was pushed to its limits at this moment!



Clang!

The dragon arms and Desolate Blade directly collided together at this moment. Immediately, an indescribable wild and violent strength swept apart. Crack lines also spread in a lightning like manner on the ground.

“Chi chi!”

Traces of dark gray force rapidly flowed out from the Desolate Blade wherever the fist made contact with it. It swiftly flowed out from the Desolate Blade. After which, they eroded Lin Dong’s dragon arms from continuously. Under the erosion from that force, Lin Dong’s dragon arms actually showed signs of shrivelling.

“You have just joined the Desolate Hall. Allow this senior to teach you just how frightening the Desolate Force of the Desolate Hall is!” Tong Chuan looked at this scene, laughed coldly and said.

“Desolate Force huh?”

Lin Dong focused his eyes slightly. That strange energy seemed able to turn everything into a barren state and its eroding force was extremely strong. The dragon spirit from earlier had ended up losing much of its defences because of the eroding force, which resulted in it being destroyed with just a blade strike.

Other people might feel troublesome to deal with this kind of

force but unfortunately, Lin Dong was not one of them.

“Devour!”

A thought passed through Lin Dong’s mind before a powerful devouring force erupted from his Devouring Ancestral Symbol. Traces of black lines quietly spread over Lin Dong’s dragon hands and swallowed all of the Desolate Force that invaded Lin Dong’s body.

Tong Chuan’s expression drastically changed the moment he realized that his Desolate Force was being swallowed. Clearly, he had also sensed something.

“Your force is useless against me.”

Lin Dong raised his head slightly and smiled towards Tong Chuan, whose face had changed drastically. His dragon hands were immediately tightly clenched. Surging force spluttered out like tide water from an extreme distance.

Bang!

The dragon fist violently collided onto the Desolate Blade. A wild and violent strength poured out in an extremely peremptory manner, ignoring that mysterious Desolate Force.

Crack!

When this wild and violent strength seeped out, numerous crack lines immediately appeared on the Desolate Blade. After which, the crack lines widened and directly burst apart under the stunned gazes of Tong Chuan and many other Desolate Hall's disciples.

Boom!

After the Desolate Blade was shattered, the remaining shockwind swept towards Tong Chuan in a storm like manner. Immediately, it sent the latter flying and he was only able to regain his footing after he haphazardly retreated for a dozen over steps.

The platform became much quieter after Tong Chuan's body stabilized in a miserable manner. The many disciples of the Desolate Hall faced each other before quietly inhaling a breath of cold air.

Lin Dong had actually shattered the Desolate Blade?

Being disciples of the Desolate Hall, they were clearly aware of just how powerful the Desolate Blade was. This was a martial art that the disciples of the Desolate Hall must learn and it was their preferred offensive strike. However, it was now shattered by just a single punch from Lin Dong.

When everyone watched Lin Dong, who had halted his attack in midair, they were aware that the victor of this spar was already decided.

Lin Dong's swelled dragon's arm wiggled rapidly. After which, they transformed into ordinary hands. He did not went overboard and chase after his opponent. This was the Dao Sect, not the Ancient Battlefield. The person in front of him was also his senior and not a life or death enemy. Therefore, the rule in the Ancient Battlefield, where one must kill or completely cripple the other party, was not applicable here.

Lin Dong raised his head after his hands returned to normal. He cupped his hands towards Tong Chuan in the distance and softly said, "Senior Tong Chuan, thanks for letting me win!"

# Chapter 646:

---

Tong Chuan was defeated.

The atmosphere on the platform above the Pill River quieted down. There was some dense shock that still remained in the eyes of quite a number of people. Clearly, the end results had exceeded their expectations.

Tong Chuan might not be considered to the elite amongst the Desolate Hall disciples, but he was fairly famous amongst the direct disciples. Hence, these Desolate Hall's disciples were filled with shock when they saw this result.

“Tch tch, this Hundred Empire War champion name really contained some real substance to it.”

“That's right, Lin Dong has just joined the Desolate Hall. If he is allowed to train here for some time, it is not impossible for him to even catch up with senior Pang Tong and the others.

“Looks like our Desolate Hall is going to produce another outstanding person. Haha, it's just as well. In this way, it will boost the reputation of our Desolate Hall. Otherwise, we might end up being firmly suppressed by the other three halls during the annual Hall competition.”

“Ugh, base on what I know, there are people amongst the top disciples of the other three halls who have already begun to study the three great Mysterious Scriptures. On the other hand, our

Desolate Hall...”

“There’s no choice. What can we do since our Great Desolation Scripture is so damn abnormally difficult. Just endure it. As long as someone successfully understands the Great Desolation Scripture, our Desolate Hall will definitely obtain the number one spot!”

“Difficult.”

Private conversations spread from the flat platform. The eyes, which those disciples from the Desolate Hall, looked at Lin Dong with, no longer had a playful tinge. Instead, a seriousness replaced it. Although Lin Dong was a new disciple, his strength was sufficient for them to take him seriously.

At this moment, Tong Chuang’s expression changed in a volatile fashion for a moment before he sighed helplessly. Although Lin Dong’s Yuan Power mastery had only reached the four Yuan Nirvana Stage, he was able to match up to a six Yuan Nirvana Stage expert when his strength was combined with his equally powerful Mental Energy. Moreover, Lin Dong’s powerful physical body caused Tong Chuan to feel an even greater fear in his body. The punch from earlier allowed him to understand that if Lin Dong truly intended to kill him, he would definitely not only appear this miserable on the surface, even though he had the protection of the Nirvana Golden Body.

“Junior Lin Dong, I admire you. With this strength of yours, I have nothing to say if it is your turn for the Pill River Head Immersion.” Tong Chuan cupped his hands towards Lin Dong and

said.

Lin Dong hurriedly cupped his hands together. Tong Chuan was quite a good loser. He did not end up becoming angry from embarrassment just because he lost. This caused Lin Dong to form a good impression of the former. Often, the enemies that Lin Dong met within the Ancient Battlefield continued to plot against each other and would use any means to achieve their objectives. It could be said to be quite a scheming place. Compared to that place, Desolate Hall was undoubtedly much more peaceful and quieter. Although there was competition, it's intensity was much more subdued compared to the Ancient Battlefield.

Liu Bai's group quietly sighed in relief within their hearts after seeing Tong Chuan adopt a softer stance. It seemed like Lin Dong's actions had successfully establish a deterrence effect.

“Haha, this place is quite lively.”

A laughter was transmitted from the sky just when Liu Bai and the rest were signing in relief. After which, two figures appeared on the platform and smiling looked at everyone.

“These disciples greet the two hall chiefs!”

All the disciples from the Desolate Hall immediately revealed a respectful expression and spoke in unison when these two figures appeared.

Wu Dao smilingly waved his hand. He glanced at Lin Dong and teasingly said, “Since it is your turn, you should begin the Pill River Head Immersion. Also, this is the hall chief of the Desolate Hall, Chen Zhen.”

Lin Dong involuntarily curled his mouth when seeing that smiling face of Wu Dao. This old fellow had clearly arrive a long while ago. However, he did not show himself. His intention was to wait for Lin Dong to personally act and resolve this issue.

“This disciple Lin Dong greets hall chief!”

Lin Dong ignored Wu Dao and turned his eyes towards the white haired old man beside the latter. The latter also had a face full of smiles and he appeared quite friendly. However, with the help of his Mental Energy, Lin Dong was able to sense a vast and mighty Yuan Power ripple that was even more majestic than Wu Dao's.

This ripple was just like the ocean. It was deep and unfathomable.

“This is hall chief Chen Zhen and he has likely reached the Advance Mysterious Life Stage level.” Lin Dong was speechless as he quietly noted to himself.

After the Nirvana Stage was the Mysterious Life and Death Stage. This stage is divided into the Mysterious Life Stage and the Mysterious Death Stage. Each stage is further divided into three levels.



Initial, advance, perfect.

Chen Zhen should be at the level of the Advance Mysterious Life Stage. If he takes one more step, he would be able to reach the Perfect Mysterious Life Stage and form an undying body.

The Life Stage of the Mysterious Life and Death Stage. For the Life Stage, it will give rise to the Life Qi. After it fuses with the Yuan Power, it will cause the Yuan Power within one's body to grow and become boundless like the oceans. Usually, as long as one steps into the Mysterious Life and Death Stage, one would be able to heal oneself regardless of what terrible physical injuries one suffered, unless one's Yuan Spirit was badly damaged.

As the Life Qi within one's physical body becomes increasingly majestic, it could even raise a skeleton of the dead. Once one's strength reach the Perfect Mysterious Life Stage, one would be able to regenerate one's limbs. From a certain point of view, it could be considered as an undead body!

One's physical body at that time would truly be terrifying!

If the Life Qi of the Mysterious Life Stage can allow one to possess an extremely powerful physical body, the Death Qi of the Mysterious Death Stage would enable those who possess it to have an extremely terrifying destructive strength, with just the raise of his hand.

Everything ceased to exist under the Death Qi!

Of course, this level was really a little too distant to the current Lin Dong. Even in this Eastern Xuan Region, one would be considered as the elite as long as one could step into the Mysterious Life Stage. As for the Mysterious Death Stage, someone at this level would be an Elder rank bigshot even within the Dao Sect and the other super sects.

Chen Zhen glanced at the young man in front, who had a respectful expression. His sharp eyes enabled him to sense the ferocity that was hidden under his friendly eyes. This hidden ferocity enabled him to understand that the young man in front of him definitely hid a wolf in his bones. This wolf was usually hidden. However, if someone truly touched it, those ferocious teeth would definite be bared.

“No wonder he is able to rely on his low rank empire origin to come out on top within the Ancient Battlefield.” Chen Zhen sighed softly in his heart. He had a clear understanding of the situation in the Ancient Battlefield. At the same time, he also clearly understood just how much effort someone from a low rank empire had to put in, in order to become the champion of the Hundred Empire War. This young person in front of him had definitely experienced many things.

A trace of unknown emotion involuntarily rose within Chen Zhen’s heart when he thought of this point. He had also experienced the Ancient Battlefield a very long time ago and he merely came from a middle rank empire.

This young person in front of him was no different from him back then. It was just that this person was even more persistent

than him.

“You will be the direct disciple of the Desolate Hall in the future. Just treat this as your home.”

Chen Zhen’s old and wrinkled face had a faint but genuine smile on it. He gently extended his shrivelled hand and rubbed Lin Dong’s head.

Lin Dong was stunned for a moment because of Chen Zhen’s action. He looked at the elderly face behind him before moving his lips a little. However, he did not say anything. All he did was slowly lower his head. Deep within his heart, he began to feel a rare emotion towards this place that he had just joined.

This emotion would usually only appear within that little Lin family in Qingyang Town in the past.

Although this emotion was extremely slight, only those who knew Lin Dong well would be able to know that it was not an easy matter to get his usual cautious self to reveal such an emotion.

“This old fellow...” Little Marten raised his eyebrows slightly. However, there was a gentle arc on his handsome face. Lin Dong was not someone who was easily moved by a sentence or anyone’s actions. As such, this current scene was clearly not a bad start.

Before one is integrated into a sect, one must at least approve of it.

“Haha, begin the Pill River Head Immersion. Little fellow, normally speaking, one would obtain more benefits the longer one endures. What level you can reach will be entirely dependant on your ability.”

Chen Zhen smiled slightly. He withdrew his rough hand before looking towards Wu Dao. The two of them moved and they rushed from the flat platform and charged into that majestic Pill River.

“Lin Dong, enter the Pill River!”

Lin Dong withdrew his emotion after hearing Wu Dao’s low cry. He nodded slightly. After which, his toes pressed on the platform and his body rushed out. Finally, he charged into the Pill River with a surging Nirvana Qi in front of the many envious eyes!

# Chapter 647: Nirvana Golden Qi

---

Boom boom!

The Pill River began to surge. Vigorous Nirvana Qi materialized into tidal waves that rolled endlessly. The display of might from the Pill River was much more fearsome than any normal river.

Chen Zhen and Wu Dao hovered above the Pill River. Even as dense Nirvana Qi was pounding against their bodies, their clothes did not waver at all. They appeared to be using their Yuan Power to defend themselves against the collision from the Nirvana Qi. Lin Dong was secretly envious at this sight. This is the disparity of strength between him and them. They were not on the same level.....

Meanwhile, the Desolate Hall disciples were rushing onto the side of the Pill River platform with their eyes focused on the Pill River. Their gazes were filled with envy. Pill River Head Immersion was an extremely rare event that took place only once every year. Nirvana Golden Qi, which was produced in the depths of the Pill River, had an extremely powerful nourishing effect on Nirvana Stage practitioners. However, very little Nirvana Golden Qi was produced each year. Otherwise, it would be of great help to the Desolate Hall's disciples.

“I wonder how many days can Lin Dong endure this time around!”

“Yeah. Nirvana Golden Qi is extremely violent. The moment it

enters your body, it will break into your nervous system and blood vessels. It might even be life-threatening for those unlucky ones. The guy who obtained the privilege of the Pill River Head Immersion last year is Senior Fang Yun, right? He managed to stay in the Pill River for four days.”

“Given Lin Dong’s current strength, I guess he should be able to stay in the river for four days.”

“Who knows?”

On the platform, everyone was looking at the youthful figure that was above the Pill River. At the same time, whisperings and murmurings broke out from the onlookers.

“Is the Pill River Head Immersion dangerous?” After hearing those murmurs, Mo Ling and his counterpart looked frantically at Little Marten and asked.

“Originally, the Pill River is created from the purest Nirvana Qi. In the depths of the Pill River, a multitudinous amount of Nirvana Qi fuse together under the ambient pressure. As time passes, the fusion creates an extremely pure energy, which is known as the Nirvana Golden Qi,” Little Marten explained plainly.

“There’s another name for this kind of Nirvana Golden Qi. It’s also called the Yuan Spirit Qi...”

“Yuan Spirit Qi?” Mo Ling and the rest were startled.

“When a Nirvana stage practitioner is going through the seventh Nirvana Tribulation, the Nirvana Qi in his or her body will automatically transform into that Yuan Qi. From a different perspective, the same situation is what’s happening with the Nirvana Golden Qi in the Pill River. The Nirvana Golden Qi will be formed after going through numerous rounds of fusion and refinement. It’s just that the Nirvana Golden Qi here has no consciousness of its own.”

If one can successfully absorb the Nirvana Golden Qi here, not only will it be greatly beneficial for the growth of his strength, it will make the process of his Yuan Dan evolving into a Yuan Spirit much more smoother as well....”

“There are such benefits?”

Upon hearing these, Mo Ling and the rest were shocked. Forming the Yuan Spirit is an important step in the Nirvana Stage. When a Yuan Spirit was created, even if one’s physical body was destroyed, one would not die instantly. However, even though Yuan Spirit was rather useful, it was not easy to create one. The risk of creating a Yuan Spirit was much more higher than passing through a Nirvana Tribulation. Therefore, when they heard that Nirvana Golden Qi could make the process of creating a Yuan Spirit smoother, they were extremely shocked.

“There are indeed a lot of benefits. However, Nirvana Golden Qi can be rather uncontrollable for practitioners at your level. The moment you lose control of it, your internal body will be in a state of chaos. In the end, not only do you not manage to reap any

benefits, but you will end up with a bunch of internal injuries.”

“Furthermore, the Nirvana Golden Qi is hidden in the depths of the Pill River. If one wants to obtain the Nirvana Qi, one will have to enter the depths of the Pill River. The ambient pressure there is enough to crush a Four Yuan Nirvana stage practitioner. It’s not an easy task to withstand the pressure, while absorbing the Nirvana Golden Qi at the same time,” Little Marten explained.

“Oh I see..” Everyone finally understood what was going on.

Upon seeing everyone’s facial expressions, Little Marten merely smiled and shifted his gaze towards the young figure above the Pill River. Indeed, the Nirvana Golden was extremely violent. However, it would not pose any death-dealing threats to Lin Dong, who had been practicing the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill.

.....

“Let’s do it!” Above the Pill River, Chen Zhen looked at Wu Dao and chuckled.

“Ok!”

Wu Dao nodded his head slightly. Soon after, his facial expression became sombre gradually. With a wave of his sleeves, boundless and vigorous Yuan Power swept out of his body like a tidal wave and materialized into an enormous Yuan Power-made



bolt that directly plunged into the Pill River. Then, it started stirring ferociously like a gigantic rod.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

As that enormous Yuan Power-made bolt started to stir, the Pill River boiled instantly. Waves and currents were surging violent. Following which, a black-colored whirlpool formed rapidly on the surface of the Pill River.

The whirlpool extended quickly into the bottom of the Pill River. The jet-black whirlpool was like the mouth of the devil, making one's hair stand.

“Buzz buzz!”

Clearly, the whirlpool was expanding rapidly. As the width of the whirlpool's mouth reached approximately one hundred feet, a golden radiance appeared in the bottomless darkness.

Swish!

The golden radiance shot out from the whirlpool like a shooting star that streaked across the dark sky. Finally, when it reached the top of the sky, an abnormal violent energy wave erupted.

“Nirvana Golden Qi!”

When everyone on the platform saw the golden radiance shooting out of the whirlpool, cries of surprise broke out and their eyes were filled with fervent.

“Lin Dong, enter the depths of the Pill River and absorb the Nirvana Golden Qi. If you can’t take it anymore, crush this piece of jade and I will bring you back!” Chen Zhen roared as the golden radiance appeared. With a wave of his sleeves, a gold-colored jade flew towards Lin Dong.

“Yes!”

Without any hesitation, after Lin Dong caught the gold-colored jade in his hand, his body trembled and vigorous Yuan Power engulfed his body. Following which, he materialized into a streak of light and surged into the swirling whirlpool without the slightest bit of uncertainty.

As Lin Dong entered the whirlpool, Chen Zhen took action as well. Boundless Yuan Power gushed out from his body and enveloped the entire whirlpool. Soon after, the whirlpool began to spin slower. Eventually, the whirlpool was forcefully froze.

“Phew!”

Upon seeing the whirlpool froze, Wu Dao let out a sigh of relief. With a wave of his hand, he withdrew the gigantic Yuan Power-made bolt into his body. Then, he shifted his gaze towards the whirlpool that was emitting golden radiance and pursed his lips involuntarily.

“What happens next will have to depend on his capabilities. The longer he endures down there, the more beneficial it will be for him,” Chen Zhen as he dusted his hands.

“How many days do you think this lad can hold out?” Chen Zhen suddenly asked smilingly.

“Should be around five days,” Wu Dao muttered as he gave a conservative estimate.

“Five days is a rather good result. However, I guess this estimate is far from what you expect deep in your heart? Don’t you always hold him in high regard?” Chen Zhen laughed.

“Alright, my estimate is eight days,” Wu Dao stroked his beard and replied.

Chen Zhen was slightly startled. Then, he maintained his composure and continued, “You’re rather blunt. From what I know, among the younger generation who has undertaken the Pill River Head Immersion, only Ying Xiaoxiao managed to hold out for eight days in the river.

“I have never once believed that Lin Dong is weaker than that girl...” Wu Dao smiled insipidly.

“Then, why don’t you think about what happened further back in the past? That year, Senior Zhou Tong lay on the bed of the Pill

River and absorbed all the Nirvana Golden Qi before swaggering out of the river,” Chen Zhen chuckled.

“Haha, Senior Zhou Tong is an exceptional talent who mastered the Great Desolate Scripture. I don’t have such expectation for Lin Dong,” Wu Dao chortled.

“You...”

Chen Zhen broke out into laughter and shook his head. Then, he shifted his gaze towards the whirlpool that was emitting golden radiance and said softly, “Since you have such high expectations of him, we shall see how many days this lad can hold out.”

As Chen Zhen finished his sentence, he stopped talking for awhile. Then, he muttered to himself, “If a miracle occurs, that will be the best scenario. The Desolate Hall has been too quiet these past years. It’s time for some excitement.”

# Chapter 648: The Bottom of the Pill River

---

The dark vortex channel was like a gigantic black python as it charged barbarically into the Pill River, before finally connecting with it's deepest depths...

Ding!

From within the channel, a light ray suddenly shot out explosively while travelling at a frightening speed towards the deepest depths of the vortex. At this moment , a golden ray of light started to gradually brighten in the darkness of the depths.

“Have I finally arrived...”

Lin Dong narrowed his eyes and stared at the enormous golden light in front of him. From with the golden light, he felt a fluctuation that was extremely vast and savage. That was likely the golden Nirvana Qi that was born at the depths of the Pill River...

“This fluctuation feels somewhat familiar...” Lin Dong muttered to himself, before a jolt went through his mind as he recalled. Was this the same golden energy that was present within his body after swallowing the Yuan Spirit that was in Lin Langtian's body? From the looks of it, these two types of energy should be similar. However, the Nirvana Qi that was born within the Pill River did not have any consciousness and was not subject to anyone's control.

“Looks like the pressure is starting to increase...”

Lin Dong's eyes were staring at the two flanks of the vortex, before moving towards the bottom of the river. The pressure was gradually getting stronger and stronger, and soon it made his skin feel uncomfortable.

The Pill River was unlikely any ordinary river and the liquid that was flowing through it was not ordinary river water. Instead, it was formed by Nirvana water created from the condensation of Nirvana Qi. The pressure resulting from it was something even a Nirvana Stage expert like Lin Dong, did not dare to underestimate.

“RING!”

With a thought, azure light started to surge around his body, immediately dissipating much of the pressure. Following his gradual mastery of the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill, the resilience and strength of Lin Dong's physical body had exceeded that of a Six Yuan Nirvana Stage expert.

After the green light fully enveloped Lin Dong's entire body, he didn't hesitate and explosively shot outwards. Finally he shot out of the vortex channel and headed towards pulsating golden light at the bottom of the river.

HISS!

When Lin Dong just came out of the vortex channel, he started to sink downwards violently. A vastly stronger pressure started to seep into him, causing the green light enveloping him to turn

slightly dimmer.

After realizing this situation, Lin Dong's expression turned solemn and serious. With a faint tremor of his body, row after row of green scales started to rapidly wrap around his entire body. Just like a suit of armor, they covered almost every inch of his body.

With the emergence of the scale armor, the pressure immediately dissipated, finally allowing Lin Dong to observe his surroundings. This was the bottom of the Pill River, however no silt or mud was present. Instead it was filled with rich golden light which radiated outwards, forming an area with a radius of roughly ten metres. Outside of this radius of golden light was a dark and murky environment.

Lin Dong gaze swept around his surroundings meticulously, before congealing on the large patch of golden light in front of him. At the bottom of the Pill River, the golden light and the Nirvana Qi existed beside each other, with not a slightest hint of mixing.

“So this is the Nirvana Golden Qi, what a savage and potent energy...”

Lin Dong slowly stretched his dragon scale covered palm and reached within the golden light. As his hand reached deeper and deeper, he gradually felt a viscous sensation. The violent fluctuations that followed caused Lin Dong to feel a faint stabbing pain on his hand.

“It’s time to act.”

Lin Dong gave a sigh in his heart and no longer hesitated. With a step he entered into the radiating golden light.

Humm!

As he walked into the golden light, the scales on his body started to produce a faint humming noise. Green light started to blossom outwards, protecting Lin Dong against the corrosion caused by the violent energy.

After completely submerging himself within the golden light, Lin Dong proceeded to sit down. With a solemn expression, he formed a seal with both hands, as a suctioning force started to pulsate outwards from his body.

ROAR!

As the suctioning force started to proliferate, the calm golden light started to seethe violently. Golden Qi bubbles started to explode around Lin Dong’s body, as ray after ray of golden light shot into Lin Dong’s body like a thunderstorm.

As the rays of golden light shot into his body, they exploded into countless amounts of golden mist as they enter his body before travelling deeper into his body’s core.

HISS!



As those golden fog attached onto his internal organs, Lin Dong's face turned boiling hot. Sucking in a deep breath, clattering sounds could be heard escaping from the seams of his teeth.

The mist was like boiling lava and as it coursed through his body, his meridians, muscles and even bones started to gradually turn red hot, akin to being roasted by fire.

“Such violent Nirvana Golden Qi, however this is not enough to deter me!”

Lin Dong clenched his teeth and with a thought, a mysterious dragon roar started to resound within his body. This sound wave started to spread to every corner of his body. When it reached his meridians, muscles and bones, a faint green glow appeared on them. While being gradually enveloped by the green glow, a faint and abnormally ancient aura started to emerge within his body.

This aura was like the dragon race of the ancient times.

Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill was a skill that allowed a human's body to train to the level that rivaled the true dragon race. This was in addition to the True Dragon Qi that Qing Zhi had left within his body, something that was only possessed by the elite dragon race. This allowed Lin Dong's physical body to slowly evolve from inside as he continued to practice the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill.

It was common knowledge to everyone that no matter how

strong and resilient a human's body was, the organs was always the weakest spot. Generally if an opponent were to pierce these organs, the resulting damage would most likely be life threatening. However the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill was different. It allowed not only the the skin and the muscles to increase in resilience, even his internal organs and blood vessel were gradually strengthened as he continued training...

This was the most abnormal part of the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skin, which was why Lin Dong didn't hesitate in learning it. He knew that if he was able to master it, his physical body will definitely rival that of a true dragon!

Since he possessed such a resilient body, wanting to absorb the violent Nirvana Golden Qi was not as difficult as expected for Lin Dong.

CHI CHI!

Once again, the golden mist lunged towards those organs covered by the green glow. However this time, the severe pain that it caused was greatly reduced. The mist slowly entered his flesh and bones. At that moment Lin Dong could faintly feel a violent energy, akin a raging dragon, starting to grow within his body...

While the Nirvana Golden Qi was tempering his flesh and bones, a large amount of them was also sucked away by Lin Dong's Yuan Power. As those Yuan Power flowed within his meridians, they started to turn increasingly vigorous.

As he examined the changes that are happening to his body, a hint of a smile appeared on Lin Dong's face. Nirvana Golden Qi was an absolutely wonderful supplement for Nirvana Stage experts. Not only would it strengthen the body, it could increase the vigour of one's Yuan Power. The rate of improvement was many times faster than ordinary training.

“This place is not bad, all this Nirvana Golden Qi should not be wasted...”

Lin Dong opened his eyes faintly and looked at the ten metre radius of golden light within the Pill River's depths. Within this light radius were thick and copious amounts of Nirvana Golden Qi. This time, Lin Dong's expression when he looked at them, was filled with greed.

With the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill, Lin Dong was able to disregard that enormous pressure. Furthermore, it allowed him to easily endure the pain that would torture a normal Nirvana stage expert to death when absorbing the Nirvana Golden Qi. Although the pain was still present, it was not hard for Lin Dong to endure it.

“However, the pressure is getting heavier and heavier...”

Lin Dong glanced at the dragon scales on his body and noticed their dimming green glow. The originally bright green glow was gone. It seems like the pressure here was slowly increasing in intensity.

However now that Lin Dong had a taste of the benefits of the Nirvana Golden Qi, he would naturally not give up that easily .As for the growing pressure, he wanted to find out how much more his physical body could endure.

“Devour it!”

Lin Dong start to create a seal before before a pulsating black hole started to appear with his palm. The next moment, Devouring Force started to spread out from it.

WHISH!

With the appearance of the Devouring Force, the floating clump of golden light started to fluctuate violently. Streams of golden light started to form, flowing with a frightening speed into the black hole in Lin Dong’s palm.

Following the absorption of a large amount of Nirvana Golden Qi, Lin Dong’s face started to glow with a faint gold light. From far, he looked akin to a solemn and dignified buddha.

At this moment, as he continued to devour, Lin Dong’s aura started to slowly climb!

# Chapter 649: Movement

---

A cluster of golden light lingered at the bottom of the dark Pill River and it appeared extremely dazzling. However, at the bottom of the Pill River, which was filled with a frightening pressure, only the golden light cluster would infrequently explode and form gold coloured air bubbles, which emitted a slight clear sound in the process...

One could vaguely see a figure seated within the dense golden light that was a couple of hundred feet in size. The viscous Nirvana Golden Qi around his body was just like numerous water streams that continuously poured into that figure. A slight buzzing sound quietly appeared.

After one sight shot into the light cluster, the figure finally gradually become clear. Green coloured scales reflected a faint green light. However, one could vaguely see a faint bright red colour in the gaps between those scales. A little bloody scent emerged from within.

Lin Dong had already sat for three days at the bottom of the Pill River.

During these three days, the pressure around him grew increasingly stronger. This situation was as though the pressure of the entire Pill River was gradually gathered towards his direction. That endless growing pressure was sufficient to cause one to feel fearful.

In the face of this gradual increasingly terrifying pressure, the pores all over Lin Dong's body was still gradually pressured by the great force until blood traces flowed out from all of his pores. Although he was not seriously wounded, the continuously increasing pressure would definitely reach quite a terrifying degree, should this continue.

At this moment, Lin Dong finally completely sensed just how great a price he must pay if he wanted to successfully absorb all the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of this Pill River...

That increasingly terrifying pressure was something that even he, who had practiced the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill, did not dare to underestimate...

Although the pressure was frightening, Lin Dong also reaped plenty of benefits during these three days. As traces of Nirvana Golden Qi entered his body, he could clearly sense that his physical body was also gradually being strengthened and the tempering originated from within. Even his blood and flesh appeared to be nourished with strength...

Following the strengthening of the physical body, the Yuan Power that flowed within Lin Dong's inner channels also grew increasingly powerful. It was just like galloping river water that whistled past. Waves after waves of unusually powerful energy were directed to all of Lin Dong's limbs and bones.

Lin Dong could clearly sense that the strengthening of his Yuan Power during these three short days, could be comparable to ten times that from his normal training!

This was quite a frightening number. However, it was not overly incredible. The Nirvana Golden Qi was something that was agglomerated from extremely pure Nirvana Qi. The Nirvana Qi that was contained in just a little trace of it, would be able to compare with the result of the training of an ordinary person in one day...

Of course, with the strengthening of one's physical body and Yuan Power, the thing that really surprised Lin Dong was another matter that occurred.

There were quite a number of things in Lin Dong's Dantian. The one that occupied the middle was a fist size dim golden coloured Yuan Dan. The Yuan Dan was slowly rotating and continuously swallowing the vast and powerful Yuan Power.

Above the Yuan Dan was a large cluster of green coloured Qi. Dragon roars was continuously emitted from within. The aura churned and it vaguely gathered into a rising dragon manner.

This cluster of green Qi was naturally the Heavenly Dragon Qi that Qing Zhi had left behind. It was far too wild and violent and Lin Dong was unable to completely absorb it. All he could do was to gradually control it through the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill and allow these Heavenly Dragon aura to naturally merge into his body.

At the bottom of the Yuan Dan was a flowing golden light. There was an extremely mysterious ripple present within the golden

light. This was the Yuan Spirit Qi that he had obtained after swallowing the Yuan Spirit within Lin Lang Tian's body. From a certain point of view, the Nirvana Golden Qi that Lin Dong was currently absorbing could be considered the same type of energy.

Lin Dong clearly did not understand the utility of the Yuan Spirit Qi, which was not something that he could control at his level. Hence, he had always placed it within his Dantian while waiting for his strength to advance before controlling it in the future.

That was Lin Dong's plan. However, during these three days when he was absorbing Nirvana Golden Qi, he discovered that each time he absorbed a little of the Nirvana Golden Qi, there would be some golden light charging into his Dantian and merging with this Yuan Spirit Qi, gradually strengthening the latter in the process.

This event also caused Lin Dong to be a little shocked. This Yuan Spirit Qi was after all something that belonged to that Yuan Spirit. Although Lin Dong believed that he had already eroded all of the consciousness within it, this occurrence still caused him to feel a little uneasy.

Fortunately, as the Yuan Spirit Qi grew stronger, it did not break free of his control. Only the golden light became brighter by the day. The originally somewhat illusory golden light had also become a lot more corporeal.

Lin Dong was able to sense an unusually powerful fluctuation from within this cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi. This kind of fluctuation had some difference from Yuan Power. However, Lin Dong could sense that this Yuan Spirit Qi appeared to possess an extremely



shocking lethal force.

“I want to see just what you are thinking of doing...”

Lin Dong's mind observed that cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi while muttering in his heart. The interior of his body possessed the mysterious Stone Talisman and the Devouring Ancestral Symbol guarding it. Even his Dantian possessed that Ancient Universe Formation. Hence, he did not believe that this thing could misbehave in his body.

.....

Time quietly flowed passed within this quiet bottom of the Pill River. In the blink of an eye, five days had already passed.

During these five days, the bottom of the Pill River continued to remain silent while the outskirts of the Pill River grew extremely lively.

A large group of Desolate Hall Hall disciples were clustered together on the river platform. Quite a number of people also stood on some of the platforms surrounding the Pill River. Although most of them were training, their eyes were all gathered in one direction without any prior agreement. That place had already become an isolated zone with a whirlpool over it.

Their eyes were filled with surprise. This was because Lin Dong had already remained at the bottom of the Pill River for five days.

Moreover, he did not show any signs of breaking out from the river...

The disciples of the Desolate Hall Hall were clearly aware of just what this time represented. Currently, one of the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall Hall, Fang Yun, was merely able to endure for four days before being unable to endure the pressure and coming out of the river while receiving the Pill River Head Immersion last year. Moreover, he was covered with fresh blood and appeared exceptionally miserable when he came out.

However, the time that Lin Dong had currently endured for had already exceeded this timing. Did that not mean that Lin Dong's mettle was even tougher than Fang Yun?

If this was really the case, it seemed that their Desolate Hall Hall was going to produce another fearsome person. Moreover, this fearsome person had just joined the Desolate Hall.

Chen Zhen's and Wu Dao's figure did not move above the Pill River. However, their eyes were locked onto the whirlpool below. Their expressions were becoming a little serious.

"That little fellow is really able to endure..." Wu Dao fondled his beard. His voice contained a joy and pleased note that could not be hidden.

"Enduring for five days. He could be considered to be above average amongst the disciples of the four halls when it comes to receiving the Pill River Head Immersion..." Chen Zhen also smiled.

Of course, the most important thing was that Lin Dong still showed no signs of breaking out of the Pill River despite having already endured for five days. In other words, it meant that he could still continue.

By relying on his exceptional ability, Chen Zhen was able to vaguely sense the obscure aura at the end of the whirlpool...

“This Pill River is unique. The pressure below will become increasingly frightening each day. Those last few days are truly the most difficult to endure through.” Wu Dao softly said.

“Let’s just wait. As long as this little fellow is able to endure for another three days, his result will equal that girl Xiaoxiao...” Chen Zhen smilingly said.

Wu Dao nodded slightly. Three days might appear quite short but for Lin Dong, who was at the bottom of the Pill River, it was likely that he would have to pay a hefty price.

Whether he could endure on would depend on his own ability...

.....

Time passed by a day at a time under the great anticipation of the many disciples in the Desolate Hall. The atmosphere of the Desolate Hall also soared suddenly as time passed. Some of the direct disciples who were usually undertaking a retreat and train bitterly were also disturbed. Finally, they came out of their retreat

and crowded around the Pill River.

When Lin Dong had entered the Pill River for the seventh day, this news was directly spread everywhere. Some of the disciples from the other three halls also heard of it. Immediately, the Desolate Hall became lively. The disciples from the other three halls would occasionally hurry over. After all, being able to receive the Pill River Head Immersion and endure it for seven days, was something that only a rare few seniors could achieve.

Moreover, the thing that really caused their hearts to be shaken when that the whirlpool was still completely calm when the seventh day arrived and there was not the slightest activity. The fellow deep under within the Pill River did not show any signs of coming out...

Looking from the situation in front of them, it seemed that Lin Dong would very likely endure until the eighth day. This result was something that only the senior sister Ying Xiaoxiao amongst the younger generation of the current Dao Sect had reached...

Could it be that this new disciple, who had joined the Desolate Hall for only a couple of days, was actually as talented as that senior sister?

The faces of quite a number of disciples changed a little when they thought of this. This new person, who had become the champion of the Hundred Empire War, really did appear to have some ability.

The eighth day finally arrived while these many people were waiting quietly. After which, the entire Dao Sect began to show signs of boiling because of it...

However this boiling had not lasted for long when everyone became strangely quiet. This was because they discovered that...

Lin Dong still did not show any signs of appearing!

# Chapter 650: Uproar

---

A figure was quietly seated on a flat platform deep within the Sky Hall of the Dao Sect. Surging Nirvana Qi spread out from the Pill River. Finally, it lingered around her like a fog, causing her to appear a little more ethereal.

Swoosh!

However, her silent training did not continue for long. A somewhat anxious rushing wind sound suddenly appeared from behind. This caused her to frown slightly.

“Elder sister, something big has happened!”

However, before she could even issue a reprimand, a clear voice was transmitted behind her. The red dressed Ying Huanhuan’s lovely body gently landed on the platform and anxiously said.

“What happened?” Ying Xiaoxiao glanced at the panting Ying Huanhuan behind from the corner of her eyes. Her tone did not have much fluctuation.

“Do you still remember that Lin Dong whom I mentioned to you before?”

“That Hundred Empire War champion who forsook the Sky Hall and joined the Desolate Hall, right? Why? Has he provoked you again?” Ying Xiaoxiao swept her long hand over the green long

sword and spoke without raising her head.

“That fellow obtained the qualification for the Pill River Head Immersion the moment he entered the Desolate Hall, since he obtained the champion spot of the Hundred Empire War.” Ying Huanhuan said.

“He is the Hundred Empire War’s champion. It is not overboard to enjoy such a reward. What are you unhappy about?” Ying Xiaoxiao was not surprised. Therefore, she spoke in a casual manner.

“That’s not it. That fellow...” Ying Huanhuan’s suet jade like long hand was clenched. She immediately gritted her teeth and said, “That fellow has already stayed at the bottom of the Pill River for eight days.”

“Oh?”

Some emotion was finally revealed on Ying Xiaoxiao’s quiet pool like face. She turned her head with some surprise and said, “He has actually endured for eight days?”

Being someone who had also experienced the Pill River Head Immersion, Ying Xiaoxiao clearly understood the terrifying pressure at the bottom of the Pill River. Back then, she could only endure for eight days despite her best efforts. This result was already the best amongst the current younger generation of the Dao Sect. It was unexpected that there was actually someone who was able to accomplish the same results as her today.

“It seems like Lin Dong is skilled indeed...”

“How could that fellow be compared with elder sister. You are the most outstanding younger generation member in our Dao Sect all these years...” Ying Huanhuan curled her lips and said.

“However, the Pill River of the Desolate Hall cannot be compared to ours and the pressure created is different. Nonetheless, it is not easy for him to be able to endure eight days.” Ying Xiaoxiao softly said.

“But...” Ying Huanhuan hesitated for a moment. Finally, she clenched her teeth and said, “But that fellow still does not show any signs of coming out even after staying for eight days at the bottom of the Pill River!”

After Ying Huanhuan’s words sounded out, she could sense Ying Xiaoxiao’s figure froze momentarily. The latter’s hand, which was holding onto the green longsword also tightened in an instant. Clearly, a rare wave had been stirred in the latter’s heart because of her words.

“He has yet to show any signs of coming out?” Ying Xiaoxiao’s body stiffened for a moment, before she finally turned her head around. Her pretty face was somewhat solemn as she looked at Ying Huanhuan and inquired.

“Aye... Currently, quite a number of disciples from the four halls are paying attention to the Pill River of the Desolate Hall. It is



rumoured that the fellow is still at the bottom of the Pill River and has yet to show signs of surfacing...” Ying Huanhuan laughed bitterly. It was simply too difficult for him to imagine that the fellow, who was reprimanded by her for thinking too highly of himself, would actually obtain such a great result during the Pill River Head Immersion.

“So it’s like this...” Ying Xiaoxiao’s pretty eyes were focused. Her delicate finger gently landed on her sword. It seems like their Dao Sect had recruited quite an outstanding disciple this time around.

“Elder sister, the best result any Dao Sect disciple achieved during the Pill River Head Immersion is enduring for around eight days or so? Just what happened to this fellow this time around? Could he have been directly pressured to death?” Ying Huanhuan muttered.

“The Desolate Hall’s teacher-uncle Chen Zhen is definitely observing Lin Dong closely at this moment. How could he have not detected it if the latter was already crushed to death?”

Ying Xiaoxiao rolled her eyes while facing Ying Huanhuan. Immediately, a deep thought flashed across her eyes as she said, “Typically speaking, enduring for eight days or so during the Pill River Head Immersion should be the most outstanding result. However, there are also some exceptions during the history of our Dao Sect.”

“Oh?” Ying Huanhuan was startled.

“Back then, senior Zhou Tong endured for thirteen days. Of course, it is not that he was unable to continue enduring. Instead, it was because he had completely absorbed all the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of the Pill River during those thirteen days...” Ying Xiaoxiao slowly explained.

“Completely absorbing all of it?” Ying Huanhuan was involuntarily stunned. The Nirvana Golden Qi was extremely wild and violent. Even those experts who had reached the seven Yuan Nirvana Stage would have difficulty absorbing all of them. Every year, almost all of the disciples from the four halls who possessed the qualification to obtain the Pill River Head Immersion, did not dare to overestimate themselves and absorb all of those Nirvana Golden Qi. All they thought about was to try their best to endure one day longer at the bottom and absorb a little more Nirvana Golden Qi...

One party was trying their best to absorb a little more, while the other was intending to absorb all the Nirvana Golden Qi. These two were already at two completely different levels.

“However, elder sister, the senior Zhou Tong that you mentioned should be that super fearsome person who comprehended the Great Desolation Scripture and charged up to the Yuan Gate to kill three of their great elders, right?” Ying Huanhuan suddenly recovered and spoke weakly.

Ying Xiaoxiao nodded slightly. Even her heart involuntarily felt an unusual worship towards this person when mentioning his name. Of course, it was likely that many Dao Sect’s disciples regarded him as a god...

With only a sword, he charged up to the strongest faction in the Eastern Xuan Region, Yuan Gate, and killed three great elders one after another. In the end, he forced the Yuan Gate to activate the great sect formation to avoid a calamity. Even the chief of the Yuan Gate, who possessed an extremely high status within the Eastern Xuan Region, was forced to intervene...

Although the final situation caused the Dao Sect to be incomparably furious, they involuntarily felt some pride under this fury. So what if it was the Yuan Gate? Our Dao Sect's disciple is able to kill three of your great elders!

The Yuan Gate and the Dao Sect were always on bad terms and there were also numerous conflicts amongst their disciples. One of the reasons was because of Zhou Tong's incident back then.

"How could that fellow called Lin Dong be comparable to senior Zhou Tong!" Ying Huanhuan bit her lips and demanded.

"However, the current situation is reality. There are only two reasons why he continues to stay at the bottom of the Pill River. One is that he had been pressured until he can no longer move and cannot leave as he pleased. The second is that he also possess the same thought as senior Zhou Tong. He wants to completely absorb all the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of the Pill River!" Ying Xiaoxiao spoke faintly.

"Although I am not aware of how he is able to do so, his potential is indeed quite shocking..."

Ying Huanhuan widened her mouth but she did not say anything. A moment later, she finally muttered, “Could it be that elder sister thinks that this fellow will become like senior Zhou Tong?”

“Senior Zhou Tong is an exceptional genius. Even if Lin Dong is able to absorb all of the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of the Pill River, there is still a huge gulf between him and senior Zhou Tong in terms of their achievements. One should at the very least wait until he truly comprehends the Great Desolation Scripture before judging...” Ying Xiaoxiao softly replied.

“Moreover... whether he is currently able to do what senior Zhou Tong did and absorb all the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of the Pill River in an overbearing fashion is still uncertain.”

“However, this matter will likely come to a conclusion soon. I am also very curious...”

Ying Xiaoxiao turned her head around. Her eyes looked towards the direction where the Desolate Hall was located. Some interest flashed across her pretty eyes. She also wished to see just what kind of great ability this Hundred Empire War champion, who had stirred quite a big commotion the moment he entered the Dao Sect, actually possessed.

Being the most lively place currently within the Dao Sect, the sky above the Desolate Hall’s Pill River was frequently filled with the sound of rushing wind. Numerous figures stood on the platforms around. Their eyes were all locked towards a direction. That was

the black whirlpool that was at the middle of the Pill River.

Currently, news that Lin Dong had endured for eight days within the Pill River had become common knowledge within the Dao Sect. Even some elders had come over to witness it. They also paid great attention to this. After all, amongst the current younger generation of Dao Sect, only Ying Xiaoxiao had done it before.

Of course, the thing that they paid most attention about was that Lin Dong still showed no signs of appearing despite enduring for eight days. This scene stunned quite a number of extremely experienced people within the Dao Sect to. That was because...

It seemed like a similar situation had also occurred a century ago. At that time, the one who had caused this uproar, the one who charged into Yuan Gate all by himself, his name was called Zhou Tong.

Some of the older generation members looked towards the direction of the Desolate Hall's Pill River from a great distance. They muttered to themselves, "Our Dao Sect... could another Zhou Tong emerge again?"

# Chapter 651: Dragon Yuan Ring

---

Bam bam!

Golden light permeated the quiet dark bottom of the Pill River. Soft bubble bursting sound was repeatedly emitted from within before a shocking ripple vaguely spread apart.

Eleven days had passed since Lin Dong entered the bottom of the Pill River. Although the Desolate Hall had turned into an uproar because of this, during this period of time, the deepest region of the Pill River was completely silent. Only the slight fluctuating breath within the golden light cover, gave this place an extremely faint amount of life.

During these eleven days, the Nirvana Golden Qi, which was originally hundreds of feet wide, was currently only a couple of dozens of feet in size. Although the size of the Nirvana Golden Qi had shrunk, the Nirvana Golden Qi within had grown extremely viscous. There was even a trace of it solidifying.

As the Nirvana Golden Qi grew thicker, the pressure within it became extremely terrifying following the accumulation over the eleven days. Even a six Yuan Nirvana Stage expert would definitely not be able to endure for long due to the pressure.

Crack crack!

Shifting one's focus into the flickering bright golden light of the Nirvana Golden Qi, it was possible to hear a slight cracking sound

that was emitted only because of the great pressure. There was partial visibility within the golden light, revealing a figure that was seated within.

That human figure was just like an old monk quietly seated within the golden light. A layer of green scale armour covered the surface of his body. However, the green light that was currently on the scale armour had become completely dull. Some crack lines had also surfaced on the scale armour. Clearly, it had reached its limits.

There was some redness on the cracks of the scales. If one was to carefully observe it, one would discover that it was actually some solidified blood. The dark red colour caused one to be startled when looking at it. One could tell how bitterly Lin Dong had endured during this period of time.

The Pill River was quite mysterious. The pressure that grew daily in the deepest part was becoming even more frightening by the day. Currently, after eleven days of accumulation, the pressure had reached a terrifying level. If it was not because Lin Dong had mastered the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill, he might be forcefully crushed by this pressure until he turned into a lump of flesh.

Despite so, if one's eyesight could penetrate through the layer of scale armour, one could still see the cracked wounds that were formed on Lin Dong's skin. The bottom of the Pill River was actually so frightening...

Although Lin Dong's body was filled with injuries, his eyes were

still tightly shut. Waves after waves of Devouring Power continued to spread from within his body, swallowing those wild and violent vicious Nirvana Golden Qi domineeringly.

The current him urgently needed these things. That was because with the gradual accumulation of the Nirvana Golden Qi within his body, Lin Dong appeared to have sensed something unique.

The thing that he was most intrigued by was the Yuan Spirit Qi within that cluster of gold coloured Nirvana Qi.

After eleven days of absorbing Nirvana Golden Qi, the accumulation of this cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi within his body had also increased by multiple times. Moreover, it was exceptionally thick. Numerous golden coloured treads lingered and rotated within it, giving it an extremely beautiful appearance.

Lin Dong's mind was similarly focusing on this Yuan Spirit Qi. With its strengthening, Lin Dong was able to sense a terrifying strength within it.

That should be the so-called Yuan Spirit Force. Only the experts, whose body had formed a Yuan Spirit, would be able to use this powerful energy. This energy was something Lin Dong that greatly coveted. He was aware that if he could control this energy, it would definitely become quite a strong finishing move.

Sizzle!



A slight ripple appeared within the golden Yuan Spirit Qi. An endless amount of golden coloured treads were tangled with each other within it and appeared to be merging with each other. With the merger of these golden threads, this irregularly shaped cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi showed signs of being able to transform into various forms.

Lin Dong quietly observed the change of this cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi. Immediately, he sunk into deep thought. After all, he had yet to reach the seven Yuan Nirvana stage and his body had yet to produce Yuan Spirit Qi that belonged to him. Although this thing currently existed within his body, it was impossible for him to manipulate it as easily as something that he had been created through training.

These Yuan Spirit Qi was after all something foreign. Only by creating his own Yuan Spirit Qi, would he be free himself of any shackles, At that time, even if he was destroyed, his Yuan Spirit would still survive.

Even though he was unable to transform all these Yuan Spirit Qi into his own Yuan Spirit, he was able to transform it into other things.

Thoughts swiftly flew within Lin Dong's mind. These Yuan Spirit Qi contained an extremely sharp and overbearing strength. If he was to abandon it and not use it, it would truly be a waste of resources.

“Since it cannot be transformed into my own Yuan Spirit, I shall transform it into a Yuan Spirit object!”

A thought flashed through Lin Dong's heart. Only those experts who had completely formed their Yuan Spirit were able to create something like this. However, Lin Dong was currently quite rich in Yuan Spirit Qi and he should be able to succeed...

After making up his mind, Lin Dong immediately revealed his resolute character. The pressure of the bottom of the Pill River also gradually began to strengthen.

The Yuan Power within his body was at the peak of the four Yuan Nirvana Stage and it was possible for him to breakthrough to the five Yuan Nirvana Stage anytime. Therefore, he must make the best use of his time now.

Buzz buzz!

The order from his mind was swiftly transferred into that cluster of golden Yuan Spirit Qi. After which, the latter immediately began to wiggle swiftly. Countless gold threads collided with each other and merge. A shocking ripple was emitted from within.

Amidst this collision, this cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi actually began to strangely shrink gradually. The Yuan Spirit Qi also became increasingly thick and sticky while it grew smaller and smaller.

“Refine!”

A low and deep voice suddenly sounded within Lin Dong's heart.

After which, black devouring strength swiftly surged into the Dantian. It arrogantly wrapped around the gold coloured ball. Amidst this wrapping, the gold coloured liquid ball began to slowly collapse. They became like a pile of noodle that was slowly molded into a disc shape.

This was a delicate task that required precise control. Fortunately, Lin Dong was able to easily able to control the Devouring Power. Hence, little flaws occurred. That Nirvana Golden Qi that emerged as liquid, was gradually taking shape under Lin Dong's command.

This transformation was quite a slow process. Moreover, one could tell that even though Lin Dong possessed the Devouring Power to assist him, it was still extremely tough for him to do so. A large amount of Yuan Power was swiftly consumed. It was fortunate that there was Nirvana Golden Qi continuously flowing into his body and completely replenishing him.

Buzz buzz!

With the gradual flow of time, the gold coloured item also slowly took shape. Although it still appeared rather crude, it was vaguely possible to see an exceptionally sharp ripple being emitted.

The black Devouring Power was just like a graver that continued to dance over the cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi. Much focus was placed on its orbit.

Under this kind of focus, the shape of the Yuan Spirit Qi began to

undergo a drastic transformation. It slowly unleashed all of the sharpness it possessed.

While Lin Dong was focusing on shaping the cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi, the originally dim scale armour outside of his body had dimmed completely. Crack lines appeared on its surface. Some frightening pressure had begun to seep into the scale armour and directly pressed onto Lin Dong's body.

Creak!

Blood shot out from Lin Dong's skin under this heavy pressure. Within a short moment, it had dyed his skin completely red, giving him an extremely shocking appearance.

“The scale armour is unable to endure any longer huh...”

Lin Dong had clearly also sensed the intense pain that was transmitted from the surface of his body. He immediately frowned a little. The Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill could be considered his strongest defence. It is unexpected that it was also unable to endure this pressure for a prolonged period. However, Lin Dong currently needed to forge that cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi and he was unable to divert any attention to deal with the pressure outside.

“I need to hurry up.”

Lin Dong softly muttered before his mind once again looked into

his Dantian. A black coloured light flashed passed that spot within lightning like speed and continued to cut that cluster of Yuan Spirit Qi.

Slash slash!

After Lin Dong muttered to himself, those black light suddenly flashed at an even faster rate. Numerous black afterimages appeared. Slashing sound resounded over the entire Dantian.

With this increased speed, the Yuan Spirit Qi also began to wiggle increasingly rapidly. It appeared as though something was about to be born.

Lin Dong's mind was extremely focused, while some anxiety also surfaced within his heart.

Swoosh!

The black light cut through the Yuan Spirit Qi in a lightning like manner before it suddenly paused. After which, the light cut through a little of the Yuan Spirit Qi again. In an instant, that action appeared to be like the final dot of a dragon eye when drawing a dragon. Bright golden light suddenly erupted from within his Dantian.

The gold light fluctuated and only slowly scattered a moment later. Lin Dong's mind also instantly shot towards the area below his Dantian. Golden light was deposited there. There was vaguely a

shocking sharpness spreading from it.

The golden light spread and a golden item slowly surfaced. It was a palm size golden ring. The edge of the golden ring contained eight sharp protruding scale teeth. The scale teeth were not straight. Instead, it was curled at an angle. A light fluctuated at the curl and golden light shot in all directions.

There was vaguely some dragon lines appearing on the golden ring. It appeared lifelike at a glance, looking just like a huge dragon rising to the sky. Its aura was powerful.

Lin Dong was a little surprised as he looked at this golden ring, which had taken shape. A wild joy immediately surged up his eyes. He could sense an extremely frightening ripple from this golden ring and that ripple caused even himself to feel fearful.

This was a fearsome weapon that was formed entirely from Yuan Spirit Qi!

Although it was not a soul treasure, its strength would definitely exceed that of the Black Dragon Sky Roaring Seal!

“I shall call you the Dragon Yuan Ring!”

Lin Dong parted his mouth and smiled. He allowed this golden ring to quietly lie within his Dantian. When he fought with others in the future, this thing would definitely be able to catch the other party by surprise. Its sharpness was sufficient to penetrate the

defences of a seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert!

“Next, it’s time to take care of the things outside...”

Lin Dong muttered to himself. His mind swiftly withdrew from the interior of his body. After which, he opened his eyes and looked at the viscous Nirvana Golden Qi outside. A smile surfaced on his blood dyed face. He could sense that the surging Yuan Power within his body seemed to be at the point where it was about to make a breakthrough...

# Chapter 652: Five Yuan Nirvana Stage

---

Crack.

Faint spider-web like cracks rapidly appeared on the surface of his scale armor, and the green glow enveloping them grew extremely faint. Small pieces of scales continuously broke off, before they were grinded to dust by the frightening surrounding pressure.

Lin Dong looked at his rapidly crumbling scale armor before his face turned incredibly solemn. However, he did not panic. Although the pressure from his surroundings is fearsome, it had not reach the level where he had no choice but to retreat.

“I’m curious to see how terrifying this pressure actually is!”

Lin Dong cracked a smile as a tremor tore through his body. At this moment, the layer of scale armor emitted cracking noise, before it broke into countless pieces and shattered. Finally, it was reduced into dust and scattered off.

ROAR!

Following the dissipation of his scale armor, endless torrents of frightening pressure instantly swarmed every inch of Lin Dong’s body. Immediately, a few bloody wounds started forming on his body.



“WHOOSH!”

Following the swarm of frightening pressure, a mysterious black shade started to seep bit by bit out of Lin Dong's body. At the end, it transformed into a glowing black membrane that fully enveloped his body.

On the surface of the membrane were innumerable microscopic black holes, which were swirling around and emitting pulses of Devouring Force. They proceeded to gorge and devour the thick Nirvana Golden Qi in his surroundings and that formless pressure!”

Obviously, the pressure originating from the depths of the Pill River, was not something that could content with the overbearing Devouring Force that could swallow everything in the world!

Vigorous amounts of Nirvana Golden Qi accompanied the pressure and endlessly entered Lin Dong's body. Under the all out swallowing, the surrounding golden glow started to shrink bit by bit. At the same time, the aura that was emanating from within Lin Dong started to grow in strength...

After completely settling the problem within his body, the outside pressure was no longer able to cause much trouble for Lin Dong. At this rate, this lump of Nirvana Golden Qi would actually be completely swallowed by him...

The domineering nature of the Devouring Ancestral Symbol was once again clearly displayed!

Time passed rapidly at the depths of the Pill River as the golden glow continued to grow dimmer. At the same time, the temperature of Lin Dong's body gradually started to rise, causing steam bubbles to form within the icy cold river water.

As the water started to boil, the Yuan Power fluctuations that was slowly spreading out from Lin Dong's body suddenly turned violent. Ripples started to spread endlessly out from Lin Dong's body before fully dissipating at a distance away.

From the looks of it, the Yuan Power within Lin Dong was in an unstable state. And this unstable state was an indication of an upcoming Nirvana Tribulation!

By drawing support from Pill River Head Immersion, Lin Dong's strength had increased, allowing him to officially attack the Five Yuan Nirvana Stage!

Lin Dong quietly sat at the bottom of the Pill River, as violent Yuan Power seeped out of his body. Even the frightening pressure present here was scattered by the emissions, forming a region of a few feet around Lin Dong's body.

“Has it finally arrived...”

Lin Dong's skin was bright red as he slowly opened his eyes, revealing a relieved and joyful expression within them. He had been waiting for this day for quite some time now.

The fifth Nirvana Stage Tribulation was not an easy task for most Nirvana Stage experts. However, considering the resilience of his body, Lin Dong did not have much to fear. The Green Heaven Materialized Dragon skill not only made Lin Dong's skin and muscles hardy and resilient, even his internal organs and viscera were much more stronger than those experts of similar cultivation levels.

“Since it has arrived, let me experience just how frightening the fifth Nirvana Tribulation is!”

As he pursed his lips, Lin Dong formed a seal with his hands, before shutting his eyes tight again. Soon after, a frightening heat wave erupted from within his body and radiated outwards. Crackling sounds were formed as violent waves spread across all directions.

Boom Boom!

Wild and explosive Yuan Power violent erupted from Lin Dong's body, causing the river water surrounding him to explosively vibrate. In contrast, his body was just like an old tree with deep roots, which did not move a single inch within those violent water flows.

Clearly, Lin Dong's fifth Nirvana Tribulation had officially arrived!

.....

The bottom of the Pill River hand was violently churning due to the fluctuations caused by Lin Dong. However it was still calm and serene on the surface of the Pill Over. Occasionally, waves would swell up, causing the Nirvana Qi to spread and fill the air.

The various platforms surrounding the Pill River were now completely filled with people. Currently, Lin Dong had already stayed at the bottom of the Pill River for eleven days. This news had rapidly spread throughout the entire Dao Sect and the resulting commotion was clearly inevitable.

Within the Dao Sect, there would always be a few elite disciples that would undergo the Pill River Head Immersion every year. However amongst them, the longest amount of time one endure was eight days. And these few people were without a doubt the most outstanding individuals within the younger generation sect members.

However this time, there was actually a person who managed to stay at the bottom of the Pill River for eleven full days!

This result clearly outshone every other younger generation member. This was also something that the current most outstanding younger generation member, Ying Xiaoxiao could not compare with!

What made people suck in their tongue the most was that, the fellow who achieved such a frightening result, was actually a new disciple that had just entered the Dao Sect...

When this news spread, it undoubtedly attracted attention from everywhere. Many disciples came over after catching wind of the news as they wanted to clarify their doubts. This was the main reason why the Desolate Hall was so lively these few days.

On the platform that was closest to the Pill River, stood an ample amount of people. These people had formed four distinct circles, and within each of them, stood an individual who stood haughtily.

There were gazes from the surrounding people that continuously glanced over the four people. Their gazes were all filled with respect and admiration. The reason for this was that these four people, were the most illustrious senior direct disciples within the Desolate Hall.

Standing at the rightmost was a man with an exceptionally muscular body. Dressed fully in grey, he had a tense expression that was devoid of smiles. With arms longer than usual and resembling that of an ape, he exuded a frightening aura. This person was the big senior disciple of the Desolate Hall, Pang Tong!

The person who was closest to Pang Tong, had a totally different physical stature. He was thin and small, with eyes brimming with intelligence and the occasional piercing gaze. Although there was quite a large number of well built Desolate Hall disciples standing behind him, their imposing aura was incomparable to his. He was the second senior disciple of the Desolate Hall, Song Zhou.

On the left of Song Zhou, stood a man fully dressed in dark red

showing a cold and stern face. Hands crossed in front of his chest, he coldly stared at the Pill River in the distance while his gaze devoid of compassion. At his side, stood Tong Chuan with an awkward expression, who was seemingly hesitating about saying something.

“You good for nothing. You let the chance of having the Pill River Head Immersion slip away from your hands. Furthermore you were actually beaten by a newbie, truly disgraceful...” the man dressed in red mocked in a cold voice.

“Big brother Jiang Hao, Lin Dong’s actual skills are not weak. It is justifiable that I lost to him. Please calm down.” explained Tong Chuan bitterly.

“I know what to do, and I don’t need you to teach me! Hmph! He may be skilled, however, I, Jiang Hao ain’t a person who is easily bullied! I would like to see how arrogant this batch of newbies are! They didn’t even show big senior respect!” said Jiang Hao casually.

Hearing that, Tong Chuan only laugh bitterly and shake his head. Jiang Hao’s short fuse was famous within the Desolate Hall. Adding to the fire, the incidents that Lin Dong had churned up was too large, which even made those senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall feel slightly irritated.

“Hey, senior brother Jiang, this new guy is quite extraordinary. Enduring at the bottom of the Pill River for eleven days is something that even the current you and me would find difficult to accomplish. If you want to take action, please be careful not to hit a brick wall...’

On the far left stood a youth dressed in white. This youth was the youngest member amongst the four of them.

He was the fourth senior disciple of the Desolate Hall, Fang Yun. He was the youngest amongst the four, however his talent and intelligence was truly frightening. Just after entering Desolate Hall for two years, he had managed to reach a cultivation level similar to Pang Tong.

“Hmph! Only by testing, would we know how capable he is! This isn’t measured by the lips of a glib talker!”

Jiang Hao shot a look at Fang Yun and said: “I wouldn’t have thought that even you guys who had shut yourselves off to cultivate, would be attracted by this sight. Looks like you guys also hold Lin Dong in an important light.”

“One must be taken seriously if one is able to endure the Pill River Head Immersion for eleven days...Haha, there is a possibility that the contenders for the Great Desolation Scripture this year would increase by an extra person...”

Fang Yun teased and laughed before turning his gaze towards the calm Pill River. He muttered, “In the past, senior Zhou Tong only managed to endure for twelve days...”

Jiang Hao’s gaze narrowed slightly and he did not reply. However that gaze was gradually turning solemn...

While it was noisy and lively within the surroundings of the Pill River, a sudden gust of strong wind blew past a mountain top far away. Two shadows descended from the sky and landed on top of a huge tree, while looking down towards the Pill River in the distance. From their appearance, one could immediately tell they were the big senior sister of the Sky Hall, Ying Xiaoxiao and her sister Ying Huanhuan.

“That fellow has yet to surface ...”

Ying Huanhuan uttered as she stared at the Pill River. Unable to resist and biting her lip, she resentfully said: “It can’t be? Is that fellow truly able to reach the same result as senior Zhou Tong? How is this possible? Is there any justice in this world? How could that fellow ever match up to the likes of senior Zhou Tong!”

“It would be great if he did not surface today. If so, his result would only equal that of senior Zhou Tong...”replied Ying Xiaoxiao on a soft voice as she held on to her green sword.

After hearing that, Ying Huanhuan gawked before understanding her meaning in a short while. Lin Dong had endured all this while because his goal was actually the same as that of senior Zhou Tong. And that was to fully absorb every last bit of Nirvana Golden Qi from the bottom of the Pill River. Hence, if Lin Dong was to surface now, it would mean that he only took eleven days to completely absorb all of the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of the Pill River.



In the past, senior Zhou Tong took twelve days!

If that were to happen, Lin Dong's result would be even more terrifying than that god like existence that was in the hearts of many Desolate Hall disciples!

When she thought about this possibility, Ying Huanhuan could not help but use her pearly white teeth to bite her lips. She was truly unable to imagine, how the fellow who regarded himself as infallible, could actually surpass the idol in her heart.

“He should continue and stay in there...” muttered Ying Huanhuan as she rolled her eyes.

Ying Xiaoxiao shot a look at her helplessly. Just when she tried to reply, her facial expression suddenly changed and she turn quickly turned and faced towards the direction of the Pill River. At there, the tranquil river surface suddenly started to bubble and boil. A frightening Yuan Power fluctuations started to erupt in waves from the Pill River.

“It seems like this matter would not end up the way you wanted...”

Ying Xiaoxiao stared towards the now bubbling Pill River and took a deep breath of the icy cold air. Letting that trace of coldness invade her heart and mind, she muttered this statement softly.

# Chapter 653: Emerging from the River

---

Splash splash splash!

The water on the Pill River suddenly boiled while numerous large waves rose and churned. Finally, they slammed onto the surrounding platforms, emitting a loud bang.

The sudden commotion in the Pill River also attracted the attention of countless pairs of surrounding eyes. All of them immediately became alarmed and uncertain. Looking at this commotion, could it be that Lin Dong was about to leave the river?

Quite a number of people extended their necks when this thought appeared. They really wanted to see whether this new person called Lin Dong had merely wasted eleven days below or if he had truly absorbed all the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of the river in one go.

The black whirlpool that directly linked to the bottom of the river also showed signs of collapsing at this moment. Numerous unusually wild and violent energy shockwaves continuously emitted from the deep parts of the whirlpool.

“This shockwave... it’s the Nirvana Tribulation.”

In the sky above the Pill River, Chen Zhen and Wu Dao were a little shocked as they observed the black whirlpool. With their ability, they were naturally able to sense that this fluctuation was a sign of an incoming Nirvana Tribulation.

“This fellow. Looks like he has really absorbed all the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of the Pill River...” Chen Zhen’s eyes revealed a solemn expression as he softly said.

“Moreover, he only used eleven days...” Wu Dao gently fondled his beard. The expression on his face also became a little complicated. Senior Zhou Tong was not only viewed by the disciples of the Dao Sect as a god. Even they, the hall chiefs, also felt an admiration from deep within his heart. Yet, a disciple of their Desolate Hall was currently able to surpass that person in terms of the Pill River Head Immersion result...

“Although I do not know what tactic he had used, but being able to absorb all the Nirvana Golden Qi is sufficient to prove his ability. This time around, your eyesight is very accurate. Looks like our Desolate Hall will no longer be overlooked...” Chen Zhen laughed. His voice actually possessed some heat. After all, the Desolate Hall had been neglected for too many years...

“You should not think too highly of this little fellow. It is merely just one Pill River Head Immersion and it does not mean much. If you really want our Desolate Hall to return to glory, we must at least wait until he has truly understood the Great Desolation Scripture before discussing about it. Otherwise, he would still be unable to fight with the top disciples from the three other halls who have understood the three other great mysterious scriptures...” Wu Dao voiced his thoughts. He had always thought highly of Lin Dong. At this moment, however, he could see the situation clearly and he did not wish to place too much burden on Lin Dong. Although this young person was extremely resilient, he was still too young.

“I know what you are thinking. However, with him having performed this matter in this manner, not only us, but even some of the other elders will quietly pay attention to him. The disciples of the three other halls will also focus their attention on him. If he fails to understand the Great Desolated Scriptures, it is likely that the fallout will be quite severe. At that time, there will definitely be some gossips. After all, his performance in this Pill River Head Immersion is a little too shocking.” Chen Zhen was quiet for a moment before speaking.

“Let’s wait and see. There are less than three months left before our Desolate Hall’s annual competition. Currently, only Pang Tong and three other disciples are qualified to study the Great Desolated Scripture. Lin Dong would have to surpass the four of them if he wants to obtain the same qualification. These four fellows are no ordinary individuals. In order to preserve their dignity as seniors, it is likely that they will not allow Lin Dong to pass so easily.”

Wu Dao smiled bitterly and nodded. He had no choice either. After today, all the disciples from the four halls would become aware of Lin Dong. After all, the only one who could obtain such a result in the Desolate Hall during all these years was senior Zhou Tong, who was viewed as a god by many disciples. Therefore, many people would quietly compare Lin Dong with senior Zhou Tong. In this way, it would undoubtedly cause Lin Dong to be covered under an enormous shadow.

The pressure that came from that person would be a huge mountain that was placed in front of Lin Dong’s training route. If he was unable to surpass it, it might end up as an enormous blow

in Lin Dong's cultivation.

Even Wu Dao did not know whether this matter was beneficial for Lin Dong. He was clearly aware that Lin Dong had extraordinary potential. However... the person that he needed to surpass was a demon like genius, who had once shook the entire Eastern Xuan Region...

While Wu Dao and Chen Zhen were conversing, the ripple on the Pill River also become increasingly intense. Waves after waves of wild and violent Nirvana Qi continued to erupt from within the whirlpool. In the end, even some disciples on the surrounding platforms could sense it.

Everyone was highly knowledgeable about the Nirvana Tribulation. Hence, they managed to identify it after a short while. Immediately, their expressions changed a little. Could it be that Lin Dong had truly absorbed all of the Nirvana Golden Qi and was even using it to attempt the Nirvana Tribulation?

Pang Tong and the three other senior direct disciples on a platform also looked at this scene with surprised eyes. This was especially the case for the man named Jiang Hao. His brows were knitted slightly. Immediately, he curled his mouth and said, "He does possess some skill. However, even if he endured through it, he is merely at five Yuan Nirvana Stage."

Being one of the four senior direct disciples, Jiang Hao's strength had already reached the seven Yuan Nirvana Stage. At the same time, he possessed many powerful martial arts and an outstanding combat strength. Lin Dong might have defeated Tong Chuan

previously, but this was not sufficient to strike fear in Jiang Hao's heart. After all, the name of the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall was not just empty words.

Bang!

A light pillar that was agglomerated from the Nirvana Qi violently broke through the surface of the river while carrying a shocking sound along with it.

Bang bang bang!

After this light pillar shot out, it appeared to have sparked a chain effect. The surface of the river broke. Numerous light pillars continuously charged out from it. That wild and violent Nirvana Qi also swiftly spread apart. The vague fiery heat that was mixed within it caused everyone to understand that Lin Dong was currently undergoing a Nirvana Tribulation at the bottom of the Pill River.

“I wonder if that fellow is really able to endure the Nirvana Tribulation. It will really be a joke if he fails...”

Many people's eyes were gathered on the surface of the river. The Nirvana Tribulation was the most terrifying event for any Nirvana stage expert and no one dared to underestimate it. Hence, no one was aware if Lin Dong was able to successfully endure the tribulation.

While the surface of the river was churning, the whirlpool on the surface also became increasingly small. At the end, only a ten feet tunnel remained.

“He is coming out!”

Ying Xiaoxiao’s pretty eyes suddenly became focused while she stood at the top of a distant mountain. Beside her, Ying Huanhuan also hurriedly lifted her eyes. Her eyes did not blink as she stared at the Pill River.

Swoosh!

Ying Xiaoxiao’s voice had just sounded when a bright golden light suddenly erupted from the whirlpool that was about to disappear. After which, it charged out of the Pill River’s surface and headed towards the clouds.

Bang!

The moment this golden light charged out of the river surface, a shocking ripple also instantly swept apart from the golden light.

Everyone’s eyes were all gathered at the golden light at this moment. It appeared as though there was a figure roaring towards the sky within the golden light. A whistle was mixed with powerful Nirvana Qi as it rolled and spread.

The golden light gradually scattered under the focus of the

countless number of gazes. After which, a skinny young figure appeared in front of everyone's eyes.

There was a golden light lingering over that human figure. Looking from a distance away, that light seemed quite extraordinary. Moreover, many people sensed a kind of pressure within the golden light.

“Is that... Yuan Spirit Qi...”

The eyes of Pang Tong's group shrunk slightly. After they advanced into seven Yuan Nirvana Stage, the Yuan Power within their body begin to form some Yuan Spirit Qi. Hence, they naturally knew about this kind of ripple. However, the thing that caused them to be a little afraid was that the Yuan Spirit Qi ripple on Ling Dong's body appeared to be even stronger than them...

“He has absorbed all the Nirvana Golden Qi...” On the mountaintop, Ying Xiaoxiao tightened her long delicate hand as she slowly said.

At this moment, there was no longer any doubt. With Lin Dong's five Yuan Nirvana Stage strength, it was impossible for him to create Yuan Spirit Qi. Hence, there was only one explanation. It was that Lin Dong had genuinely absorbed all the Nirvana Golden Qi at the bottom of the Pill River.

Ying Huanhuan bit her red lips with the back of her teeth. The expression on her pretty face was currently a little complicated. Originally, she disliked this fellow that had just joined. She even



gave him an opinionated and complacent evaluation. However, she did not expect that within less than half a month, this fellow had directly shook the entire Dao Sect...

“What’s so great about it? It is merely a Pill River Head Immersion. If he has the ability, he should go and comprehend the Great Desolated Scripture...” Ying Huanhuan muttered. However, her confidence at this moment had disappeared as she no longer dared to look down on Lin Dong. She had similarly experienced the Pill River Head Immersion and clearly understood just how difficult it was to do what Lin Dong had done...

“Let’s go, there is no need to continue watching on. The Desolate Hall has found quite a good seedling. However, this is insufficient to study the Great Desolated Scripture. Hopefully he can succeed. I also wish to experience just how overbearing the strongest Great Desolate Scripture amongst the four great mysterious scripture of our Dao Sect is.”

Ying Xiaoxiao turned around and ceased staying any longer. Her delicate figure turned into a ray of light that rushed into the distance. Ying Huanhuan also closely followed after a brief moment of hesitation.

In midair, Lin Dong appeared to have sensed something when Ying Xiaoxiao and Ying Huanhuan left. He turned his head and looked towards their direction. Both of his eyes narrowed slightly. It seemed like he was the focus of quite a number of people this time around. However, this was just as well. The future will likely be even more interesting...

# Chapter 654: Senior Direct Disciples

---

The golden light that surged around Lin Dong, who was in the sky, was gradually withdrawn. The sharp pressure also quietly disappeared. After which, he directly descended on a flat platform in front of many pairs of eyes.

When Lin Dong's figure landed, Mo Ling's group, who had been waiting for a long time, immediately came to receive him. Their faces contained some joy.

“Brother Lin Dong, congratulations on successfully enduring the tribulation.”

Lin Dong smiled when he heard the congratulations from Mo Ling's group. After which, his eyes swept over the place and was immediately startled. He did not see Little Marten or Little Flame.

“Where is Little Marten and Little Flame?”

“The Little Marten duo left the Dao Sect three days ago. They instructed me to hand this to you before they left...” Mo Ling shrugged his shoulders. They were aware of just how unfathomable Little Marten was. Therefore, they did not find his unique actions to be strange. Mo Ling also extended his hand while uttering those words. His palm had a flowing golden light within it. Lin Dong could sense a trace of demonic spiritual aura from Little Marten within the golden light.

“They have left huh...”

Lin Dong sighed softly. He curled his mouth and took the golden light from Mo Ling's hand. The golden light was channelled into his body the moment it reached his hand. A blurry figure also appeared within his mind. It was Little Marten.

“Lin Dong, I have taken Little Flame and left first. There is a place in Eastern Xuan Region which is very beneficial to his training. It is likely that you will be quite safe within Dao Sect and I can leave feeling rest assured. Once Little Flame has completed his training, I will bring him back. Additionally, I can also recover some of my strength during this time. In the future... there will be other issues.”

Little Marten's handsome face turned a little shady when he mentioned this point. His voice also contained a trace of densely cold killing intent.

Lin Dong was quiet. He was aware that there were many unresolved issues from the past. Little Marten was the previous owner of the mysterious stone talisman. However, he ended up being forced by others until such a sorry stage. Had he not met Lin Dong, it was likely that he would gradually scatter like smoke within the stone talisman. That fate could be considered miserable.

“I understand your character. If anything happens to me, you will definitely lend me a hand even if it meant risking death. However, I must still tell you that if you wish to assist me in the future, you must increase your strength. Otherwise, I will resolve those issues by myself.”

“Since I have already acknowledged you as my brother, I do not wish for you to seek death for no reason. By being able to force me at my peak state back then to such an extent, my opponent is not some simple person...”

“I will leave a trace of demonic spirit seal in your body and I will contact you directly if anything happens in the future. If something happens to you, you can directly shatter this demonic spirit seal and I will be able to sense it. Grandpa Marten will stand up for you if you suffer any grievances in Dao Sect. It is not the Dao Sect place to bully my brother.”

“Additionally, amongst the three of us, even though that foolish tiger Little Flame has always been on your side, you must show some true ability if you want to be the big brother. Heh, otherwise, Grandpa Marten will not agree to it. Therefore, you should train hard during this period of time...”

Little Martens’ illusory body gradually disappeared after this voice slowly sounded. Finally, it transformed into a golden light that concealed itself in Lin Dong’s body.

“This fellow...” The corner of Lin Dong’s mouth was gently lifted a little. Immediately, the fist under his hand was gradually tightened. He faced the sky and inhaled a deep breath.

“You can be rest assured. Although you refuse to admit it till the day you die, I will surpass you no matter what in order to get you to willingly acknowledge me as big brother. In the future, we three

brothers will definitely make a name for ourselves in this world together...”

Back then, they had walked out from that small Qingyang Town. At that time, one of them was a weak youth, another was a demonic spirit that could disappear anytime. From a certain point of view, the two of them could be considered to have relied on each other until today. This relationship was indeed something that an ordinary person had difficulty understanding.

Lin Dong gradually calmed the ripple within his heart. After all, this was not some life or death separation. With his current strength, Lin Dong already possessed the ability to protect himself and there was even less need to worry about the safety of Little Marten and Little Flame. Currently, Little Marten possessed the physical body of a Celestial Demon Marten and he would not be at a disadvantage even when faced with a Mysterious Life Stage expert. Hence, his strength was considered top tier in the Eastern Xuan Region. As long as no unforeseen incidents occurred, it was likely that they would be extremely safe.

Currently, the only thing that he needs to be worry about is to successfully comprehend the Great Desolated Scripture!

After calming himself down, Lin Dong raised his head and smiled towards Mo Ling's group. He was just about to speak when he suddenly sensed a pair of eyes containing a pressuring feeling shooting towards him. His brows were lifted immediately. He turned his head before his eyes turned towards the spot where the sight came from.

The spot where Lin Dong looked at, stood a dark red clothed man. The man's arm hugged his chest and he had an indifferent expression. Although he did not say anything, there was a powerful pressure being scattered over.

Lin Dong saw a somewhat embarrassed looking Tong Chuan behind this man. His eyes flickered, appearing as though he had guessed something.

“The commotion that you had caused this time around is too big. Even the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall headed over after being informed. That person called Jiang Hao is an extremely renowned person. Moreover, he is extremely protective of those close to him. Tong Chuan is from the same group as him. You should be careful...” Mo Ling softly spoke from beside Lin Dong. His tone contain some worry. No matter how one put it, Jiang Hao was one of the four senior direct disciples and he was one of the most outstanding Desolate Hall disciples.

Lin Dong nodded slightly. He also clearly understood that the disciples within the Desolate Hall were divided into factions. Clearly, the factions of the four senior direct disciples were the strongest. This time around, even though it was justifiable for Lin Dong to take Tong Chuan's spot, it likely caused some people to feel displeased. Competition was something that would not be absent anywhere...

With this thought in mind, Lin Dong looked towards three different directions. There were three other senior direct disciples there. It was possible for him to sense a pressure that was not inferior to Jiang Hao. Based on his estimates, it was likely that all

four of them had advanced to the Seven Yuan Nirvana Stage...

“They are indeed the most outstanding disciples in Desolate Hall...”

A praise flashed across Lin Dong’s heart. Although the Desolate Hall was considered the weakest amongst the four halls, a camel on the brink of death was still stronger than a horse. This foundation was still something that one should not underestimate.

Of course, these four senior direct disciples were indeed no ordinary individuals. However, neither was Lin Dong some soft persimmon. If they were to really fight, Lin Dong would not feel the least bit afraid of them...

Swoosh!

The sound of wind being split apart was transmitted from midair. Immediately, Chen Zhen’s and Wu Dao’s figure appeared on this platform. All the Desolate Hall disciples hurriedly bowed and greeted them when they saw this. Even those four senior direct disciples withdrew their haughtiness. Clearly, all the Desolate Hall’s disciples greatly respected these two hall chiefs.

“Haha, Lin Dong, well done.”

Chen Zhen waved his hands towards the many disciples. After which, his eyes looked at Lin Dong. His old face was covered with smiles. Clearly, he was extremely satisfied with the result that Lin

Dong had achieved during the Pill River Head Immersion.

“Hall chief has overpraised me. I was merely lucky.” Lin Dong hurriedly spoke in a humble manner when he heard this.

Chen Zhen smilingly stared at Lin Dong. The joy within his eyes could not be hidden. He mused for a moment before saying, “With your current achievement, you already possess the qualification to be promoted to become a senior direct disciple despite your brief time here.”

Clamor.

Some uproar appeared from the platform when Chen Zhen’s voice sounded. Numerous envious eyes looked towards Lin Dong. Strictly speaking, there were four types of disciples within the Desolate Hall: branch disciples, desolate hall disciple and the direct disciple. Above the direct disciple is the senior direct disciple...

There were tens of thousands of branch disciples in Desolate Hall, three thousand desolate hall disciples and three hundred direct disciples. However, there were only four senior direct disciples!

From this, one could tell just how distinguished this status was!

Moreover, the most important thing was that only a senior direct disciple had the right to study the Great Desolated Scripture. Many disciples of the Desolate Hall had put in an endless amount of hard



work in order to become a senior direct disciple. However, in front of their very eyes, Lin Dong, who had just entered the Desolate Hall for less than half a month, was actually directly granted an exception and made a senior direct disciple. This caused many people to be so envious that their eyes turned red.

Although they were envious, they clearly understood that the ability that Lin Dong had displayed did entitle him to such an exception...

Lin Dong was similarly startled because of Chen Zhen's words. A joy immediately surged within his heart. In this way, he was one step closer to the Great Desolated Scripture!

“Thank you, hall chief!”

Lin Dong took a step forward. He cupped his hands in thanks. However, his voice had just sounded when a deep cry suddenly sounded from behind him.

“Wait!”

Swoosh!

The eyes of the everyone present turned. Finally, they looked towards the back. The red-clothed Jiang Hao was crossing his hands before he looked at Lin Dong with icy cold eyes. Meanwhile, a frightening Yuan Power ripple slowly spread from within his body.

## Chapter 655: Objection from Jiang Hao

---

On the spacious platform, the atmosphere became much quieter due to his sudden outburst. Quite a few Desolate Hall disciples stared at each other in dismay. However, they closed their mouths shut and kept quiet. All of them understood Jiang Hao's character. Since Lin Dong had seized Tong Chuan's spot for the Pill River Head Immersion, even if this matter did not occur, he would not easily let a new disciple that had spent less than a month in the Desolate Hall become a senior direct disciple...

At the three other directions, the other senior direct disciples Tong Pang, Fang Yun and Song Zhou did not voice out like Jiang Hao did. However, there was a hint of doubt in their eyes. They had all expended great effort to achieve their status as senior direct disciples during the past years. However, as of now, Lin Dong was still a newbie.

Although it had to be said that Lin Dong achieved a terrifying result, this does not mean that he would immediately receive their approval.

Mo Ling and the others frowned and looked at Lin Dong with concerned expressions. They had an extremely good relationship with him and they were naturally happy to see Lin Dong's status within the Desolate Hall rise. However looking at the current situation where Jiang Hao had voiced his opposition, they all felt quite hopeless. Regardless, Jiang Hao's power prestige and fame exceeded Lin Dong's...

However, under the gaze of Mo Ling and the others, Lin Dong

remained calm and collected without a trace of anger. His current disposition gained some admiration from Mo Ling and the rest. Ever since their first meeting, the fellow right in front of them could always maintain a calm and collected composure when facing any thorny situation, before settling everything in the end.

In mid-air, Chen Zhen and Wu Dao shot a look at Jiang Hao while frowning. However, there was no sense of surprise within their eyes as if they had long expected this to happen.

“Jiang Hao, what do you have to say?” said Chen Zhen slowly.

“Senior uncle Chen Zhen, a senior direct disciple is the role model and pride of the disciples in the Desolate Hall. Not only would one need to have outstanding strength, one would need to gain everyone’s trust and respect. Although this junior brother is quite talented, wouldn’t it be a bit too quick to promote him to a senior direct disciple right now?” said Jiang Hao solemnly as he bowed at Chen Zhen.

An ordinary disciple would need to address Chen Zhen and Wu Dao as hall master. However since Jiang Hao was a senior direct disciple, he could address Chen Zhen as senior uncle. From this, it could be seen that a senior direct disciple’s status is quite high.

Chen Zhen frowned and replied: “Jiang Hao, there are always exceptions. If we were to follow the rules and rot without any change, the Desolate Hall would forever remain as the last amongst the four halls!”

“It’s true that there can be exceptions...” replied Jiang Hao. Narrowing his eyes and looking towards Lin Dong, he casually added on: “However I do not believe this junior brother has obtained the qualification for an exception to be made.”

The instant this statement was made, quite a few disciples below the platform pulled at their mouths, as it was slightly cruel.

A trace of anger swept past Mo Ling and the others after hearing what Jiang Hao said. Unknowingly, they had already regarded Lin Dong as their unofficial leader. At this moment, Lin Dong was being ridiculed. Therefore, they naturally felt displeased.

However, although they were feeling discontented within their hearts, they did not dare to carelessly chip in with their comments. After all, this was the Dao Sect and Jiang Hao’s status and strength within the Desolate hall were way above them...

Therefore, the gazes of Mo Ling and the others once again landed on Lin Dong, whose expressionless face now had a faint trace of a smile. Under the numerous gazes, he turned his body around and looked straight at Jiang Hao without a single trace of fear in his eyes.

After noticing Lin Dong’s vision, Jiang Hao slightly curled his lip and crossed his hands in front of his chest. An imposing aura rushed out of him and started to oppress the former. Possessing the cultivation level of Seven Yuan Nirvana Stage was sufficient for him to look down on Lin Dong.

“Senior brother Jiang Hao, would you clarify the boundaries of the qualifications you speak of?” questioned Lin Dong as he stared at Jiang Hao and gave a faint smile.

“The degree of respect and your strength,” said Jiang Hao casually.

“It has been only a short while since I entered the Desolate Hall, so it’s plausible that most of the seniors here are not familiar with me. Thus, on the degree of respect, I truly do not have an edge. However, I can certainly tell everyone here that our Desolate Hall would not be ranked last in the next hall competition!” Lin Dong’s gentle and relaxed words resounded across the platform, causing quite a few disciple to gawk.

These words were relatively rampant, as the strength of the Desolate Hall was greatly lacking compared to the other three halls in Dao Sect. Trying to move up the rankings was not a simple task.

“On what basis do you dare to utter such arrogant words?” said Jiang Hao coldly.

“Based on the fact that I endured under the pill river for eleven days.” said Lin Dong casually while giving a faint smile.

Jiang Hao stagnated for a brief moment before flinging his sleeves and replied with cold laughter: “That does not mean anything. The current you only has a cultivation level of Five Yuan Nirvana Stage, where is your courage coming from?”

“ If junior brother Lin Dong really has the ability to help our Desolate Hall break free from the last rank, it would not be a big issue to make an exception for your promotion.” said a slightly famous disciple standing on the platform suddenly in a solemn voice.

“Yes, if you can achieve what you have just said, there’s no problem with granting you an exception.”

After the statement was made by the disciple, a few other direct disciples added in their opinions. Although Jiang Hao was cunning with his words, all of them knew the potential of being able to endure under the bottom of the pill river for eleven days represented. If Lin Dong was truly able to achieve what he had said and elevate their Desolate Hall from the last rank, this would be an extremely prideful matter for all the Desolate Hall disciples.

After all, for so many years, their Desolate Hall has always been mocked by the disciples of the three other halls. That feeling was truly unpleasant.

“Hmph.”

After witnessing the sudden change, Jiang Hao felt somewhat angry and shouted: “You all can’t be that naive right? It doesn’t matter how terrifying his talent is, how can a new disciple like him possibly compete with the top disciples who have comprehended the three other great mysterious scriptures?”

“If he can’t achieve it, does that mean that senior brother Jiang

Hao can?” a voice rang from the platform refuted.

Jiang Hao’s facial expression turned somewhat ugly. The three great mysterious scriptures were extremely strong. If they were that easily to contend against, why would the Desolate Hall end up in such a pitiful state for so many years?

“Senior brother Jiang Hao, I presume that the current level of respect should suffice, right?” asked Lin Dong with a smile.

Jiang Hao took a deep breath and replied while flames of anger surged within his eyes: “ Such eloquence! However, you can’t thoroughly convince all the disciple here just based on that!”

“I understand.”

Lin Dong faintly nodded his head and instantly and took a slight step forward. Stretching out his right hand towards Jiang Hao, a soft and relaxed voice rang across the platform: “Senior brother Jiang Hao, please guide me!”

Lin Dong was clearly aware that it did not matter what he said. Jiang Hao would never be willing to let this go, thus the only way to resolve it was very simple, fight!

“He has guts.”

On the other three areas of the platform, the three senior direct disciples Tong Pang, Fang Yun and Song Zhou all narrowed their

eyes after seeing Lin Dong's reply. They secretly smiled in their hearts as they thought, did he really treat Jiang Hao as a "kid"?"

Although they had previously seen Lin Dong undergoing the Fifth Nirvana Stage Tribulation, there was still an extremely large disparity when compared to Jiang Hao. Furthermore, the latter's combat prowess was not something an ordinary Seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert could compare with...

Low murmuring voices could be heard spreading out from the platform. There were quite a few people that frowned. As disciples of the Desolate Hall, they were extremely clear on how powerful Jiang Hao really was. Although it had to be said that they had seen Lin Dong's frightening combat prowess, Jiang Hao was not a "kid". He was one of the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall!

"He is just like an adolescent bull which does not fear a tiger."

The corners of Jiang Hao's mouth cracked open slightly and revealed a slight crescent that was either sneering or appreciation. Raising his head and looking towards Chen Zhen, he said: "Senior uncles, do you think I should accept this challenge? Please feel relaxed, I would show ample discretion. I am clearly aware of this junior brother's talent and would not let any serious injuries to befall him. However, since he is now in the Desolate Hall, he has to understand our rules. In the future, I believe he would understand the pained heart of being a senior brother like me."

After hearing that, both Chen Zhen and Wu Dao had a wrinkle on their forehead. A brief hint of hesitation flashed past their eyes. Lin Dong directly challenging Jiang Hao had slightly exceeded



their expectations as they had presumed that Lin Dong would exercise forbearance. No matter what, the former was one of the four senior direct disciples. Being the hall masters of the Desolate Hall, they were very clear about the various successes of Jiang Hao.

“Since Lin Dong has taken the initiative and challenged you, you naturally have the right to accept it. However it would not be held now, instead, it would be held five days later. Coincidentally it is also the date of the monthly competition. At the appointed time, the both of you can fight to your heart’s content.”

Chen Zhen contemplated silently for a moment, before finally flinging his hand and uttering those words solemnly. He understood that passing this obstruction created by Jiang Hao was essential to their plans to grant an exception for Lin Dong to become a senior direct disciple.

“However, Lin Dong, you have just entered the Desolate Hall and have yet to learn the Desolate Hall martial arts. After today, you can visit the Desolate Hall Martial Arts Hall and observe and chose any martial arts in there.”

Lin Dong was faintly startled! It seems like Chen Zhen was not favouring his odds in a fight between him and Jiang Hao. Therefore, he bought him five days’ time to learn the martial arts in Desolate Hall.

“Haha, let’s proceed with whatever senior uncle Chen Zhen has said.”

Jiang Hao gave a casual laugh as he obviously understood Chen Zhen's hidden intentions. Shooting a look at Lin Dong, he flung his sleeves before he said with a smile: "Junior brother Lin Dong, you have to make the best out of these five days. I am certainly not biased against you. If you had entered the Desolate Hall for at least half a year to a year, I would not even mention half a word. However, currently"

Speaking until this point, Jiang Hao shook his head and stopped speaking. However, the meaning behind his words was very clear. He did not believe the current Lin Dong had the qualifications to become a senior direct disciple of the Desolate Hall

Lin Dong faintly smile without a tinge of fear. A gentle chuckle, that was meant to oppose him, slowly spread out.

"Thank you, senior brother, Jiang Hao, for the reminder. Then let's meet again after five days."

# Chapter 656: Martial Arts Hall

---

The commotion caused by the Pill River Head Immersion finally died down following the emergence of Lin Dong. Countless disciples around the Pill River also left with varying emotions. All of them clearly understood that it was likely that all the disciples within the Dao Sect would know about this mysterious new disciple in Desolate Hall called Lin Dong...

Enduring for eleven days under the Pill River. This frightening result was sufficient to surpass every younger generation member in Dao Sect.

After the crowd scattered and everyone began to leave, another piece of information caused many people to be stunned as well.

Lin Dong had issued a challenge to one of the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall, Jiang Hao...

Quite a number of people involuntarily parted their mouths when they heard the news. Although they understood that Lin Dong had no other choice, they still involuntarily sighed within their hearts. This new disciple called Lin Dong was really unwilling to be left alone. Such rare deeds had been done by him one after another.

The Dao Sect was not lacking in talent. However, there was seldom anyone who issued a challenge to the hall's senior direct disciple after having just joined for less than a month. This was because everyone knew the enormous gap that existed between

them.

All the disciples clearly understood Jiang Hao's strength. Seven Yuan Nirvana Stage is quite an outstanding existence in all four halls. Yet, Lin Dong was only at five Yuan Nirvana Stage, despite having successfully endured the Nirvana Tribulation earlier.

Although everyone was clearly aware of the gap between the two, they did not say mock Lin Dong and call him an arrogant fool. The result that Lin Dong had displayed earlier was sufficient to get all the disciples within Dao Sect to withdraw their underestimation. No one was certain if this new person, who had performed a miracle, would be able to continue performing such miracles.

“There will be a good show five days later...”

The various disciples thought in this manner after facing each other. An anticipation surged within their hearts. They wanted to see if Lin Dong would once again display such a shocking performance when faced with an old senior direct disciple like Jiang Hao.

Additionally, everyone clearly understood that if Lin Dong really ended up fighting on par with Jiang Hao, he would become the fastest person in the history of Dao Sect to become a senior direct disciple.

Everyone felt envious within their hearts when they thought of this. At the same time, they also started to look forward to the match five days later...

.....

The next day.

Creak.

Lin Dong pushed open the door and exited. Sunlight scattered down from the sky and shone onto his body, filling him with a warm and comfortable sensation. Both his eyes narrowed slightly before he opened them. The corner of his mouth involuntarily lifted into an arc when he saw this paradise like place being shrouded by fog.

It was really a decent place.

Since Lin Dong was a direct disciple, the place where he stayed at was much quieter than Mo Ling and the rest. Moreover, according to the rules of the Desolate Hall, everyone who was not a direct disciple would have to gather on the Pill River platform and undergo compulsory training. Hence, this mountaintop was quite quiet.

“Have you rested well?”

A familiar laughter was suddenly transmitted over while Lin Dong was enjoying this quiet moment. Lin Dong turned his head, only to see Wu Dao standing a short distance away while smilingly staring at him.

Lin Dong smiled. After which, he cupped his hands together and bowed at Wu Dao.

“You little fellow. This time around, the surprise you have given me is quite great. Eleven days. This result.. It is even better than senior Zhou Tong back then...” Wu Dao slowly walked towards him. His eyes paused on Lin Dong’s youthful face before he softly sighed. There was a complicated emotion in his tone.

“Zhou Tong...”

Lin Dong blinked his eyes slightly. Currently, he was also aware that this senior Zhou Tong was the one who had successfully comprehended the Great Desolated Scripture. Moreover, he was an extremely fearsome person who even charged up to Yuan Gate alone and killed three of their great elders.

“However, you should not be celebrating yet. I am aware that you are hiding many secrets. This time around, it is likely that you used some tactics at the bottom of the Pill River. However, senior Zhou Tong back then solely relied on his own strength.” Wu Dao said.

“At times, having many tactics is also an ability.” Lin Dong shrugged his shoulders. He was always a practical person. As long as it is useful, who cares what it is. After all, there is no absolute fairness in this world. Moreover, these tactics would not appear without reason. In order to obtain them, Lin Dong had to expend great effort and pay a great price for them.

Of course, even though Lin Dong put it this way, he still involuntarily had a heartfelt respect for that senior Zhou Tong. The latter was indeed worthy of being a character who dared to charge up to Yuan Gate alone.

“Little fellow, you are really cunning...”

Wu Dao laughed. He did not refute Lin Dong’s words. After musing for a moment, he said, “Your act of challenging Jiang Hao this time around is a little reckless. Jiang Hao’s strength is not something that Tong Chuan can compare with.”

“I want to study the Great Desolated Scripture. It is unavoidable to face objections from the four seniors.” Lin Dong helplessly laughed.

“With your talent, as long as you train for another half a year within the Desolate Hall, there would definitely be no one who will oppose your promotion to senior direct disciple.”

Wu Dao uttered those words before immediately shaking his head and said, “It is pointless to say anything now. You are also not a reckless person. Since you dare to utter those words, it is likely that you must be confident in your chances. Let’s go. I will take you to the Desolate Hall Martial Arts Hall. Since you are a disciple of the Desolate Hall, you will ultimately need to familiarise yourself with the Desolate Hall’s martial arts.”

Wu Dao did not delay any further after uttering those words. His

body moved and he stepped into the distance. Lin Dong hurriedly followed when he saw this.

The Desolate Hall was extremely spacious. Over a dozen large peaks directly touched the clouds. The fog lingered over the place, giving it the appearance of a paradise. There was some vague training sound being emitted from those mountaintops. A flourishing aura spread over the entire sky.

Under Wu Dao's lead, the two of them flew for around ten plus minutes before they finally landed on a large mountaintop near the middle of the Desolate Hall. One could see a huge ancient stone tower on the top of this mountain.

Green rocks covered the surroundings of the stone tower. A stone path that was formed by stone fragments extended out and led over the whole mountaintop. There were quite a number of Desolate Hall disciples coming and going at this place. When these disciples saw Wu Dao, all of them hurriedly bowed and greeted him. Immediately, numerous strange eyes looked towards Lin Dong. Currently, the latter was also quite a famous person within the Desolate Hall.

Wu Dao nodded slightly towards those disciples. After which, his eyes did not look around as he led Lin Dong and directly headed for that ancient stone tower. When they got nearer, Lin Dong was finally able to sense just how enormous the stone tower in front of his eyes was. Although time had left behind some mottled traces, it also gave the tower an increasingly dense vicissitude aura.

This vicissitude aura represented the foundation and inheritance



of a sect.

Lin Dong looked at the stone tower in front of him before a fiery heat flashed across his eyes. He was clearly extremely curious about this super sect's martial arts.

Lin Dong's eyes shifted down from the stone tower. After which, he looked towards the stone door before his eyes immediately narrowed. There was a grey robed old man at the stone door carrying a broom in his hand and gently sweeping the leaves on the ground.

The elderly man's face was extremely old and his wrinkles were just like gullies. Both his eyes also revealed a gray-white colour and it seemed like he did not have any pupils. At a glance, he was actually a blind person.

However, it is this blind person that caused the Mental Energy within Lin Dong's Niwan Palace to faintly tremble. This situation was something that Lin Dong had encountered for the first time in many years.

The thing that most surprised Lin Dong the most was that he was unable to sense even the slightest Yuan Power ripple from this blind old man.

Wu Dao had clearly noticed Lin Dong's eyes. However, he did not say anything. He walked forward and bowed his body slightly towards that blind old man. However, the latter did not respond. In fact, he continued to sweep the withered leaves.

“I will bring you to this spot. The number of martial arts within the Martial Arts Hall is just like an ocean. What you choose will depend on your own luck. I am also unable to provide you with much guidance.” Wu Dao was not surprised by that blind old man’s reaction. He subsequently turned his head and spoke to Lin Dong.

“But no matter which martial arts you learn, you must remember not to abandon the essence of our Desolate Hall.” Wu Dao placed his hands behind him and said.

Lin Dong was slightly startled. He mused for a moment before softly asking, “Desolate Force?”

Lin Dong had sensed this unique force when he was fighting with Tong Chuan. If it was not because he possessed the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, he would definitely be at a great disadvantage due to that energy.

Wu Dao was clearly extremely satisfied by Lin Dong’s reaction. He nodded slightly and said, “There is a Desolate Stone within the Martial Arts Hall. All the Desolate Hall’s disciples obtain Desolate Force from there. That energy would strengthen the power of your martial arts...”

“Understood...”

Lin Dong nodded. He was also extremely interested in that so-called Desolate Force.

“Go in.”

Wu Dao waved his hand. Lin Dong ceased hesitating upon hearing this. He bowed slightly towards Wu Dao and strode forward. He hesitated for a moment when he passed by the blind old man along the way. After which, he also bowed towards the latter before entering the stone tower.

Wu Dao looked at Lin Dong's gradually disappearing figure and softly exhaled. His eyes looked towards that blind old man before he softly said, “He is that little fellow who was even more outstanding than senior Zhou Tong in the Pill River Head Immersion...”

Chi!

The blind old man, who did not once cease sweeping the ground, finally paused at this moment.

“Back then, senior Zhou Tong merely sat for three days in front of the Desolate Stone to obtain the Desolate Force. I wonder what Lin Dong can do...”

“He is perhaps the disciple with the greatest odds of comprehending the Great Desolated Scripture in a hundred years. If senior is interested, you can pay more attention to him...” Wu Dao looked at the blind old man and softly said.

The old man was quiet for a moment and he did not speak. All he did was slowly keep his broom before he slowly walked into the stone tower. Wu Dao quietly sighed in relief when he saw this. From his demeanor, it seems like he was quite interested in Lin Dong...

“Little fellow, obtaining the Desolate Force is the first step in comprehending the Great Desolated Scripture. If you are unable to even take this step, it is likely that you are not affiliated with the Great Desolate Scripture.”

Wu Dao raised his head, looked into the tower and softly muttered.

# Chapter 657: The Desolation Skill

---

Thud.

Lin Dong slowly walked into the stone tower gently. After experiencing a momentary darkness, his vision brightened up abruptly.

An endlessly vast stone hall appeared in Lin Dong's line of sight. The hall was pervaded with a vicissitude aura. Gentle lights were flickering like hovering spirits in the surroundings.

The stone hall was extremely unique and it did not contain any bookshelves. Instead, it was filled with stone tablets that were of different sizes. Each stone tablet was encircled by a faint glow.

Lin Dong stood at the main door and looked at the seemingly endless number of martial art stone tablets. Soon after, he could not help but suck in a breath of air. This is the strength of a super sect. The number of martial arts here was truly terrifying....

In the stone hall, one could see a few figures who were standing firmly while staring at the stone tablets ahead of them with an extremely focused expression. There were also some people who were seated cross-legged on the floor with their eyes fixated on the stone tablets. These people seemed to be engrossed in the world of martial arts.

Lin Dong strode forward lightly. He slowed down his pace and silently walked through the hall that was filled with martial art

stone tablets. At the same time, his gaze was constantly sweeping through those stone tablets. Those tablets depicted a dazzling lineup of martial arts...

“High-grade Manifestation martial art, Raging Bull Power Skill.”

“High-grade Manifestation martial art, Swimming Dragon Step.”

“Low-grade Manifestation martial art, Water Dragon Blade Technique”

Lin Dong began to get dizzy after sweeping through the stone tablets. The multitude of martial arts blurred his vision. Clearly, the number of martial arts that this hall contained had reached a terrifying number. If any one of these martial arts was to be placed in the Great Yan Empire, it would surely cause a carnage. However, in this place, these martial arts were placed everywhere for the disciples to study.

“How long will it take to find the one...” As Lin Dong’s eyes swept across the multitude of stone tablets, he shook his head helplessly. If he was to check these stone tablets one by one, he would not finish the process even if he took days and nights.

“Let’s check out the Desolate Stone first.”

Lin Dong raised his head and looked into the depths of the hall. Soon after, he quickened his pace and walked past the stone tablets one by one. After approximately ten minutes, he suddenly stopped.

He was slightly astonished as he looked at the direction ahead of him.

A few hundred feet ahead, there was an enormous platform. A gigantic grey stone, which was roughly a few hundred feet tall, silently stood tall and upright in the middle of the platform.

The huge stone was sphere-shaped and its entire body was dark grey in color. It seemed to be covered with moss as well. Indistinctly, one could see a few fine cracks on its body. An indescribable energy wave was constantly emitting from the huge stone.

While Lin Dong was standing at a distance away from it, the energy wave came and collided with him. At that moment, his body shivered and even his mind were slightly dazzled by it. Lin Dong felt as if he was being placed in an ancient desolate land, where heaven and earth was filled with a bleak emptiness. A feeling of desolation pervaded his mind. Even the Yuan Power in his body felt the corrosive effect of the desolation, channelling through his body slower and slower.

Huff!

Lin Dong heaved a breath of air. A solemn look swept across his eyes. That energy wave must be the 'Desolate Force' that Wu Dao was talking about. However, the Desolate Force that was emitted from this huge stone was countless times stronger than Tong Chuan's.

“So this is the Desolate Stone?”

Lin Dong muttered to himself. Then, he shifted his gaze to the platform surroundings. Around the Desolate Stone, there were numerous disciples meditating silently. Traces of ‘Desolate Force’ released by the Desolate Stone were being absorbed by these disciples.

Lin Dong heaved a sigh and stepped forward. Some of the disciples around the Desolate Stone heard his footsteps and turned over. A surprised look flashed across their eyes. Apparently, they recognized Lin Dong.

However, Lin Dong ignored their stares and continued walking up the platform. Then, he stopped before a grey-colored stone tablet. On the stone tablet, there were some ancient characters.

“Desolate Force.”

The two ancient words appeared before Lin Dong’s eyes, making the corners of his eyes twitched. Then, he shifted his gaze downward and continued reading the rest of the words on the stone tablet.

As Lin Dong’s gaze shifted downward, an astonished look gradually formed on his face. That was because he discovered that the so-called ‘Desolate Force’ was not a kind of pure energy. In fact, it was a kind of technique. This had completely deviated from his expectations.



The description on the stone tablet recorded the technique to practising the ‘Desolate Force’. And at the end of the description, Lin Dong saw the real name of this skill – The Desolation Skill.

“The so-called Desolate Force should be a type of energy that one obtains after practising this skill,”

A thought came into Lin Dong’s mind. He could feel the potency of the ‘Desolation Skill’. Furthermore, the ‘Desolate Force’ that one could obtain by practising this skill was rather powerful as well. In his previous fight with Tong Chuan, if not for the fact that he possessed the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, he would definitely be put in a sorried state by the corrosive power-filled ‘Desolate Force’.

The stone tablet recorded down the detailed technique to practising the ‘Desolation Skill’. According to the description, the Desolation Skill was divided into ten levels. It was a skill that must be practised by the direct disciples of the Desolate Hall.

The technique to practising this skill was rather unique. One had to start off by absorbing the ‘Desolate Force’ from the Desolate Stone first. From there, he or she had to form the Desolate Force in his or her body and use Yuan Power to nurture this seedling. As the seedling grew, the Desolate Force that he or she possessed would become increasingly stronger.

In other words, if one wished to practise this skill, he or she would have to rely on the Desolate Stone. Otherwise, even if one knew the technique to practising this skill, he or she would not be able to actually practise it successfully.

“There’s indeed something unique about it...”

Lin Dong’s eyes flickered. Once again, he tried to comprehend all the information written on the stone tablet. Then, he raised his head and looked at the colossal Desolate Stone ahead of him.

Looking at the Desolate Stone from afar, one could sense the ancientness of it. The numerous marks on the surface of the stone were caused by the aging process. Clearly, this artifact must have existed for a long time.

A few hundred feet away from the Desolate Stone, there were several stone platforms that only had enough space for one person to sit. These stone platforms were filled with Desolate Hall’s disciples, who were absorbing traces of Desolate Force that were emitted by the Desolate Stone.

“The Desolate Force seems to possess an extremely powerful corrosive power...” Lin Dong discovered as he got closer to the Desolate Stone. The Desolate Force that was spiralling around that area was exceptionally strong and the surrounding disciples did not dare to get close to it. They were seated a few hundred feet away and were absorbing the Desolate Force that was flowing out from the Desolate Stone.

This scene put Lin Dong into a deep thought. He looked at the ground around the Desolate Stone. From what he had seen, the ground was dried up and cracking, giving the impression of a barren land.

“I see...”

Lin Dong muttered to himself softly. Following which, a faint smile appeared on his face. The technique of practising the Desolation Skill began to run through his mind once again. After a slight hesitation, he took a forceful step forward and walked toward the Desolate Stone.

Lin Dong quickly leapt over the disciples. Then, he continued walking ahead without stopping. His action quickly led to an outbreak of commotion in the quiet surroundings. Numerous disciples that were meditating widened their eyes in astonishment and looked at Lin Dong.

“Lin Dong, do not get too close to the Desolate Stone. Otherwise, you will be corroded by the Desolate Force till your life force is totally depleted!” One of the disciples could not help but shout at Lin Dong.

“Thanks for the reminder.”

Lin Dong turned his head and smiled at that disciple. However, he did not stop in his tracks. Even though the Desolate Force was powerful, his body possessed something that was far more powerful and terrifying.

At this moment, the surrounding disciples widened their eyes and pursed their lips tightly while looking at Lin Dong, who was walking towards the Desolate Stone. The fists in their sleeves were

tightly clenched. They clearly knew how deadly was the Desolate Force around the Desolate Stone...

Thud thud.”

The sound of Lin Dong’s footstep was the only sound that could be heard on the entire platform. Everyone’s heart beats were beating to the pace of Lin Dong’s footsteps, getting increasingly faster.

As silence swept across the platform, a grey-clothed blind old man walked out from behind a stone tablet that was not far away. He raised his head while his pupil-less, ash-colored eyes were fixated on Lin Dong. Following which, a slightly surprised look appeared on his wrinkle-filled, aged face.

# Chapter 658: The Desolate Stone

---

Thud thud.

Subtle sound of footsteps resounded quietly throughout the platform. A skinny figure was walking on the platform. Under numerous shocking gazes, the figure walked with an unhurried pace, getting closer to the gigantic Desolate Stone in the middle of the platform.

“This fellow...”

At this moment, a lot of disciples furrowed their eyebrows. Among these disciples, there were some who tried to get closer to the Desolate Stone. After all, the closer one got to the Desolate Stone, the more Desolate Force one could absorb and this was highly beneficial to their cultivation of the ‘Desolation Skill’. However, the person who was able to do it had yet to appear. Even the four current senior direct disciples could only make it to fifty feet within the Desolate Stone at best. If they were to get any closer, their bodies would be corroded by the overbearing Desolate Force, drying up in the process.

How could Lin Dong achieve such a feat when even the four senior direct disciples were unable to do so?

However, even though there were a lot of people doubting Lin Dong’s reckless move, they did not try to dissuade him from doing so. After Lin Dong’s exceptional result in the Pill River, nobody in Desolate Hall dared to treat him as an ordinary disciple.

Under the numerous attentive gazes from the onlookers, Lin Dong's figure moved increasingly closer to the Desolate Stone.

Buzz buzz!

As Lin Dong moved closer to the stone, he could feel the terrifying energy wave that was coming at him head-on. The Desolate Force around this area was up to ten times stronger than where it was a few hundred feet away.

The Desolate Force that pervaded the air pierced through Lin Dong's body from all directions. Under such corrosion, the color of Lin Dong's robe started to fade. Eventually, his robe started to show signs of drying up, appearing like a piece of barren land.

“The Desolate Force is rather overbearing.”

Lin Dong reached out his palms. At this moment, the skin of his palms had become rather dry and dull. A surprised look swept across his face. It seemed like the so-called Desolate Force was able to enervate anything, including the Yuan Power in his body.

If he was any other ordinary individual that encountered such overbearing Desolate Force, it would pose an intractable problem. However, for Lin Dong, it did not seem too much of a bother.

“Devour.”

A gentle voice rang across Lin Dong's mind. Following which, traces of Devouring Power started to extend outward from his body silently.

Tcch tchh!

The Devouring Power quickly twined around the traces of Desolate Force that had invaded Lin Dong's body. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, those traces of Desolate Force were being devoured at once.

While the devouring was taking place, a fine sound could be heard from Lin Dong's body. It sounded like someone was crunching a bunch of dried leaves.

At this point in time, Lin Dong's shrivelled palms were recovering slowly. The Desolate Force that invaded his body had been completely finished off by the Devouring Power.

As Lin Dong felt what was going on in his body, a smile appeared upon his face. Under the numerous startled looks from the onlookers, Lin Dong cracked his neck gently and quickened his pace.

“He's actually alright...”

“How can it be? The Desolate Force has no effect on him?”

When everyone saw Lin Dong moving as though he was flying,

commotions broke out in the surroundings. Everyone was flabbergasted at this scene. They could not believe that Lin Dong was actually able to withstand the boundless and dreadful Desolate Force.

Under the platform, in front of the stone tablet, the blind old man stared silently in the direction of Lin Dong with his pupil-less eyes. His face did not show any emotions. However, his wizened hands that were holding the broom tightly clenched unconsciously.

“Buzz buzz!”

With his quickened pace, Lin Dong rushed into ten feet within the Desolate Stone in less than ten seconds. The Desolate Force in this area had reached a rather terrifying level. Even the ground began to dry up and crack at this moment. When Lin Dong’s feet stepped onto the ground, the ground sunk and revealed a heap of ash.

After Lin Dong entered ten feet within the Desolate Stone, he finally felt an immense pressure. If not for the fact that the Devouring Power was channeling through his body, his life force would have been corroded by the Desolate Force to the point that he died.

Once again, Lin Dong recalled the technique to practising the Desolation Skill in his mind and took in a deep breath of air. Then, a series of profound and cryptic chant flowed through his mind.



Tcch tcch!

As the chant flowed through his mind, the unique yet vigorous Desolate Force rapidly entered Lin Dong's body as if it was being attracted by something.

When the Desolate Force entered Lin Dong's body, it did not have a single chance to create chaos. Instead, it was manipulated by the domineering Devouring Power and forcefully directed towards Lin Dong's Dantian.

If he was an ordinary individual that was practising the Desolation Skill, no matter how strong his physical body was, he would still need some time to adapt before allowing traces of Desolate Force to be absorbed into his body and form the Desolate seedling.

Clearly, Lin Dong was able to skip these insignificant steps. The Desolate Force might be domineering, but the Devouring Power was far more domineering and powerful. With the suppression from his Devouring Power, the Desolate Force was not able to pose any threat.

Along with the series of cryptic chant in Lin Dong's mind, the grey-colored Desolate Force flowed steadily into his body. In Lin Dong's Dantian, a stream of grey-colored air began to form. However, it had yet to reach the level of forming a Desolate seed.

“Too slow...”

Lin Dong furrowed his eyebrows and said something that would cause those disciples to spurt out blood if they were to hear it. The first time they practised the Desolation Skill, it took them one or two days to successfully form a trace of Desolate Force in their bodies. However, Lin Dong was still not satisfied with the absurd speed that he was going at right now.

Of course, Lin Dong did not care about what other people think. All he wanted was to become stronger, so much so that the next time he met Ling Qingzhu, he did not have to hang his head low anymore. As such, he would not give up on any opportunities to become stronger.

Therefore, when Lin Dong finished his sentence, he continued walking forward despite receiving numerous horrified gazes from the Desolate Hall's disciples.

Hiss!

As Lin Dong continued walking forward, the disciples surrounding the platform took in a deep breath of cold air. Could it be that this fellow wanted to hug the Desolate Stone and practise the skill? He surely knew that, within ten feet of the Desolate Stone, every step he took would increase the strength of the Desolate Force by up to ten times, right?

At this point of time, the broom in the blind old man's hands began to tremble slightly. A glint seemed to flash across his ash-grey eyes.

Under numerous attentive gazes, Lin Dong walked forward step-by-step. He could feel the rising pressure in his surroundings. Soon after, a faint green glow encircled his body.

One step... two steps... five steps... nine steps...

Thud!

When Lin Dong took the final step forward, everyone's eyes were wide-open. Their eyes were filled with disbelief.

Under those incredulous gazes, Lin Dong raised his arm slowly and tapped his finger on the Desolate Stone.

As Lin Dong's slender finger fell on the Desolate Stone, a coarse feeling that was accompanied by a chilliness extended through his finger. Following which, an indescribable yet terrorizing energy wave gushed out from the Desolate Stone like a volcanic eruption. Eventually, the energy surged into Lin Dong's body mercilessly.

Bang!

At this moment, Lin Dong's body trembled fiercely. Even his bones gave off cracking sounds. A dark-grey color extended through his finger all the way up to his arm with an astonishing speed.

Snap! Crack!

The dark-grey color moved extremely fast. Within seconds, it had extended throughout Lin Dong's body. Even his face started to show signs of shrivelling up, appearing like a stone statue that was smashed in the face.

When the surrounding disciples saw this scene, their facial expression changed drastically. This fellow finally tasted the consequences of being reckless. Did he really think that anyone could endure the Desolate Force that was contained in the Desolate Stone?

“He can't endure it, huh”

In front of the stone tablet, the already wrinkle-filled face of the blind old man shrivelled up even more. His hands were holding the broom tightly. After a moment, he finally shook his head and took a step forward, preparing to make a move.

“Elder, this disciple can still handle it,”

Just when the blind old man took a step forward, a soft voice that was sent through a trace of Mental Energy echoed into his ears silently.

The blind old man was startled before he gradually retracted his footstep. With his ash-grey eyes, he looked at the distant figure that was touching the Desolate Stone. A confused look appeared on his wizened face...

# Chapter 659: Forming a Desolate Seed

---

Humm Humm!

A seemingly boundless grey energy violently swelled within Lin Dong's bodies akin to tidewaters. The places that it visited, even including the meridian, showed signs of withering. The corrosive power of the Desolate Force was obviously extremely terrifying.

Lin Dong clearly realized this fact as his gaze immediately grew more and more solemn. Although it must be said that he was not afraid of the overbearing Desolate Force since he could rely on the Devouring Ancestral Symbol within his body as a seal, it is never a bad idea to be a little extra cautious...

Chi!

At this moment, with a thought of his mind, wisps of green light started to scatter from within Lin Dong's body. Under the envelopment of this green light, those meridian which were showing signs of withering due to the corrosion by the Desolate Force, started to regenerate rapidly. Having practiced the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill, Lin Dong's muscles and skin were not only resilient, even his organs and viscera also possessed the same formidable defensive power.

“Devour all of them!”

Lin Dong revolved the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill to block the corrosion by the Desolate Force. At the same time,

vigourous Devouring Force erupted from his body without restraint and completely devoured those waves of Desolate Force invading his body, before condensing them in his Dantian.

Under the continuous influx of Desolate Force, within his Dantian, the grey mist started to condense faster. Gradually there were signs of the condensation taking shape within his Dantian.

While Lin Dong was trying his best to defend against the vast amount of Desolate Force trying to rush into his body, many gazes from the surroundings stayed unblinking on his body. All those gazes were filled with some degree of shock. They could see that the withering signs originally present on Lin Dong's body, had actually began to gradually halt...

Lin Dong actually managed to resist the frightening Desolate Force that was invading his body!

The blind old man used his ashen-grey eyes to stare at the youth beside the Desolate Stone. His tense body started to gradually relax. He could feel large quantities of Desolate Force continuously flowing from the Desolate Stone into Lin Dong's body. What made him feel quite shocked was that there was no uncomfortable expression on Lin Dong's face when handling the the vast amount of Desolate Force.

“Within his body... it seems like there is something that is able to contend with the Desolate Force...”

The blind old man muttered to himself. Although he could not

see, his other senses were extremely keen. From his other senses, he could vision that Lin Dong's thin body was akin to a bottomless pit. No matter how hard he tried to probe, he still could not fathom its depths...

“At this rate, it would take no more than half a day for him to condense a Desolate Seed. This rate is much faster than that fellow Zhou Tong. If Chen Zhen or Wu Dao knew about this, they would probably be totally dumbfounded...”

“It looks like another outstanding person has joined the Desolate Hall this time...”

Di!

Lin Dong was obviously unable to sense the shocked gazes originating from his surroundings, as he was totally focused on the massive foreigner that was invading his body...

As more and more Desolate Force invaded his body, Lin Dong could gradually feel that there was a mysterious type of fluctuation being emitted from within the enormous Desolate Stone.

“This sensation...”

Lin Dong had obviously felt before this kind of mysterious fluctuation before. He faintly frowned, however, without giving him much time to think, the fluctuations suddenly grew increasingly violent. Increasingly savage Desolate Force

unexpectedly erupted forth and violently rushed towards him.

The Desolate Force this time around was several times more violent than before. Furthermore, their offensive intention was extremely clear. It felt as if someone was controlling the Desolate Stone and launching an attack at him!

Lin Dong suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes sparkled as he stared at that enormous Desolate Stone. He was a disciple of the Desolate Hall and under normal circumstances, there should not be anyone that would create difficulties for him by manipulating the Desolate Stone. In that case, that attack should have been launched by the Desolate Stone itself...

“Soul Treasure huh...”

Lin Dong’s gaze sparkled before he promptly took a deep breath of air, while a shocked expression fluttered across his eyes. This Desolate Stone was actually a soul treasure. Furthermore, it was a soul treasure that had some degree of consciousness!

“Pure Yuan Treasure!”

Lin Dong tugged at the corners of his mouth. A soul treasure that was able to possess such frightening energy was absolutely something that any ordinary Heavenly Soul Treasure could not compare with. Then, there was obviously only one possibility left. That means that the Desolate Stone was actually a Pure Yuan Treasure, similar to the “Heavenly Sealing Array” that those people from the West Xuan Region used!



Roar!

While Lin Dong was secretly feeling shocked by the status of the Desolate Stone in front of him, a murky grey light suddenly erupted from the surface of the Desolate Stone. The light start wriggling before congealing lighting quick into a grey beam. It snaked on the surface of the stone like lighting, before attacking Lin Dong.

Clang.

The sudden move by the Desolate Stone immediately caused many startled whooshing sounds from the surroundings. Many disciples stood up on the platform and looked at this scene in shock. Obviously this was the first time over so many years, that they had seen the Desolate Stone take the initiative to launch an attack...

At the same time, Lin Dong obviously discovered the intention of the Desolate Stone as he immediately frowned. Immediately, he did not dare to underestimate it as boundless green light erupted from the heart of his palm. The green light rushed towards the grey light and viciously slammed against it

Bang!

A low and deep impact sound resounded out from the surface of the Desolate Stone. A shocking quantity of energy fluctuations erupted out, causing all the surrounding air to be blasted away.

“Hmph.”

Lin Dong’s body violent trembled a few times before a snorting noise came out of his throat. His finger, which was in contact with the Desolate Stone, turned numb. However, what truly frustrated him was that the Desolate Stone actually withdrew the Desolate Force. From its actions, it was as if it was unwilling to let Lin Dong absorb such a large quantity of Desolate Force.

Lin Dong’s gaze turned solemn. His Desolate Seed was about to take shape and he naturally wanted to complete it in a single try. If he was to give up now, it was obviously not going to be possible.

With a thought, he spread open his palms and pressed all five fingers against the Desolate Stone. At every spot where his fingers touched the Desolate Stone, five streams of Devouring Force congealed in a black ray of light and directly shot straight into the Desolate Stone, before rapidly drilling into the deeper sections.

Humm! Humm!

When those black rays of light drilled into the Desolate Stone, the stone obviously felt what had happened. Immediately, wave after wave of incomparably violent Desolate Force surged forth and easily blocked Lin Dong’s attack.

“He actually aroused the ire of the Desolate Stone...” muttered the blind old man. A somewhat intrigued expression appeared on his face. This scene was almost identical to what happened to that

fellow back then.

“Dammit!”

After sensing the rejection from the Desolate Stone, Lin Dong could not help but curse while clenching his teeth. If he was able to fully exhibit the power of the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, he would not be afraid of the Desolate Stone. However under the gazes of many people, he was unwilling to expose the secret within his body.

The Desolate Stone obviously sensed the hopelessness and hesitation from Lin Dong. It immediately turned rampant and launched wave after wave of Desolate Force, which directly impacted and suppressed the five rays of black light back into Lin Dong's body. It then proceeded to flaunt its prowess to force Lin Dong to back away.

Lin Dong frowned. He had obviously never expected that his all-out absorption of the Desolate Force would provoke such a violent reaction by the Desolate Stone. This put him in a dilemma.

Lin Dong's fingers which were in contact with the Desolate Stone, violently trembled as waves of repulsive force spread out from within the Desolate Stone. It was attempting to push his fingers off.

Lin Dong's facial expression turn slightly ugly as glanced over at his fingers, which were being gradually repulsed by the Desolate Stone. Was he going to fall short of his goal in the end? If he was

unable to condense a Desolate Seed, he would obviously be unable to practise the Desolate martial arts.

Chi!

One by one, Lin Dong's fingers were shaken and repulsed by the Desolate Stone. Regardless of how hard he struggled, he was still unable to resist the repulsive energy coming from the Desolate Stone. He had finally experienced first-hand the frightening strength of a Pure Yuan Treasure...

“Fuck you!”

When he saw his last finger being pushed off, Lin Dong grew angry and could not resist, resulting in a curse escaping from his mouth. At this moment however, he suddenly felt something in his body starting to violently shake. Before he even realized what was happening, a temperate white glow directly shot out of his last remaining finger and flew straight inside the Desolate Stone viciously.

Chi!

A faint penetration sound rang out from within the Desolate Stone as that temperate white glow directly slammed against layers of Desolate Force within the Desolate Stone. After which, it broke through countless layers with a speed akin to snapping bamboo.

Chi Chi Chi Chi!

Under the dumbfounded observation by Lin Dong, the temperate white glow pierced through all the defensive layers of the Desolate Stone within a short span of ten seconds, before it finally reached the deepest part of the stone. At that moment, a peculiar fluctuation start to spread out. When this fluctuation appeared, Lin Dong was shocked to find out that the fluctuation within the depths of the Desolate Stone was actually beginning to tremble.

“Roar Roar!”

While Lin Dong was still in shock, waves of extremely vigorous Desolate Force rushed out of the Desolate Stone akin to the bursting of flood waters. With a frightening speed, they rushing into the depths of Lin Dong’s body before pouring into his dantian.

Chi!

Due to the arrival of the seemingly crazy amount of Desolate Force, the grey mist within the Dantian started to condense. With a sudden tremble, it finally condensed into a fist sized grey coloured bead!

At this moment, Lin Dong had finally condensed a Desolate Seed!

# Chapter 660: Four Stone Tablets

---

Roar!

Boundless fluctuations of energy swept across Lin Dong's body the instant the Desolate Seed was formed. Contained within these fluctuations were incredibly rich and formidable Desolate Force!

“Is this ... Desolate Force?”

These strong and familiar fluctuations were immediately detected by all the surrounding disciples. After sensing it, each and every one of them was shocked. To be able to emit Desolate Force, one had to first succeed in condensing a Desolate Seed. And to be able to condense a Desolate Seed, one must have mastered the Desolate Art till the third level.

For most disciples to reach that level, it would require many months of hard work. Even those senior direct disciples like Jiang Hao had taken an entire month in order to condense a Desolate Seed. However... under their nose, Lin Dong used less than half an hour to condense a Desolate Seed.

“Is that fellow...even human?” asked a few disciples as they looked at each other in black dismay as a feeling of powerless washed over their hearts. Lin Dong's training progress made people unable to even muster the courage to compete with him. This fellow was simply too sick...

A shocked expression swiftly flashed past the blind man's face at

this moment. He was not shocked by the incredible rate that Lin Dong managed to condense his Desolate Seed. What made him really shocked was that Lin Dong actually managed to withstand the repulsive force from the Desolate Stone.

The blind old man was obviously well aware of the might of the Desolate Stone. Although at the beginning the Desolate Stone was only repelling Lin Dong by instinct, it's strength was something that a disciple like Lin Dong, was absolutely unable to contend with. However, right now, Lin Dong had actually managed to withstand the repulsion from the Desolate Stone. If not, he would not have been able to absorb such a massive amount of Desolate Force and condense a Desolate Seed.

“He could even resist the repulsion of the Desolate Stone...” said the blind old man before chuckling once. This disciple called Lin Dong was truly surprising.

Under the gazes of the numerous people around, Lin Dong slowly opened his faintly closed eyes. At this moment, a grey glow swept pass from within his eyes, which made him look somewhat peculiar.

At this point, Lin Dong's fingers were no longer on the the Desolate Stone. He stared at the Desolate Stone, before a faint upward curl involuntarily surfaced on his lips. So what if it was a Pure Yuan Treasure, in the end, it was still subdued by him...

That previous temperate white glow was obviously radiated by the Mysterious Stone Talisman within Lin Dong's body. That thing was extremely low key and it hardly made a move. However, every

time it did, it was able to achieve quite a good result.

Lin Dong examined the fist-sized Desolate Seed hovering in the middle of his Dantian for a while. Within that Desolate Seed, he could feel a mysterious energy. It was quite vigorous and it should be the so-called Desolate Force.

“One has to practice the Desolate Art till the third level in order to condense a Desolate Seed. Looks like my Desolate Art has reached the third level...” Lin Dong thought to himself as he rubbed his chin. He was obviously extremely satisfied with this result. Although it had to be said that he relied on the Devouring Ancestral Symbol and the Mysterious Stone Talisman, this was obviously not a major issue for the pragmatic Lin Dong.

Lin Dong was clearly aware that it was not difficult for him to learn the Desolate Art since he had the Devouring Ancestral Symbol. According to his calculations, if he was to shut himself off and practice in front of the Desolate Stone for an entire month, it would not be difficult for him to reach the seventh level of the Desolate Art. Furthermore, right now, the only disciples that could reach that stage were Jiang Hao and the other three senior direct disciples.

Of course, Lin Dong did not know that when ordinary disciples reached the third level of Desolate Art, the Desolate Seed that they condensed was only the size of a peach seed. However, the quality of the Desolate Force within their Desolate Seed was so much more inferior compared to the Desolate Force produced by his Desolate Seed...



However, right now, Lin Dong did not bother practising the Desolate Art. He knew that his previous performance was quite eye catching. If he was to act more ruthlessly, he was afraid that it would affect the morale of the other disciples...

Therefore, when his Desolate Seed condensed and took shape, Lin Dong withdrew his hand and retreated to the outside of the platform under the numerous gazes of the surrounding people.

On the platform, those gazes still followed Lin Dong as he retreated, causing the surrounding atmosphere to turn slightly weird. This caused Lin Dong to feel somewhat helpless. Fortunately, this situation did not continue for long. After staring at Lin Dong for a while, those disciples finally returned to reality. They gave a soft sigh before finally withdrawing their gazes and continued their training.

Only upon seeing those gazes finally turning away, did Lin Dong heave a deep sigh of relief. Just as he retreated away from the platform, he heard some sounds coming from behind him and hurriedly turned around. Having turned around, he saw the blind old man that was previously standing at the entrance of the stone pyramid, was now standing behind him.

The blind old man used his ashen-grey eyes to stare at Lin Dong, before faintly sweeping over his body. As he did that, Lin Dong felt a vague fluctuation passing gently and swiftly scanning across his body, causing his heart to immediately turn cold.

“If that fellow Zhou Tong knew that his record was surmounted by a later generation member, his expression would surely be

splendid...” said the blind old man. His voice was incredibly hoarse, however, it possessed a mysterious strength that could touch a person’s heart and soul.

Lin Dong did not dare to neglect this mysterious blind old in front of him. Although he could not detect any Yuan Power fluctuation from the blind old man, he had an intuition that this blind old man was likely more powerful than the two hall masters...

“Worthy of the Dao Sect...”

Thinking about this, Lin Dong could not resist but secretly voice his admiration. These were the hidden aces of the super sects. After accumulation over countless years, there would definitely be a few terrifying individuals hidden within.

With a thought, he respectfully saluted towards the blind old man and said: “ This junior used some unorthodox methods and cannot be compared to senior Zhou Tong.”

“In this world, the result is all that matters. That fellow Zhou Tong was also blessed just like you...” said the blind old man casually before giving a smile.

Lin Dong casually scratched his head. It seems like that senior Zhou Tong was a rare genius that was blessed.

“You haven’t found a martial arts, right?” said the blind old man

as he stared at Lin Dong with his pupil-less grey eyes.

Lin Dong awkwardly nodded his head. There were many martial art stone tablets here. However, he had yet to discover anything that piqued his interest.

“Look’s like you are quite ambitious. If you are so confidence in yourself, follow me and I’ll bring you to the place where Zhou Tong went before...” said the blind old man. Without saying anything else, he proceeded to turn around and walk towards the depths of the great hall. His behaviour seemed as if he did not care if Lin Dong was going to follow him or not.

Lin Dong felt slightly helpless after seeing how carefree the blind old man was. However, his final statement generated quite a bit of interest within him. Although he had only entered the Desolate Hall for a short while, he had heard of the great senior Zhou Tong quite a few times. Therefore, he was especially interested in this person, who had an extremely high place in the hearts and minds of the Dao Sect disciples.

Taking a step forward, Lin Dong closely followed behind the blind old man. The blind old man’s walking pace was consistent with no trace of anxiousness nor slowness. His small footsteps were akin to a sickly old man that had to move slowly due to a lack of strength,

Lin Dong calmly followed him and he did not lose his cool because of the old man’s slow and stumbling speed. Instead, his eyes looked at his nose, while his nose faced his heart and he stayed calm throughout the journey.

Under this slow walking pace, Lin Dong walked for roughly an hour within this martial arts hall, before discovering that the old man in front had suddenly stopped.

When the old man stopped, Lin Dong raised his eyes instantly. Promptly, he saw that in front of him, was a bowl shaped light membrane. Within it, were four barely visible stone tablets standing erect quietly.

Chi!

The blind old man slowly raised his thin and wrinkled palm. As he gently swiped downwards, a ray of light shot out of his finger. After which, Lin Dong saw that the ray of light had directly tore apart the light membrane and forcefully ripped a small opening.

“Is that...Mental Energy?”

Lin Dong narrowed his eyes and stared intensely at the old man's fingertip. At that instant where it sparkled, he clearly detected a familiar fluctuation, which was Mental Energy.

However, the Mental Energy fluctuation that was being emitted from the body of the old man was countless times more solidified than those emitted by him.

If Lin Dong's Mental Energy was equivalent to a small spring, the old man was perhaps equivalent to an ocean. There was simply no

way to compare the two of them.

“His primary focus is on Mental Energy...”

Seeing the old man's action, Lin Dong's heart trembled. However, he suddenly understood why he did not feel any Yuan Power fluctuation from the old man's body. It seems like this blind old man primarily cultivated his Mental Energy. This was the first time he had ever seen a person with such powerful Mental Energy...

The blind old man did not know what Lin Dong was thinking and proceeded to tear open the hole. He gently walked step by step inside, while Lin Dong rapidly followed him behind.

After entering the light membrane, the ray of light grew dim instantly. A mysterious pressure started to radiate from the front, causing Lin Dong heart to turn cold. Noticing the pressure, he raised his head and looked towards his front.

At that spot, stood four black coloured stone tablets. Furthermore, the pressure was coming from those stone tablets!

# Chapter 661: Desolate Demon Eye

---

The black coloured stone tablet quietly stood within the light and it looked just like a fearsome ancient beast. A wave of shocking evil aura was faintly emitted by it before it rippled across the air and causing one to feel pressured.

These four stone tablets were extremely tall and large, and they were even larger than the other stone tablets that Lin Dong saw in the Martial Arts Hall previously. Moreover, the fluctuation that the stone tablets possessed was something that those stone tablets did not have...

“Each of these four stone tablets contains an extremely powerful martial art. From a certain point of view, they can be considered as the strongest martial arts other than the Great Desolated Scripture.” The blind old man placed his hands behind his back. His grayish-white eyes looked towards the four stone tablets as he spoke faintly.

“Ordinary disciples will not get to learn these four martial arts. Currently, only the four senior direct disciples in Desolate Hall have learnt the martial art on the first stone tablet. As for the remaining three, no one has successfully mastered them yet.”

Lin Dong’s face changed a little. The Desolate Hall was brimming with talented geniuses. It was unexpected that only four people had learnt one of these four martial arts.

“Is there any ranking amongst these four martial arts?” Lin Dong

suddenly asked.

“If one must really rank them, the martial arts on the first stone tablet is indeed a little easier to learn. The second is a little trickier. As for the third and fourth, it would not be overboard to say that they are the strongest.”

“Back then, Zhou Tong mastered the martial art on the third stone tablet. As for the fourth... he did not successfully master it the first time he was here.” The blind old man slowly said.

“Oh?”

Lin Dong was slightly moved. The martial art on the fourth stone tablet was actually this abnormally difficult? Even that senior Zhou Tong failed to master it?

“It is not because his talent is lacking. Rather, the martial art on the fourth stone tablet has some peculiar requirements.”

The blind old man paused when he spoke until this point. As he briefly glanced at Lin Dong, he finally continued “This martial art requires someone who is good at both Yuan Power and Mental Energy.”

Lin Dong heart suddenly jumped. Was... was this directed at him?

“You can observe first before you decide on the stone tablet

martial arts that you wish to learn.” The blind old man waved his hand and spoke in an indifferent manner.

“Understood.”

Lin Dong hurriedly replied in a respectful manner upon hearing this. After which, he swiftly stepped forward. His eyes swept across the first stone tablet. The stone tablet’s body was as black as a piece of metal. Four ancient words that were seemingly carved by a dremel appeared on the tablet in a glaring fashion.

“Great Star Majestic Fist.”

Lin Dong’s eyes stared at those ancient words. He could sense a majestic wild and violent sensation pouncing from those words. It was likely that this martial art was best suited for a direct brute force practitioner.

“Is this the martial arts that Jiang Hao and the rest learnt...” Lin Dong’s eyes flickered slightly. He mused for a moment before taking another step and walked towards the second stone tablet.

The second stone tablet had a dark black longsword carved onto it. Black fog lingered on the longsword. There was a dark and cold aura seeping from it and even Lin Dong felt his skin turn chilly.

Great Dark Erosion Sword

These simple four words were permeated with a chilling aura.



This martial art was different from the Great Star Majestic Fist, which relied on might and brute force. However, that dark and cold feeling felt just like having maggots in one's bones, causing one to be unable to dodge them.

Lin Dong stood in front of this stone tablet and mused for a moment. Finally, he shook his head. This martial arts was far too dark and cold and it was unsuitable for him. Immediately, he ceased hesitating, turned around and walked towards the third stone tablet.

The third stone tablet appeared a lot more ordinary than the first two. It was also dark greyish in colour. There was a human figure seated on the tablet. However, that person's body looked shrivelled and dry. At a glance, it appeared as though it was a shrivelled land. However, it was vaguely possible to feel a shocking energy being emitted from within his carcass..

Lin Dong's eyes stared at the human figure. After which, his eyes were lifted slightly. He saw three ancient words on the human figure drawing.

Great Desolate Body

That name was ordinary without any fancy aspect to it. However, it possessed a majestic aura.

“This is the martial art that senior Zhou Tong chose huh...”

Lin Dong curled his mouth while his brows also frowned a little. Great Desolate Body should be a martial art that strengthened one's body. For Lin Dong, there was a clear conflict since he had already cultivated in the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill. Currently, he had already spent quite a lot of effort on learning the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill. If he was to divert his attention and practice another body tempering martial arts, he might end up failing at both instead.

Based on what that blind old man previously said, Lin Dong knew that the Great Desolate Body was one of the best amongst the four martial arts. Only the fourth martial art, which Lin Dong had yet to see, could be compared with it. From this, one could tell just how powerful this martial art was. However, Lin Dong already had the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill...

Lin Dong hesitated in front of the stone tablet for a long while. Finally, he shook his head and decisively turned away. The Great Desolate Body might be powerful, but if given a choice, Lin Dong would choose the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill, which he was more familiar with..

At a short distance away, the blind old man's wrinkled face twitched when he saw this scene. Immediately, his greyish-white eyes stared intently at Lin Dong's footsteps.

Flop.

Lin Dong's legs paused in front of the final stone tablet. He inhaled a deep breath of air before raising his head and looking at the stone tablet in front of him.

There were no words on the stone tablet. However, there was a large black eye on the dark black tablet's surface.

Lin Dong was startled when he saw that black coloured eye. At this moment, the latter also appeared to be staring at him. This sensation caused all the hair on Lin Dong's body to involuntarily stand.

This martial art is a little creepy...

Although Lin Dong felt creeped out, he still forcefully stared back at that black coloured eye. The atmosphere quietened down instantly. After this face-off lasted for a couple of minutes, Lin Dong suddenly discovered that the black eye on the stone tablet had actually blinked.

This discovery directly caused the skin on Lin Dong's face to turn numb. However, before he could do anything, a slight black light shot out from that black eye. The light entered Lin Dong's opened eyes.

This sudden action startled Lin Dong. Immediately, the Yuan Power within his body began to swirl as a reflex action. However, he immediately discovered that the black light did not cause him any harm. Instead, some information flowed through his mind.

There was a unique beast in ancient times called Huang and it had one eye. Whenever it opened its eye, everything within thousands of kilometres would turn into waste. As time passed, it

will erode one's vitality...

Wave after wave of ancient information swiftly flashed across Lin Dong's mind. This also allowed him to have a better understanding of this martial art.

Based on the information that he obtained, the martial art on this stone tablet was called the "Desolate Demon Eye". This martial art was seemingly derived from the unique ancient beast called "Huang". Although Lin Dong was unaware if the complete mastery of this martial art would enable him to reach the terrifying stage of turning everything within thousands of kilometres into wasteland, it was still possible to see just how powerful this martial art was ...

Those previous messages did not contain any information regarding its cultivation methods. Clearly, this martial art was very demanding on its practitioners.

Lin Dong's footsteps paused in front of the stone tablet. He raised his eyes and stared intently at the black coloured eye in front of him. His eyes flickered. Clearly, there was quite a huge struggle going on in his heart.

The "Desolate Demon Eye" was quite sinister and even Lin Dong did not possess the confidence that he could successfully master it. If he was unable to learn it, he would have wasted a great amount of time for nothing...

The blind old man remained quiet as he looked at Lin Dong, who had fell into silence. He did not know which martial art Lin Dong

would choose...

This quiet and tense atmosphere continued for half an hour. After which, the blind old man saw Lin Dong take a step back.

“He has given up huh...”

The blind old man’s greyish-white eyes lowered slightly upon seeing this. He felt a little disappointed for some unknown reason. His shrivelled hand gently rubbed his eyes.

Pa.

The sudden sound of someone sitting down rang out just as the blind old man felt a little disappointed. He raised his eyes. After which, he was surprised to see that Lin Dong had already sat down in front of a stone tablet.

“Elder, I shall choose this martial art.”

Lin Dong’s voice was also transmitted over at this moment. It landed into the ears of the blind old man.

The blind old man was quiet for a moment upon hearing this. Suddenly, his voice became hoarse as he said, “There is a risk in learning this martial art. If anything goes wrong, your eyes might end up like mine.”

Lin Dong's heart was shaken slightly. Based on what he said, it seems like this blind old man had also practiced the "Desolate Demon Eye" before. However, it seems like he failed...

"There is no free lunch in this world."

Lin Dong inhaled a deep breath of air. One must pay the price for any reward. This concept was something that he understood right from the start.

After his words sounded out, Lin Dong's eyes slowly shut, in front of the complicated expression of the blind old man.

## Chapter 662: Huang

---

Lin Dong sat quietly in front of the black stone tablet. He shut his eyes tightly while the Yuan Power fluctuation over his entire body was being gradually suppressed at this moment.

At a short distance behind him, the blind old man quietly observed this scene. The complicated expression on his wizened face was gradually withdrawn. He had indeed practiced this “Desolate Demon Eye” before. However, he eventually failed because of an accident, resulting in both of his eyes becoming blind. The price was really quite a heavy one.

The fact that Lin Dong ultimately chose this risky martial art also exceeded his expectations. Back then, that fellow Zhou Tong hesitated for a long while before finally giving up on the “Desolate Demon Eye” and ended up practicing the “Great Desolate Body” instead.

Although these two martial arts were comparable, the blind old man knew that there was an essential difference between the two. The Great Desolate Body could strengthen one’s physical body and improve one’s overall combat strength. However, the “Desolate Demon Eye” is a purely aggressive move. If one was to discuss the damage that they could cause, the latter was clearly superior to the former.

Of course, this did not mean that Zhou Tong’s talent was lacking. Rather, it was not suitable for him to learn “Desolate Demon Eye”. Moreover, given Zhou Tong’s character, it was not surprising that he chose the “Great Desolate Body” instead.

“Whether you can successfully learn it will depend on your own luck. Relax, our Desolate Hall has rarely had a young person, who could be compared with that fellow from back then. This old man will not stand by and let you suffer the same fate as me.” The blind old man stared at Lin Dong’s back. A moment later, he sighed and softly muttered.

He was aware that Chen Zhen and Wu Dao had high expectations for Lin Dong. If the latter became blind just like him in the martial arts hall, it was likely that those two old fellows would be furious beyond belief.

The blind old man sat down after his voice sounded. He could sense that even though Lin Dong had not moved, at this moment, there were waves of Mental Energy being emitted from his Niwan Palace. Finally, it lingered over the black colored eye of the stone tablet.

“Four Seal Heaven Symbol Master...”

The blind old man merely probed casually before he was immediately able to detect Lin Dong’s Mental Energy cultivation level. Instantly, he gently nodded his head. If Lin Dong’s Yuan Power and Mental Energy were to be considered separately, he might not be considered overly outstanding amongst members of his generation. However, considering the both of them together, he was considered as extremely decent...

The blind old man gradually quietened down. Everything once



again became silent within this light film. Lin Dong's body suddenly trembled a little at this moment. An unusually vast and mighty Mental Energy suddenly rushed out from within his Niwan Palace. Finally, it shot into that black colored eye on the stone tablet.

Chi!

Lin Dong's mind suddenly became absent-minded just when his Mental Energy shot into that black eye. Immediately, he realized that his surrounding had started to distort. By the time he completely calmed his mind, he discovered that he had landed in a large barren land.

The land was completely flat. At a glance, it appeared that the plains were extended to the horizon. There, the sky and the land formed a single line, appearing as though they were connected together.

A desolate aura that was accompanied by an ancient vicissitude, brewed and rose within this place. It appeared as though this was an ancient land.

Lin Dong stood on the ground and looked at the sky and land. He involuntarily felt the insignificance of his existence. A helpless sensation climbed from deep within his soul and spread across his body, causing him to be unable to move.

“Huff!”

Lin Dong inhaled a deep breath of air before his eyes suddenly turned sharp. His straight spear like body forcefully suppressed this powerless sensation. He was aware that this place was likely the mental realm within the stone tablet. A fight in this place might not cause fresh blood to spurt like in reality, but it was dangerous and vicious as well.

Should one end up being at a disadvantage in a Mental Energy fight, it might perhaps leave a sequela, which would have serious repercussions for his future training progress.

Suppressing the tiny and helpless sensation within his heart, Lin Dong took a stride forward. When his foot landed on the soft ground, an endless sensation appeared to seep in from under his foot and spread into his body.

Boom!

At this moment, the ground suddenly began to tremble intensely. Numerous ripples that were visible to the naked eye, spread over this boundaryless land. It swiftly spread apart just like a pulse.

Lin Dong's eyes quietly observed this scene. Under his calm observation, the distant ground suddenly began to tremble before it cracked, forming a large crack line. The crack line spread at a shocking speed. Within a short instant, it had reached tens of thousands of feet in length. That manner appeared as though it was an endless abyss.

Ao!

After the deep abyss was formed, an extremely strange loud whining sound suddenly resounded across the land. An invisible ripple swept over the sky and it directly stirred a monstrous hurricane.

Lin Dong's eyes were slightly focused as he observed the deep abyss that had been split and formed. That place was where the sound had originated from and he could vaguely see an enormous shadow moving within the darkness.

Lin Dong's eyes stared intently at the deep abyss before his eyes suddenly shrunk a moment later.

“Bang!”

Monstrous dust sputtered out from the deep abyss while Lin Dong's eyes shrunk tightly. After which, an indescribable black shadow suddenly flew out from the deep abyss like an earth dragon. Its enormous shadow covered the sun...

Lin Dong looked at the enormous beast that had flown out from the deep abyss. Immediately, he gently inhaled a breath of air...

The enormous beast's body was like a snake. However, it was ten of thousands of feet in size and its entire body was black in colour. Meanwhile, an icy cold evil aura swept apart like a storm.

On the head of that giant beast, the spot that attracted the most

attention was not its large mouth which was filled with sharp teeth. Instead, it was a large black eye on its forehead!

The enormous eye was currently shut. However, for some unknown reason, the hair all over Lin Dong's body stood up when he saw that eye.

“Is that... Huang?”

Lin Dong's voice was harsh. If he was right, this enormous beast that covered the sun should be the so-called “Huang”...

Judging by its frightening aura, Lin Dong did not doubt that this unusual beast possessed the terrifying ability to turn tens of thousands of kilometre radius of land into barren land.

“Huang” flew into the sky. Its enormous body meandered in the sky. Finally, it slowly lowered its enormous head and stared at Lin Dong, who appeared as tiny as an ant on the ground below.

Lin Dong's expression suddenly turned solemn when “Huang” shifted its attention. He could sense that the ground he was on had actually begun to wither rapidly.

“Such frightening Desolate Force...”

Although Lin Dong was clearly aware that this was a mental realm and all that he had witnessed was not reality, he still felt an enormous pressure.

The ground where Lin Dong stood on swiftly withered. A desolate colour spread apart at a blinding rate. However, Lin Dong remained calm. He inhaled a violent breath of air before he stared back directly at that enormous being in the sky. If his mind showed signs of retreating at this moment, it was likely that he would be completely defeated in this metal battle.

Chi!

However, being directly stared at by Lin Dong clearly caused “Huang” to turn a little impatient. After which, the former’s eyes shrunk when he realized that the enormous eye that “Huang” had kept shut, was actually slowly opening up.

Buzz!

As “Huang”’s enormous eye slowly opened up, Lin Dong could immediately sense the energy of the entire place turn wild and violent. Even the natural Yuan Power was fleeing from this dangerous region.

The enormous eye slowly opened. There was an endless dark greyish colour within the eye and it was as though light could not penetrate through...

Lin Dong’s entire body was drenched in cold sweat when he saw this enormous eye opening. He immediately felt the skin on his head turn numb.

Swoosh!

The enormous eye finally opened completely. Instantly, a thousand feet large grey light erupted from within that enormous eye!

A grey beam flashed past, before the entire land instantly withered. The originally lush green colour completely disappeared. Instead, taking its place was a desolate scene without life...

Everything within thousands of kilometres had turned into barren land!

However, Lin Dong's mind did not pay attention to his desolate surroundings at this moment. He could see that the enormous greyish beam was headed towards him at a terrifying speed.

The greyish light was extremely fast. Within a flash, it had flashed past the sky. Its size also swiftly shrunk when it approached Lin Dong. By the time it reached Lin Dong's head, it was merely as tiny as a thumb.

Chi!

The greyish glow appeared to contain an extremely frightening energy. However, Lin Dong did not show any signs of avoiding it. This was because he was aware that this was a path that he must cross...

“Come, allow me to witness just how frightening the Desolate Demon Eye is...”

Lin Dong slowly spread his arms. There were a sharpness and stubbornness flashing deep within his eyes. After which, the greyish glow shone onto his forehead in an unceremonious manner.

A shocking headache spread across his mind instantly. Lin Dong’s eyes also began to swiftly turn dark, appearing as though the light had disappeared...

## Chapter 663: Success or Failure?

---

A faint light film covered the place, encompassing the four large stone tablets within it. A deathly silent atmosphere circulated within the light film, causing one to have some difficulties breathing.

However, at this moment, there were two people within the light film. One was training while the other was a blind old man, who was already used to it. Hence, the pressuring atmosphere within this place did not cause the two of them to feel any discomfort.

The blind old man was hugging a somewhat old and damaged broom. His greyish-white eyes that were without any pupils, were lowered slightly. Even his breathing had become weak and inaudible at this moment. At a cursory glance, he appeared no different from a sick old man who was about to die.

Chi!

After this silence continued for around half a day, Lin Dong, who was sat in front of a stone tablet a short distance away, suddenly trembled. There was actually a weak light being scattered from the surface of the black stone tablet.

The moment the light scattered from the stone tablet, the blind old man, who had his eyes lowered, suddenly raised his head. His body moved before he strangely appeared in front of Lin Dong, even though he hardly moved. After which, his expression turned a little solemn as he stared at Lin Dong's face.



At this moment, there was a vague dark greyish colour lingering over Lin Dong's youthful face. Moreover, this greyish colour was gathering towards the spot between Lin Dong's eyebrows. An extremely slight greyish line had actually appeared on Lin Dong's forehead.

That greyish line had an undefined form. It appeared to be connected to Lin Dong's skin, appearing just like a worm when it wiggled.

“He has met “Huang” already huh...”

The blind old man's eyes were focused intensely on Lin Dong's face. His elderly face tensed up while his shrivelled fingers could not help but rub against each other. Clearly, there was quite a big ripple on his calm old well-esque emotions.

Under the observation of the blind old man, the greyish aura on Lin Dong's face became increasingly dense. Two traces of blood suddenly flowed from the corner of Lin Dong's eyes when the greyish aura became dense. They were just like two blood tears and they looked extremely startling.

Crack!

Although the blind old man had lost his sight, he was still able to clearly observe this scene. His expression immediately changed drastically before the broom in his hand was directly crushed into powder.

Having once practiced the “Desolate Demon Eye”, he was clearly aware that practicing this martial art possessed some risk. It was extremely easy for that strange energy to seep into one’s eyes. Moreover, should one’s eyes be eroded by that energy, one would end up becoming just like him.

The blind old man’s face was extremely tense. His shrivelled hand continued to tighten and relax. It was as if he was hesitating if he should drag Lin Dong out from the mental realm at this moment.

Chi Chi!

During the time that the blind old man hesitated, the unusual greyish Qi on Lin Dong’s face also became increasingly rich. While the greyish Qi gathered, the grey line between his eyebrows also became a little thicker. At the same time, however, the blood line on the corner of Lin Dong’s eyes also became increasingly glaring. Clearly, his eyes were already being eroded at this moment.

Cluck cluck.

The blind old man took tiny and chaotic steps back and forth in front of Lin Dong. This continued for a couple of minutes before he violently clenched his teeth. He turned around and his shrivelled hand pierced towards the grey line between Lin Dong’s eyebrows like a sharp sword with lightning like speed. As long as this thing was broken, it would be possible to awaken Lin Dong.

The blind old man was extremely quick and it seemed as if his finger could penetrate through space. In just a flash, his fingers had already arrived in front of Lin Dong's forehead. However, just as he was about to pierce downwards, a warm white light suddenly rushed out from between Lin Dong's eyebrows and collided with his finger.

Clang!

The two collided but no energy ripple erupted from it. That white light merely blocked the blind old man's fingers for an instant before it disappeared.

Although the white light disappeared, the blind old man's fingers were also stopped. A surprised expression was clearly present on his face.

“There is no need for me to intervene huh...” The blind old man was quiet for a moment. He could only attribute the white light to something Lin Dong had unleashed subconsciously. If that was the case, it seemed like Lin Dong did not want to give up on learning the “Desolate Demon Eye”.

After receiving this information from Lin Dong, the frown on the blind old man's face appeared to be even denser. He stood on the spot for quite awhile before shaking his head somewhat helplessly. He seemed to have underestimated Lin Dong's persistence when it came to learning martial arts. However, at times, persistence may or may not be a good thing...

“In that case, let’s wait a little longer. If things really go wrong, I will forcefully drag you out. Truly a fellow who does not allow others to have a peaceful mind...” The blind old man muttered to himself. After which, he sat down beside Lin Dong and continued to carefully observe him.

As he continued to observe, the blind old man gradually relaxed. Although the blood trace on the corner of Lin Dong’s eyes continued to flow, fortunately, it showed no sign of intensifying.

This so-called wait directly lasted for five days...

Lin Dong did not show any signs of leaving his training during these five days. The blood tears that had flowed out from the corner of his eyes, had already hardened into two blood clots, causing him to look exceptionally strange.

During this period of time, the greyish Qi on Lin Dong’s face also become increasingly dense and there were no signs of it weakening. However, this also caused the blind old man, who was observing Lin Dong, to feel uncertain. Although the greyish line between Lin Dong’s eyebrows was continuously gathering greyish Qi, there was not the slightest further activity being emitted. Based on the old man’s experience, the greyish line should gradually show signs of turning into an eye if Lin Dong succeeded...

However, if he failed, Lin Dong would not be this calm. Therefore, even someone as experienced as him was a little confused. He did not understand what level Lin Dong’s training was currently at. This manner that neither appeared like success nor failure, really caused him to feel helpless...

“It has already been five days. Time is more or less up. It seems like this little fellow will need to battle with that brat Jiang Hao in the Desolate Hall monthly competition today...”

“It is merely a competition between the younger generation members. Training is more important... Forget about it, just let him train. If he misses it, then so be it...”

The blind old man muttered to himself. However, from his mannerism, it was clear that he did not wish for Lin Dong's training to be interrupted because of the latter's match with Jiang Hao. Hence, he did not show any signs that he was going to wake Lin Dong up.

Buzz buzz!

However, everything in this world always surprises people. Soon after the mutterings of the blind old man sounded out, a buzzing sound was suddenly emitted from the stone tablet. After which, he saw the black eye on the stone tablet suddenly shooting out a bright grey light. That light shot onto the spot between Lin Dong's eyebrows and coincided with the grey line.

The ray of light linked the spot between Lin Dong's eyebrows and the stone tablet. The skin on that spot also began to wiggle. That grey line became increasingly obvious and it actually vaguely began to show signs of opening. A dark, cold and evil aura, which caused one great discomfort, was vaguely emitted from it.

“Is it about to transform into an eye?”

The blind old man’s body immediately straightened when he saw this scene. He stared intently at Lin Dong’s brows. However, under his observation, the grey line ultimately did not show any signs of splitting apart despite its wiggling continuously.

“What is going on...”

The blind old man frowned tightly and softly asked.

While he was knitted his brows, the blind old man did not observe a warm white glow under the greyish light that could not be detected.

The light that was connected to Lin Dong’s brows gradually weakened. A moment later, it finally emitted a ‘chi’ sound and completely disappeared.

Just when the light disappeared, Lin Dong’s eyes, which had been shut for five days, finally slowly opened up at this moment.

His ajar eyes were as clear and calm as they were five days ago. Although the blood clot at the corner of his eyes was a little strange to look at, the current Lin Dong did not appear any different from five days ago.

The blind old man was a little stunned as he looked at Lin Dong’s calm expression when he opened his eyes. He was lost for words at

that moment...

“Thank you elder for protecting me during my training...”

A smile swiftly surfaced on Lin Dong’s face. He stood up, bowed to the blind old man and said.

“It’s nothing. If you have finished training, you should leave. Today is the Desolate Hall monthly competition.” The blind old man slowly stood up, waved his hand and said.

Lin Dong nodded. He did not say any unnecessary words as he turned around and left. When he was just about to walk out of the light film, the blind old man finally could not resist asking, “Although I do not know whether you have successfully learnt it, you should try to use the “Desolate Demon Eye” as little as possible in the future. This martial art is a little unorthodox and it will hurt your eyes if you use it too many times.”

Lin Dong’s footsteps paused. He immediately rubbed the spot between his eyebrows with his hand. The corner of his lips was lifted into a slight arc. He had similarly sensed some of the darker aspects of “Desolate Demon Eye” while he was training. However, it was likely that this thing would not be able to stir much trouble with the Mysterious Stone Talisman suppressing it...

# Chapter 664: Monthly Competition

---

Within the mountain range that the Desolate Hall was located in, there was an especially vast and tall mountain peak. This mountain peak pierced through the clouds, which tumbles and twists around it, giving it an out-of-world feeling.

This mountain peak was the location of the Desolate Hall's main hall. It could be counted as the head of the various halls within the Desolate Hall. The monthly competition was also held on this mountaintop.

The monthly competition was the most customary event held within Dao Sect and the four halls. This goal of this customary event was to observe the training progress of the disciples and use this event to stimulate their disciple's desire to train, which would increase the overall strength of the halls.

Furthermore, in every monthly competition, there will be a few branch disciples who will be promoted to become full-fledged disciples due to their stellar performance. Therefore, even though this competition was held every month, this day was still the most lively day every month. That was because this was the only day whereby those branch disciples had the chance to be promoted to the main hall.

Within the Desolate Hall, the number of branch disciples ranges in the tens of thousands. As for the full-fledged disciples, there were three thousand of them and there were three hundred direct disciples.



This could be said to be a humongous lineup. Within a day, there will be an overwhelming majority of them gathered here. Thus, the commotion caused by such an event would naturally not be trivial.

At the highest spot on the mountain peak, stood a quiet and large ancient hall that pierced through the clouds. A majestic aura was being emitted from it. Meanwhile, its yellowish colour was the mark left behind by time, demonstrating that it had withstood the test of time.

In front of this great hall was an extremely vast green stadium, which gave off a strong feeling of stratification and order. At this moment, it was already packed densely with mountains of people.

Although the vast stadium was filled with countless individuals, there was not a single scuffle. Over ten thousand disciples sat quietly in the stadium. The solemn air that filled the atmosphere even caused fluctuations in the surrounding natural Yuan Power.

Near the centre of the stadium was where the full-fledged disciples sat. A few of the branch disciples were looking at them. Brimming within their eyes were envy and admiration. The purpose of their hard work was for the dream to one day become a full-fledged disciple of the Desolate Hall.

Looking further beyond to the centre of the stadium, there was a series of tall erected platforms. Seated on them, were a few hundred people dressed in yellow clothes. Every one of them was emitting wave after wave of frightening Yuan Power fluctuations.

Those were the direct disciples, the true elite of the Desolate Hall.

If the gazes of the branch disciples were filled with envy and admiration, the gazes directed towards the direct disciples were also filled with a trace of respect. All of them were clearly aware that becoming a direct disciple, was a mark of power and strength.

However, what caught the eye of most people in the stadium, was not the direct disciples. Instead, it was the four wide and tall platforms situated at the center of the stadium. On those four platforms, sat four different people.

Their status and position were higher than any disciple in the Desolate Hall. Their status and position was something that anyone would know of, and there was no one who would doubt their capabilities. That was because the four of them were the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall. In other words, they were the most outstanding existences amongst all the disciples in the Desolate Hall!

On the opposite side of the stadium, was a stone table and a row of stone chairs. Seated there was Chen Zhen, Wu Dao and a few other protectors of the Desolate Hall. They were currently observing the scene before them.

“According to the information that we received, there are hundreds of branch disciples this time around that have the qualifications to become full-fledged disciples,” announced Wu Dao as his gaze swept across the whole stadium.

After hearing that statement, Chen Zhen faintly nodded his head. This number was much better than the statistics from the past few months. It seems like those little fellows at the bottom had trained quite hard this past couple of months.

“Lin Dong still hasn’t appeared?” asked Chen Zhen suddenly.

“Yes.” replied Wu Dao as he continued speaking while smiling: “He should be in a critical phase of his training. Senior brother Mo is quite interested in him and he should be keeping a close eye on him.

“If he can’t make it on time, postpone the challenge match for one month as training is more important,” said Chen Zhen while smiling. He did not wish for Lin Dong to appear now. Based on Lin Dong’s talent, his chances of victory even against Jiang Hao would increase quite a bit if he was to train for one more month.

“News has already spread and even some branch disciples have heard about Lin Dong. They all want to witness the superhuman genius that dared to challenge one of the four senior direct disciples after entering the Desolate Hall for less than a month...” said Wu Dao helplessly.

“Furthermore, based on Lin Dong’s character, I’m afraid that he will never back down.”

“His character...is truly similar to senior brother Zhou Tong. Else, he would not have charged up to Yuan Gate alone. After

thinking about it, I believe that even Lord Sect master would have protected him if he stayed in Dao Sect. But... Yuan Gate, that damned thing!” vented Chen Zhen before deeply sighing. When he mentioned this incident, even a person of his status could not help but curse.

Wu Dao turned solemn and his face turned quite gloomy. One could tell how bitter he was about Zhou Tong and the Yuan Gate incident.

“That’s enough, let’s not talk about it. Let’s wait awhile longer...”

After Chen Zhen saw the expression on Wu Dao’s face, he secretly shook his head. If senior Zhou Tong was still around now, based on his past results, there was a good chance that he could rival those old codgers in the sect. Regretfully, the sect master of Yuan Gate personally took action, and perhaps, he detected the threat that Zhou Tong would become in the future, should he be given enough time to grow....

While Chen Zhen and Wu Dao were conversing, a slight commotion had appeared because of the delay in the monthly competition.

On top of a stone platform, Jiang Hao was casually observing the mountainous amount of people in the stadium. Promptly, he furrowed his eyebrows. It is rumoured that Lin Dong had submerged himself in the martial arts hall for five days already. Was he planning to use that as an excuse to avoid today’s match?

“Haha, senior brother Jiang Hao. Look’s like the challenge match today might have fizzled out...” Fang Yun grinned when he saw this sight. He stretched his back casually before teasing Jiang Hao.

“If that is the case, his previous showcase of arrogance is truly a joke...” replied Jiang Hao calmly and casually.

“Lin Dong has just entered our Desolate Hall. Even if you defeat him, it would not be anything glamorous. Furthermore, he is our junior brother.” said Pang Tong while frowning. He was the one with the greatest qualifications amongst the four senior direct disciples.

“I didn’t mean to cause trouble for him. However, there are times when respecting a senior brother is still required right? If this doesn’t happen, in the future, members of our Desolate Hall will be mocked by those from the other halls for not knowing how to respect one’s seniors.” replied Jiang Hao after curling his lip.

“It is alright to let him suffer a little to restrain his arrogant disposition. However, you have to remember that senior uncle Chen Zhen and the others highly value Lin Dong,” added Song Zhou while smiling.

“I will exercise discretion. Since he was able to endure the Pill River Head Immersion for so long, even I have to respect him for that. However, he is still considered as a new disciple and he needs to know the rules. Since you guys are unwilling to take action, it’s down to me.” said Jiang Hao casually.

Song Zhou smiled once again and only nodded his head without saying anything else. However, the unexpected delay had added an extra tinge of anticipation. Song Zhou was curious to see what kind of incredible performance that junior brother, who had rushed up with an irresistible force since his entry into Desolate Hall, would have against one of the four senior direct disciples, Jiang Hao...

Would he be beaten till his arrogant spirit was replaced with despair or would he perform another miracle once again?

As all the disciples quietly awaited, time slowly passed. However, the commotion in the stadium was gradually getting more intense as time passed.

Seeing this, both Chen Zhen and Wu Dao frowned. However, they did not prevent this. Instead, their eyes irresistibly moved towards the mountain peak where the martial arts hall was situated.

“It’s time...but why hasn’t that fellow Lin Dong appeared...”

At a corner within the location of the direct disciples, Mo Ling and the others were getting slightly worried. Their gazes continuously scanned all directions. They clearly knew that news regarding the match between Lin Dong and Jiang Hao had spread far and wide during these few days. If Lin Dong did not show up, he might become the target for ridicule and mockery.

“Lin Dong went to the martial arts hall and is most likely delayed

because he is learning a new martial art.”

Liu Bai said solemnly. He looked towards the crowd helplessly and said: “Just wait a while longer. Panicking would not solve the problem. Furthermore, it may be a good thing to postpone this fight. After all, Lin Dong’s opponent is one of the four senior direct disciples...”

From the way he phrased his words, it was obvious that he was not favouring Lin Dong’s odds for this challenge match. Although he had quite a lot of confidence in Lin Dong, regardless, Jiang Hao was not someone that Tong Chuan could be compared with...

After hearing his words, the group could only nod their heads and suppress the anxiety in their hearts, as they eagerly waited for the arrival of Lin Dong.

The burning sun above the sky started to reach the midpoint position. Seeing this, Chen Zhen and Wu Dao could only helplessly shake their heads. Seems like Lin Dong was truly engrossed in his training.

“Let the other disciples begin first...”

Chen Zhen waved his hand before a protector of the Desolate Hall slowly walked out. His eyes swept across the entire stadium before he proceeded to announce the start of the monthly competition. Upon seeing his appearance and announcement, a disappointed hiss could be heard ringing across the entire stadium.

Swoosh!

However, just as this disappointed hiss started to decline, the sound of air shattering suddenly resounded out from the sky far away. A familiar aura could be felt spreading out from there.

“Has he finally arrived... He did not disappoint me in the end...”

Jiang Hao raised his head and looked towards a distant spot in the sky. A chuckle appeared on his face.



# Chapter 665: Intense Fight With Jiang Hao

---

Whoosh!

The sound of air shattering rapidly resounded in the sky. On the top of the mountain peak, every single pair of eyes started to shift due to this whooshing sound, before carrying some excitement as they turned towards the direction where the whooshing sound came from.

Has he finally arrived?

Under the tens of thousands of earnest gazes, the whooshing sound increased violently. After a few breaths, a human figure appeared in front of everyone.

Swish!

The person travelled through the air before landing in the middle of the stadium under the gazes of everyone present. The person faced the opposite side of the stadium before he cupped his hands towards Chen Zhen and Wu Dao. With a slightly apologetic voice, he said: “Disciple is late.”

“Haha, it’s fine now that you are here.. .”

Chen Zhen smiled before stroking his beard with his hands, while his eyes scanned across Lin Dong’s body. However, he did not manage to discover any differences even after these past five

days.

Jiang Hao slowly stood up from the tall platform before he glared at Lin Dong: “Junior brother Lin Dong, I almost assumed that you were planning to run away from today’s fight,” he said with a smile.

“Lin Dong wouldn’t dare to forget about senior brother’s challenge, right?” said Lin Dong softly after giving a faint smile.

“Haha, you’re bold.”

Jiang Hao gave a loud laugh before tapping the platform with his foot. He shot forward like an eagle and appeared directly in front of Lin Dong. Waving his large sleeves, a Yuan Power fluctuation that seemingly encompassed the sky erupted out. This caused exclaimed expressions to appear on the faces of quite a few disciples.

Feeling the oppression caused by the Yuan Power billowing out of Jiang Hao’s body, a smile appeared on Lin Dong’s face. Seven Yuan Nirvana Stage is powerful indeed.

At this moment, there were quite a few pairs of eyes staring on Lin Dong ever since his appearance. This was obviously due to the massive fame that was attached to his name. Even the disciples from the three other halls knew about this top-tier individual called Lin Dong. However, not many of them had actually seen him in the flesh. Furthermore, there was an enormous number of Desolate Hall branch disciples present today.

“That person is senior brother Lin Dong? I heard that he actually dared to challenge a senior direct disciple like Jiang Hao after entering the Desolate Hall for less than a month.”

“Heh, what do you know? It’s said that senior brother Lin Dong was the champion of the Hundred Empire War. Furthermore, he even rejected Yuan Gate’s invitation and instead chose to join our Dao Sect. Hence, he is not someone that can be compared with any ordinary direct disciple.”

“Hundred Empire War champion? That truly is incredible. The past few champions have always been monopolised by Yuan Gate.”

“However, senior brother Jiang Hao is unlike those opponents in the Hundred Empire War. I’m afraid senior brother Lin Dong will hit a wall today.”

“Haha, senior brother Lin Dong is quite handsome. I hope that he can win.”

“You’re lovesick.”

Soft discussion sounds could be heard continuously ringing around in the stadium. Over tens of thousands of branch disciples were staring intently at Lin Dong. Amongst them, there were quite a few young and beautiful female disciples as well. As such, amongst the gossips, there was quite a few witty remarks and laughter mixed in too. This caused the environment of the place to grow quite lively.

Hearing the discussion noises coming from the surroundings, Lin Dong could not resist and gave a faint smile. Only after lightly scanning with his eyes, did he realize the enormous number of disciples. He clicked his tongue. This is the disciple foundation of the Desolate Hall? It is quite valiant indeed. He could sense that even the branch disciples had all advanced into Nirvana Stage. This meant that there were over tens of thousands of Nirvana Stage experts just within the Desolate Hall.

Including the three other halls, the total amount would be...

“Worthy of a super sect lineage.” thought Lin Dong. Lin Dong involuntarily felt shocked in his heart. He finally understood why the super sects were the true overlords of the Eastern Xuan Region. This strength was something that an empire alone could never compare with.

Take for example his Great Yan Empire, a Nirvana stage expert would be considered as an elite individual there. However, if he was placed within the Dao Sect, he would barely qualify to become a branch disciple...

Jiang Hao did a lazy stretch, faced Chen Zhen and Wu Dao and said with a smile, “Senior Uncle Chen Zhen, since junior brother Lin Dong has already arrived, can we begin the fight? There are many disciples behind waiting for the chance to get promoted. ”

After hearing his words, Chen Zhen nodded his head before looking towards Lin Dong and Jiang Hao. He said in a deep voice:

“We do not forbid disciples within the Desolate Hall to spar with each other. However, I want the two of you to be very clear that this is merely a spar. This is the Dao Sect and both of you are fellow disciples, not bitter enemies.”

“Yes!”

After hearing Chen Zhen’s stern warning, both Lin Dong and Jiang Hao did not dare to neglect as they respectfully replied.

When he saw their actions, Chen Zhen nodded his head in satisfaction. With a wave of his hand, he said: “In that case, I shall declare that the monthly competition has begun!”

“Lin Dong, if you are able to spar evenly with Jiang Hao, you will gain the qualifications to become the fifth senior direct disciple! Furthermore, you will also become the fastest person in the history of Desolate Hall to become a senior direct disciple!”

“Disciple will do his best.”

Lin Dong replied and nodded his head. Slowly turning his body to face Jiang Hao, he lightly saluted and said: “Senior brother Jiang Hao, please guide me!”

Following the appearance of Lin Dong’s words, the whispering sounds present within the arena instantly disappeared. Tens of thousands of gazes stared intently at the centre of the arena. This stifling atmosphere caused some people to be unable to catch their

breath.

“You want to become the fifth senior direct disciple. However, it’s not going to be so easy to pass through me,” said Jiang Hao casually as he stared at Lin Dong.

Lin Dong curled his lip and replied in a soft voice with a smile on his face: “In that case, the only thing I can do is to defeat you, senior brother.”

“This wouldn’t happen just by words alone!”

Jiang Hao gave a casual smile before his vision instantly became swift and fierce. He took a step forward before boundless Yuan Power erupted from his body without restraint. He had already decided to unleash his maximum strength. After all, he wanted to defeat Lin Dong with a lightning-like speed in order to let him clearly understand that the current him still does not possess the qualifications to become a senior direct disciple!

Huff!

Sensing the swift and fierce oppression coming from Jiang Hao, a trace of seriousness appeared on Lin Dong’s vision before he took in a deep breath. Jiang Hao was one of the senior direct disciples in Desolate Hall and his combat prowess and strength must not be underestimated.

Upon entering the challenge, Jiang Hao’s face turned into one of

cold indifference. He also had no intention of warming up first. Instead, with a grasp of his hand, boundless Yuan Power condensed with lightning-like speed in his palm. Finally, it turned into an eleven feet long golden coloured sabre. An astonishingly swift and fierce fluctuation was emitted by it.

Roar!

After materializing his sabre, Jiang Hao suddenly took a step forward. A remnant shade was left at his original position. However, his body and morphed into a ray of light and soared towards Lin Dong with a frightening speed.

Swish!

Jiang Hao's speed was frightening. In a blink of an eye, he appeared in front of Lin Dong. With a cold gaze, his golden blade sliced through space. Carrying a frightening amount of chilliness, he hacked at Lin Dong with a lightning-like speed!

Before the blade glow could descend, the swift and fierce Qi from it had already left deep marks on the ground.

Ding!

Facing the lightning quick offensive launched by Jiang Hao, Lin Dong suddenly flipped his palm. Instantly, a black metal seal flashed and appeared, causing winds to violent rage as it morphed into an enormous iron symbol. It violently slammed against that

golden glow, causing sparks to erupt before a metallic sound resounded throughout the air.

Violent winds erupted from the centre of the stadium. Jiang Hao's body trembled as he quickly retreated several steps. However, it was obvious that his combat experience was extremely rich. While he retreated, a blade glow instantly erupted forth before it transformed into a dozen over glowing afterimages and viciously slammed against the black metal seal.

Bang!

Due to the violent blade glows, the black metal seal was directly shaken and smashed away. However, before the metal seal flew off, a person appeared before it in a flash. Green light started to appear on his arms, before instantly morphing into green dragon's gigantic arm.

Dong!

Lin Dong's green dragon arm heavily pressed against the black metal seal. Fearful strength erupted from the arm and directly shook and dissipate the frightening blade afterimages. After which, he clenched his hand tightly into a fist and slammed it viciously against the iron seal.

Clang!

The black iron seal was directly blown away by Lin Dong's fist. It



was just like a black meteorite as it charged towards Jiang Hao, with an incomparably wild and violent strength.

Looking at the metal seal approaching him like a meteorite, the cold glint within Jiang Hao's eye grew even colder. Radiant golden light crazily gathered on his fist, causing a boundless fluctuation to spread out before he also launched a fist and smashed against the iron seal.

Boom!

The enormous metal seal was once again smashed and rebounded by his fist. Despite its massive size, it was just like a toy that was being flung around by Lin Dong and Jiang Hao. Seeing this play out, it caused the eyes of quite a few people to flutter.

Lin Dong moved his body and once again appeared on top of the black metal seal. His eyes were locked on Jiang Hao, who was standing in the stadium. Within his eyes, one could feel the excitement within his body beginning to boil.

“Since you want to fight, let's have a good fight!”

Lin Dong exclaimed as the corners of his mouth cracked open. His other hand started to wriggle about, before morphing into another ferocious-looking green dragon arm in front of the shocked audience.

“You are skilled indeed.”

Within the stadium, Jiang Hao grasped the golden coloured sabre in his hand and stood proudly. His fiery gaze was locked onto Lin Dong, who was stepping on the metal seal hovering in midair. He took a deep breath before a formidable fluctuation gradually started to surface from within his body.

When this fluctuation appeared, the ground around Jiang Hao started to wither at a frightening rate.

Desolate Force.

Quite a few gazes of the disciples started to focus at this instant. Jiang Hao was about to use Desolate Force. This was the special energy that was solely possessed by the Desolate Hall disciples...

# Chapter 666: Great Star Majestic Fist

---

Crack!

Numerous tiny seals swiftly spread out from the spot where Jiang Hao stood. The green stones beneath his feet also began to wither one after another at a shocking rate. It was as if they had been worn down by the passage of time.

Desolate Force.

It was the unique energy of the Desolate Hall and also the mark of a Desolate Hall's disciple. Being one of the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall, Jiang Hao had mastered the Desolation Skill until the seventh level. As such, the ferocity of his martial art was several times stronger than Tong Chuan's.

Lin Dong stood on the black metal seal. His eyes were solemn as he stared at Jiang Hao below. He slowly flexed his huge green dragon arms before waves of surging strength swiftly spread across his limbs.

“Desolate Blade.”

Jiang Hao raised his head and looked directly at Lin Dong with chilly eyes. An icy cold voice was emitted from his mouth. Immediately, the golden light was withdrawn from the large golden sabre in his hand, before numerous seal patterns slowly appeared on his blade. However, the fluctuation on his blade was not weakened when that seal pattern appeared. Instead, it caused

one's heart to tremble.

Desolate Blade. One of the martial arts that the disciples of the Desolate Hall must learn. It was activated by Desolate Force and possessed an extremely shocking lethal strength. Lin Dong had already experienced it when he fought with Tong Chuan. However, from the looks of it, it was obvious that the Desolate Blade used by Jiang Hao was even more powerful.

“Swoosh!”

Jiang Hao suddenly took a step forward when the Desolate Blade was formed. He slashed his blade downwards and the space in front of him immediately became extremely distorted. A greyish blade glow directly tore through space and engulfed Lin Dong at a frightening speed. As that grey blade glow rapidly magnified in Lin Dong's eyes, the expression in the latter's eyes also suddenly became sharp. However, even as he faced this fearsome attack by Jiang Hao, he did not choose to retreat. Instead, Lin Dong stomped on the metal seal and directly flew out in front of many stunned gazes.

Flash!

A resplendent green light suddenly erupted on Lin Dong's body as he rushed forward. The green light rose and it vaguely transformed into an enormous dragon figure behind him. Its aura was quite frightening.

The huge dragon figure crouched behind Lin Dong and both of its

claws were tightly clenched. The dragon scales on both of the green dragon arms were flickering with an icy cool lustre. Waves after waves of frightening strength surged under the dragon scales before finally gushing out!

The green light, which contained enough power to blast apart a mountain, descended from the sky. Finally, it violently collided against that sharp grey coloured blade glow.

Boom!

A shocking sound spread out in the sky. Following the ripple, there was a hurricane like energy fluctuation...

Jiang Hao's eyes were slightly cold as he watched the light that scattered across the sky. There was a trace of surprise deep within his eyes. After having used the Desolate Force, his blade attack was sufficient to easily destroy the defences of a six Yuan Nirvana Stage expert. However, it was actually blocked by Lin Dong.

Swoosh!

A surprised expression flashed across Jiang Hao's eyes. Immediately, a hurried rushing wind sound suddenly resounded in the sky. A glowing figure shot out from within that green light with a lightning-like speed. In a flash, it had appeared in the space above Jiang Hao. Light surged from his green dragon arm. Under the flickering icy cold light, another frightening force once again came pouring out.

Lin Dong did not use any martial art and his attack was not fancy. However, upon being magnified by his dragon arm, that pure destructive attack covered up any openings!

Everything was useless in the face of strength!

After Lin Dong's arms transformed into green dragon arms, the strength that it possessed was sufficient to destroy a six Yuan Nirvana Stage expert's Nirvana Golden Body!

“Such formidable strength!”

Jiang Hao also sensed the strength that was contained within Lin Dong's fist. Immediately, his eyes turned cold. Only then, did he finally realize that Lin Dong's physical body was actually this formidable.

“Desolate Net!”

Although Lin Dong's attack was wild and violent, Jiang Hao was clearly not an ordinary individual. His face revealed a cold smile before he suddenly placed his palms together. Instantly, countless grey threads spun out from the tip of his fingers. It soared with the wind and transformed into an enormous grey net. Immediately, this grey net directly covered Lin Dong.

Bam!

Lin Dong's fist violently smashed against that enormous net.

Surprisingly, he was unable to break it with his punch. Despite using a massive amount of force, it felt as if he had punched into the mud. The feeling of his fist smashing onto cotton caused Lin Dong to frown tightly.

Swoosh!

While Lin Dong punched that grey net, the latter also instantly twined around him. It actually trapped Lin Dong with a lightning-like speed.

“This fellow is in deep trouble. It is not easy to escape after being trapped by the Desolate Net. Subsequently, it is likely that he will become a sitting duck for Jiang Hao’s attacks.” Pang Tong and the other two raised their brows upon seeing this scene. Since they were highly knowledgeable about Desolate Hall martial arts, they were naturally aware of just how difficult it was to deal with the Desolate Net, which was made from Desolate Force.

“Junior brother Lin Dong, this is the difference between you and me!”

A smirk appeared on Jiang Hao’s face at this moment. Promptly, his eyes turned solemn as grey Qi gathered rapidly on his hand. Traces of seals began to spread over his arms. At the same time, there was an extremely frightening fluctuation being emitted.

“Golden State Special Desolate Palm!”

Jiang Hao's eyes were cold. He did not hesitate even a little as he flipped his palm and executed an extremely fierce palm attack. Air burst apart under that palm wind, while an ear-piercing buzzing sound was also emitted.

Jiang Hao attacked extremely quickly. The palm wind had just sounded out when in the next instant, it was already about to reach Lin Dong, who was being trapped by the Desolate Net. From the looks of its momentum, even Lin Dong would suffer some injuries if he was struck by it.

After struggling briefly within the Desolate Net, Lin Dong also became aware of how troublesome it was to deal with it. However, there was no panic in his eyes. He stared at the fierce palm attack from Jiang Hao before immediately inhaling a deep breath of air. The fist-size Desolate Seed within his Dantian began to tremble intensely. Waves after waves of Desolate Force followed his medians and gushed out.

The Desolate Force surged. After which, everyone saw Lin Dong once again raise his ferocious green dragon arms. However, this time around, the green light on it had strangely disappeared. Traces of patterns began to climb over it.

“Is that... Desolate Force?”

Some of those direct disciples, who were closer to the arena, shrunk their eyes immediately. This fluctuation also belonged to the Desolate Force. It seems like Lin Dong was also able to use Desolate Force?



“How is this be possible?” Tong Chuan, who was a short distance away, had a stunned expression. He clearly recalled that Lin Dong was not even aware of what the Desolate Force was five days ago. How is it possible that he managed to use Desolate Force?

“Could it be that he had actually learnt it in five days?” Tong Chuan’s face involuntarily twitched a little when he thought of this. If one wants to release Desolate Force until such an extent, one must at the very least form a Desolate Seed. Could it be that Lin Dong had successfully formed a Desolate Seed during these five days?

Lin Dong ignored the uproar that suddenly sounded from the surroundings of the arena. While his arm was gradually covered with crack lines, his eyes also suddenly turned cold. Finally, he ruthlessly threw a punch!

Chi!

Lin Dong’s fist wind first came into contact with the Desolate Net that trapped him. However, this time around, that cotton-like feeling did not appear. Under the outpour of his terrifying strength, the Desolate Net shook before finally breaking apart after only enduring for a short while.

Jiang Hao’s sharp palm wind arrived at the moment the Desolate Net collapsed. It violently collided against Lin Dong’s grey dragon fist in front of the many gazes present.

Boom!

A shocking and solidified ripple swept apart. Numerous enormous crack line immediately appeared on the surrounding ground, while large rocks danced wildly in the sky. Finally, two figures shot backwards in front of the many eyes present. Both of them retreated over a dozen steps before they staggered and stabilized themselves.

Neither of them was actually able to gain an upper hand in this simple head on collision!

The atmosphere in the arena was a little quiet. Everyone was silent as they stared at this unusually fearsome clash. Quite a number of people inhaled a breath of cold air when these two people were forced back. Even Pang Tong and the others had a slight change in their expression. Clearly, they did not expect that Lin Dong was actually able to fight evenly with Jiang Hao.

Although Jiang Hao had yet to use his strongest attack, his Yuan Power mastery had exceeded Lin Dong by two stages...

Seated on their stone chairs, Chen Zhen and Wu Dao had a strange flicker within their eyes when they saw this scene.

“The Hundred Empire War champion really lives up to his name.”

Jiang Hao's face was currently filled with a serious expression.

Perhaps he may have underestimated Lin Dong at the beginning of the fight. However, right now, Jiang Hao definitely saw the latter as a worthy opponent.

Lin Dong curled his lips. He clenched his hand while green light flickered on his arm, as he tried to shake off the numb sensations in his arm. During the previous clash, if it was not for his strong physical body cultivated from the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill, he would have definitely been injured.

“If you are able to receive my next attack, I will accept your promotion to senior direct disciple!”

Jiang Hao’s expression was solemn. He took a stride forward and both of his hands slowly formed a somewhat unusual seal. Greyish light erupted from within his body. The bits and pieces of it were just like rising stars.

“Great Star Majestic Fist!”

Upon seeing his hand seal, Pang Tong’s group and even Chen Zhen and Wu Dao, had a sudden change in their expressions. Clearly, they recognised the martial art that Jiang Hao was about to use.

“One of the four great martial arts huh...”

Lin Dong inhaled a deep breath of air. He saw the martial arts on the four stone tablets and he naturally recognised Jiang Hao’s

hand seal. Immediately, a grave expression appeared on his face. A moment later, he slowly extended his long finger and gently touched the spot between his eyebrows. A strange greyish glow began to flicker at that spot.

Chen Zhen and Wu Dao on the stone seat were initially stunned when they saw his action. Immediately, as if they thought of something, a rich disbelief surged in their eyes. A somewhat dry and hoarse voice was involuntarily emitted from their mouths...

“Could it be...”

# Chapter 667: The Power of the Demon Eye

---

Lin Dong shut his eyes as he stood in the arena. His expression was quite calm in the face of this unusually fierce attack by Jiang Hao. Moreover, there was no especially powerful ripple appearing around his body. His actions caused quite a number of people to frown. Jiang Hao's attack was not a simple one and even a seven Yuan Nirvana stage expert would have some difficulties handling it, should he lack any powerful tactics...

While everyone was engaged in private conversations, the grey line between Lin Dong's eyebrows became increasingly rich. It expanded and contracted unsteadily, appearing as though there was something that was about to be born from the grey line.

Bang bang!

In contrast to Lin Dong's strange calmness, the area around Jiang Hao was extremely lively. An extremely shocking Yuan Power ripple containing the Desolate Force continuously spread out from within his body. His aura was truly frightening.

Grey light climbed onto Jiang Hao's body before gradually agglomerating. It was as though it had vaguely agglomerated into a ten feet grey star in midair in front of him.

The star's shape was undefined. Its surface was filled with potholes, appearing just like a meteorite. However, this seemingly normal appearance rippled and formed a frightening fluctuation that caused some distortions to appear in the surrounding sky.

Everyone in the arena, including Pang Tong's group, had a solemn expression on their faces because of Jiang Hao's attack. Those direct disciples and the rest even had some shocked filled eyes. They were aware that if it was them, there was likely nothing they could do to resist that attack...

“He is indeed worthy of being a senior direct disciple...”

Quite a number of disciples secretly sighed in their hearts. Jiang Hao did indeed possess extraordinary talent and he deserved to be one of the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall. Great Star Majestic Fist was one of the four great martial arts of the Desolate Hall and only the four senior direct disciples in Desolate Hall have successfully mastered it.

“Senior Lin Dong is in quite a bad situation.”

At the same time, some disciples involuntarily looked towards Lin Dong, who had turned quiet. Although the latter's action puzzled them, in face of Jiang Hao's terrifying attack, they were simply unable to imagine that Lin Dong could contend against him.

Perhaps, they may not doubt Lin Dong's potential. After all, though he only joined the Desolate Hall for less than a month, he was able to challenge one of the four senior direct disciples, Jiang Hao, and even forced the latter to use his signature move “Great Star Majestic Fist”. Other than the three other senior direct disciples, it was likely that only Lin Dong possessed such

capabilities.

“They are about to determine the victor in one move...” Pang Tong’s eyes were also looking at the arena as he muttered. Immediately, his eyes drifted towards Chen Zhen and Wu Dao, who were seated on the stone stair. After which, he was stunned. This was because he saw an extremely shocked expression on their faces...

Pang Tong was shocked upon seeing this. His heart also suddenly began to throb wildly.

“Could it be...”

On the stone chair, Chen Zhen’s voice was hoarse and he was even unable to finish his sentence. He stared in shock at that spot between Lin Dong’s eyebrows, while the expression on his face changed rapidly.

“It can’t be... that martial arts, back then, even senior Zhou Tong did not successfully learn it. Senior Mo also turned blind while learning it...” Wu Dao’s voice was also somewhat dry. There was also a rich disbelief on top of this dryness. This disbelief had exceeded the intensity that he felt from Lin Dong’ Pill River Head Immersion result.

Chen Zhen turned quiet and he could only shake his head. If Lin Dong was truly able to gain an initial mastery over that martial art within a short five days, it could only mean that this fellow was simply too abnormal...

“This martial arts might be unusually powerful, but it also has its disadvantages. There is no telling if it is a good or bad thing if Lin Dong has really learnt it...”

Wu Dao also nodded when he heard Chen Zhen’s words. There was a worried expression in his eyes as he stared at Lin Dong in the arena. Although that martial art was powerful, it was a vicious skill that severely wounded one’s enemy and oneself as well.

“Junior Lin Dong, if you can receive this punch, I, Jiang Hao, will no longer object your promotion to become a senior direct disciple!”

Jiang Hao’s body gradually rose into the air in the arena, while being covered by a greyish glow. His eyes were sharp as he stared at Lin Dong in the distance and cried out sternly.

A ten feet grey coloured star quietly floated in front of him. Waves of extremely violent ripple swept apart like a storm. It was extremely powerful.

However, Lin Dong still remained calm in the face of Jiang Hao’s stern cry. The grey line between his eyebrows swiftly wiggled at this moment. It was as though there were numerous vague small grey lines spreading out while accompanied by a unique dark evil aura. The direction that they spread towards was actually Lin Dong’s eyes.

Buzz!



However, just as those numerous tiny grey lines were about to invade Lin Dong's eyes, a gentle white glow suddenly appeared around his eyes. It actually directly absorbed those numerous grey lines.

If it was possible to probe into the area between Lin Dong's eyebrows at this moment, one would see an ancient stone talisman quietly suspended there. A faint white glow was being emitted from it.

Below the ancient stone talisman, was a spot that was filled with a strange dark evil greyish Qi. Hovering amidst this greyish Qi, was a grey coloured eyeball filled with a demonic scent.

That eyeball was filled with an unusual and bloody trace, while an ancient ferociousness filled it. However, each time this viciousness surged forth, the ancient stone talisman above would send a rippling white glow that suppressed it until it could no longer move.

Buzz!

A thought suddenly spread over this place at this moment. After which, the stone talisman, which was suppressing the grey eyeball, finally withdrew its white glow.

The moment the stone talisman stopped suppressing it, blood traces immediately began to emerge from the grey eyeball before its ferociousness completely erupted.

“Great Star Majestic Fist!”

A low and deep cry suddenly resounded over the sky. Jiang Hao adopted a serious expression as he clenched his fingers into a fist and threw a punch without any fancy moves.

Bang!

His fist struck violently against the grey star in front of him. After which, the star whizzed and flew out, creating a trace of greyish tail light. It was just like a meteorite searing across the sky as it flew towards Lin Dong with a hard and forceful violent ripple.

Crack!

The star whizzed forth. Before it could land on the ground, it had already left countless cracks on the ground. The spreading ripple was such that even several disciples at a great distance away, could feel a piercing pain and chillness over their skin.

This chillness caused the expressions of quite a number of disciples to change. The remanent wave was already this frightening. If they were located at the spot where Lin Dong was, wouldn't they be directly pummeled by that fierce and violent fist wind until turned into pulp?

“Why is Lin Dong still not reacting...”

Over at the direct disciples, Mo Ling and the rest had anxious expressions on their faces as they stared at Lin Dong, who had yet to act. Their bodies involuntarily turned tense.

Bang!

That grey star was extremely fast. Within a couple of breaths' time, it had already arrived above Lin Dong. Just when everyone halted their breaths, Lin Dong, who had yet to show any sign of activity, finally raised his head slowly. Both of his eyes opened.

Chi!

The instant that Lin Dong opened his eyes, the grey line between his eyebrows suddenly split open. After which, a grey light agglomerated. The spot between his eyebrows had actually transformed into a grey triangular eye.

The instant the grey eye appeared, the space around Lin Dong suddenly became distorted. An extremely destructive shockwave wildly spread apart.

Chen Zhen and Wu Dao on the stone chairs finally had a drastic change in expression the moment that grey eye appeared. They suddenly stood up and involuntarily cried out in a shocked manner, "Desolate Demon Eye!"

Swoosh!

When they stood up, an ordinary grey beam of light erupted from Lin Dong's grey eye. After which, it quietly flashed past the sky and collided with the grey star.

Boom!

There was no earth-shaking noise the moment the collision occurred. The grey light directly penetrated through the star in a simple and unhindered manner. After which, crack lines covered the star. Finally, it directly burst apart in front of the shocked eyes of all the disciples.

Jiang Hao's fierce punch had actually been broken so easily...

Jiang Hao was similarly stunned when he saw this scene. Before he could even react, the pores around his body stood up. Through his shrunken eyes, he could see a grey light beam rushing towards him with a shocking speed.

That was the light beam that had penetrated through his Great Star Majestic Fist earlier!

"It's so fast. There is no way to dodge it!"

The grey beam was so fast that Jiang Hao had no way to dodge it. Immediately, he clenched his teeth. Bright golden light surged before it directly transformed into an extremely thick golden light shield in front of him.

Swoosh!

The light beam arrived in the blink of an eye. After which, it slammed against the golden light shield in front of a countless number of gazes. However, soon after, a terrified expression surged onto Jiang Hao's face. This was because he discovered that his defence was of no use against that attack.

A rich feeling of danger covered his heart.

Seated in his stone chair, Chen Zhen's expression was solemn. His body shook before he strangely disappeared. It seems like he had to intervene in this fight...

# Chapter 668: The Fifth Senior Direct Disciple

---

The radiant golden shield started to collapse at an astonishing speed due to that grey light beam. That defensive shield, which was able to resist an all-out attack from a Seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert, collapsed just like paper mache.

At this moment, a panic-stricken expression quickly appeared on Jiang Hao's face. However, since he was able to become one of the four senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall, he was no ordinary individual. In the face of danger, he acted in a decisive fashion. Immediately, he lightning quick stomped on his crumbling golden shield, before he used that momentum to retreat.

Whoosh!

The moment Jiang Hao made his sudden explosive retreat, the grey light had already thoroughly smashed a hole through his golden shield. Furthermore, it continued on with an astonishing speed and flew straight towards Jiang Hao.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Jiang Hao's face turned solemn as he quickly retreated. As he continuously waved his sleeves, waves of powerful Desolate Energy came rushing forth. Following which, he tried to use those energy waves to resist the strange grey light beam, that was headed towards him.

However, it was obvious that his attempt at resistance was futile. Although the grey light beam was not frightening to look at, the corrosive strength that it contained was at quite a terrifying level. Therefore, those Desolate Energy shockwaves that were sent out by Jiang Hao did not hinder the grey light beam at all.

At this moment, the entire stadium was thoroughly rifled up. Countless numbers of disciples, who were initially seated, all stood up suddenly. All of them wore dumbfounded looks as they stared at Jiang Hao, who was now extremely distressed. In that second, each and every one of them had a look of disbelief on their faces.

The situation had turned around too quickly!

Originally, they assumed that the fight would end the moment Jiang Hao executed his “Great Star Majestic Fist”. However, none of them expected that not only was Lin Dong able to handle such a fearsome attack, he even managed to force Jiang Hao into such a sorry state!

An uproar spread throughout the entire mountain peak and even Pang Tong, Fang Yun and Song Zhou gawked at this scene. The three of them shot a look at each other and they could all see the shock that was present in each other’s eyes.

“Swish!”

At this very moment, Jiang Hao could not be bothered about the uproar that was happening on the mountain peak. His attention

was completely focused on the grey light beam, that was tailing him just like a maggot in his bone. A thick feeling of danger rose within him, causing all the hair on his body to involuntarily stand.

“It has caught up!”

Jiang Hao’s pupils suddenly contracted. The grey light beam pierced through the void like lighting and had actually already arrived in front of him.

“I don’t believe that I can’t block you!”

After retreating in such a distressed manner, Jiang Hao’s anger had finally shot through the roof. Straightening his head, boundless Yuan Power erupted crazily from his body, before he launched a palm attack.

However, as Jiang Hao was about to completely unleash all the Yuan Power within his palm, an old figure strangely appear in front of him. With a wave of his sleeve, a gentle draft appeared and swept Jiang Hao away. At the same time, he flipped his palm again before endless Yuan Power surged forth and formed a giant Yuan Power vortex in front of him. The vortex spun around crazily as the Yuan Power within it continued to grow endlessly.

Chi!

The grey light beam rushed into the Yuan Power vortex with lightning speed. After that happened, everyone could see several



massive explosions erupting within the vortex.

Chen Zhen's gaze turned solemn as he stared at the grey light beam that was rampaging across the vortex. At this moment, he raised both of his hands gently and directly patted the vortex, causing it to scatter. Following the scattering of the vortex, the grey light beam within also disappeared along with it.

After Chen Zhen settled the grey light beam, Jiang Hao had already landed on the ground. He raised his head with a faint palpitation still remaining on his face.

At this moment, the entire mountain peak was eerily silent. One gaze after another suddenly landed on the body of Chen Zhen, before all of them secretly gulped. Being disciples of the Desolate Gate, they were naturally aware that when disciples spared, the hall masters would not typically intervene. In fact, they would only interfere if there were incidents that were spinning out of control.

Pang Tong and the other two looked at this scene with some palpitations in their hearts.

“Lin Dong, is that the Desolate Demon Eye?” asked Chen Zhen in a relaxed tone, while hovering in mid air. He was looking at Lin Dong below, with a complex expression within his eyes.

As this question appeared, a sucking sound resounded from everywhere within the stadium. In fact, for Pang Tong, Jiang Hao and the other two, a rich astonishment expression appeared within

their eyes.

Amongst the Desolate Hall martial arts, the Great Desolation Mysterious Scripture was naturally the most powerful one. Below the Great Desolation Mysterious Scripture, was the so-called four great martial arts. Amongst them, the Desolate Demon Eye was the hardest to master. Within these few years, although it cannot be said that no one had managed to master the Desolate Demon Eye, most of them were the Desolate Hall's older generation members. Amongst the disciples, however, there was no one who had successfully done it...

However, right before their eyes, Lin Dong had actually managed to learn the Desolate Demon Eye, which was widely considered to be the most lethal martial art in Desolate Hall. How could this not make the audience feel shocked? Furthermore, they were clearly aware that Lin Dong had merely entered the martial arts hall for five days...

However, in these five days, he actually managed to gain an initial mastery over the Desolate Demon Eye?

“Is this fellow even human?” thought Pang Tong and other three as they shot a look at each other. All of them had complex feelings. Even though they were all highly talented, if they were to be compared to that fellow Lin Dong, they seemed rather ordinary.

Of course, the four of them naturally did not know that the reason why Lin Dong was able to do so, was not only because of his talent but also because of the Mysterious Stone Talisman. Although the Desolate Demon Eye was overbearing and evil and

ordinary individuals would find it exceedingly difficult to fully control it, Lin Dong possessed the Mysterious Stone Talisman. Therefore, he was able to fully restrain and control it!

Every pair of eyes in the entire stadium congealed on Lin Dong's body. At this moment, the grey eye at Lin Dong's forehead began to close before turning into a grey line and disappearing.

After the grey eye disappeared, a pale expression appeared on Lin Dong's face. The lethality, Yuan Power and Mental Energy consumption of the Desolate Demon Eye had completely exceeded his expectations. If Chen Zhen did not intervene, the previous attack would have likely left serious injuries on Jiang Hao. This situation was something that he obviously did not want to see. After all, this is the Desolate Hall and not the Ancient Battlefield. Therefore, he could no longer be as aggressive as before.

“Yes, hall master, the martial art that I have just used is indeed the Desolate Demon Eye.”

Lin Dong bowed at Chen Zhen, before saying in a bitter voice: “Due to the fact that I only have an initial mastery over it, I can't control it well...”

“I see...” Chen Zhen subconsciously muttered before turning silent for a while. It was as if he was trying to quell the shock within his heart.

After seeing Chen Zhen fall silent, Lin Dong did not speak anymore. He knew that Chen Zhen and the rest must be shocked

that he was able to learn the “Desolate Demon Eye”.

On the stone chair, Wu Dao secretly laughed bitterly in his heart. However, joy promptly surged into his heart. The more talented Lin Dong was, the better it was for their Desolate Hall. After all, it has been many years since their Desolate Hall had produced such an outstanding disciple...

“The path that the Desolate Demon Eye walks on is the pursuit of greater killing power. In the future, if you are unable to completely control it, try to refrain from using it when sparring with other disciples. Besides, this martial art will have a corrosive effect on the person using it. Unless it is a critical juncture, it’s best not to use it recklessly.” said Chen Zhen in a serious tone after regaining his clarity.

“Yes, disciple understands.”

Lin Dong respectfully nodded his head. He did not expose the existence of the Mysterious Stone Talisman. In fact, he did not have to worry about the corrosive effect of the Desolate Demon Eye because of it. Nonetheless, the Mysterious Stone Talisman was his greatest secret. As such, due to his cautious disposition, he was naturally unwilling to expose its existence even though he knew Chen Zhen and the rest did not have any malicious intentions towards him.

“For today’s spar, the victor and loser have been decided. From today onwards, you will be the fifth senior direct disciple of the Desolate Hall. Is there anyone else who objects?” Chen Zhen turned towards Pang Tong and the rest and asked.

After hearing his words, Pang Tang and the other three hesitated for a while before shaking their heads. This time around, even Jiang Hao could only laugh bitterly. The power that Lin Dong had displayed left him with no grounds to object...

Roar!

After Pang Tong and the other three indicated that they did not object, the entire stadium immediately erupted into a spectacular sea of cheering sounds and voices. Over tens of thousands of Desolate Hall disciples stared fervently at the thin figure standing in the middle of the stadium. A trace of respect appeared on all of their faces.

After today's match, Lin Dong had thoroughly conquered all the disciples in Desolate Hall. From today onwards, he would also become the fastest disciple in the history of the Desolate Hall to become a senior direct disciple!

# Chapter 669: A Talk in the Night

---

The Desolate Hall had an additional senior direct disciple after the end of the battle between Lin Dong and Jiang Hao. It was likely that this matter would stir quite a great commotion within the Dao Sect should it be spread. After all, there was not a single disciple during these years, who successfully became a senior direct disciple of any hall, after having just joined for less than a month.

Chen Zhen waved his sleeves after announcing that Lin Dong was the fifth senior direct disciple of the Desolate Hall. Immediately, everyone saw the ground beside the four stone platforms rising. A majestic Yuan Power directly created a new stone platform that was of the same height as the four others.

That spot would be Lin Dong's individual seat during the future monthly competitions. This was a symbol of status. With regards to that, Lin Dong also acted unceremoniously as his body moved and he rushed onto the platform.

“Haha, junior brother Lin Dong, congratulation,” Pang Tong's sincere face also had a smile on it at this moment, as he spoke to Lin Dong.

Fang Yun, Song Zhou and the other senior direct disciples also nodded their heads at Lin Dong. If they had previously looked down on Lin Dong because of their seniority, this mentality had been completely replaced. Lin Dong had displayed a shocking fighting strength during the previous battle and even they did not dare to underestimate him.

“I hope that the four seniors will take good care of me in the future.”

Lin Dong was not stingy with his friendliness in the face of their smiles. It was likely that he would train within the Desolate Hall for a long time in future. Hence, he naturally did not want to have a terrible relationship with his seniors. After experiencing the various games during the Hundred Empire War, he quite enjoyed the atmosphere within the Desolate Hall. After all, no one in this world likes to be constantly fighting with others...

Pang Tong and the three others smiled and nodded when they saw the friendly smile on Lin Dong's face. They involuntarily sighed within their hearts. Lin Dong's actions finally allowed them to understand the boldness and resolution that was buried within his bones. They had also heard about the cruelty of the Hundred Empire War. In order for Lin Dong to clear a path one step at a time with his low-rank empire background, the amount of effort he had to put in would likely cause them to feel ashamed, should it be described in detail.

“This junior has extraordinary potential. No wonder teacher-uncle Chen Zhen and Wu Dao have such high expectations of him...” The four of them looked at each other and saw the mutual thought within their minds.

After greeting Pang Tong's group, Lin Dong finally sat down on his own stone platform and raised his head. The height of the stone platform allowed him to overlook the entire mountaintop. There was a black mass of people when he looked down. Tens of thousands of Desolate Hall disciples sat quietly in this place. Their

expressions when they looked at him were filled with rich respect.

Chen Zhen once again returned to his stone seat. Next, he waved his sleeve and announced the start of the monthly competition. However, those subsequent matches were naturally not as fearsome as the one between Lin Dong and Jiang Hao. However, due to the large number of people present, the scene was also quite magnificent.

Branch disciples were the most numerous amongst the Desolate Hall disciples. These branch disciples were all constantly hoping to become full-fledged Desolate Hall disciples. This was because only by becoming a true Desolate Hall disciple would they possess the qualification to enter the Desolate Hall mountains and train. Moreover, they would also gain the qualifications to learn the deep and profound martial arts in Desolate Hall.

Therefore, there will always be quite a number of branch disciples going all-out during the monthly competition, in an attempt to unleash one hundred and twenty percent of their own strength, hoping that they will be promoted to become a full-fledged disciple.

The Desolate Hall monthly competition continued for an entire day. Its final result caused the Chen Zhen duo to feel quite satisfied. Amongst the tens of thousands of branch disciples, there were over a hundred disciples with outstanding performances, who possessed the qualification to be promoted to a full-fledged disciple. At the same time, this increased the overall strength of their Desolate Hall.



As moonlight gradually encompassed the Desolate Hall mountains, the mountain top, which had been lively for an entire day, finally began to gradually quieten down. As large groups of disciples began to leave, the sound of rushing wind continued to buzz over the mountaintop.

Lin Dong also stood up from his own stone platform. He stretched his lazy waist and was just about to leave with Mo Ling's group, when Wu Dao suddenly appeared beside him.

"Little fellow, you have performed quite well today." Wu Dao smilingly stared at Lin Dong and laughed.

"Heh, teacher-uncle Wu Dao has overpraised me. It was by chance that I satisfied the criteria for practicing the Desolate Demon Eye. Moreover, I have yet to completely master it and have merely gained an initial mastery." Lin Dong smilingly said. Although Wu Dao was the deputy hall chief of Desolate Hall and he had an extremely high status, Lin Dong did not act in an overly restrained manner in front of him.

"You little fellow..."

Wu Dao smiled and shook his head. He mused a little and said, "Currently, you are a senior direct disciple of the Desolate Hall. You should train properly from now onwards. The Great Desolate Tablet will be opened three months later. Whether you will be able to comprehend it will depend on your own fate."

"Three months later..."

Lin Dong was stunned initially. Promptly, a fiery hot expression surged out from within his eyes. He clearly understood that even though he was now a legendary figure in Desolate Hall, it was merely the case within the Desolate Hall. The Dao Sect was huge and the number of prodigies in the three other halls were as numerous as the stars. If he wanted to stand out amongst all four halls, he must successfully comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture. Otherwise, he would definitely end up being at a disadvantage when he faced those top disciples from the three other halls, who have comprehended the three other great mysterious scriptures.

However, it was also because of his fame that many disciples in the Desolate Hall were anxiously awaiting the day the Great Desolate Tablet opened. If Lin Dong was truly able to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture, his reputation would exceed that of the four senior direct disciples. In fact, he will even be able to rival the top disciples from the three other halls.

Of course, if he failed, it was likely that he would wound up attracting some nasty gossips. His earlier performances were simply too dazzling and he can even be comparable to that fellow, who possessed an extremely high position in the hearts of the Dao Sect's disciples. Hence, if he failed to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture, it would likely cause quite a number of Desolate Hall disciple to be secretly disappointed...

Compared to understanding the Great Desolate Scripture, all those previous results were hardly worth mentioning...

Lin Dong looked at Wu Dao's earnest eyes before he curled his mouth slightly. For some unknown reason, it seemed like quite a lot of expectations had been placed on his shoulders...

"I will do my best." Lin Dong softly replied.

"Soon after the Great Desolate Tablet opens will be the Hall test. The result that our Desolate Hall will achieve would likely depend on the five of you..." Wu Dao smilingly said.

"How is the strength of that big senior sister Ying Xiaoxiao from the Sky Hall like?" Lin Dong blinked and suddenly asked.

"Xiaoxiao ah... a lady with extremely great talent. Currently, she should be attempting to break through the ninth Nirvana Tribulation." Wu Dao smacked his mouth. It was likely that even he coveted Ying Xiaoxiao's talent.

"Attempting the ninth Nirvana Tribulation..." Lin Dong's heart was slightly shaken. She is indeed worthy of being the big senior sister of the Sky Hall. Her strength was likely comparable to Ling Qingzhu...

"I heard from your friend Lin Diao that you have a complicated relationship with Ling Qingzhu from Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace?" Standing in front of Lin Dong, Wu Dao suddenly said while Lin Dong was still shocked by the strength of big senior sister Ying Xiaoxiao.

“Ugh?”

Lin Dong was startled. He raised his head and looked at Wu Dao’s somewhat complicated expression. Immediately, he felt his face turn red. He let out a dry laughter but was uncertain about how he should reply. Could he really tell Wu Dao that he had once taken possession of that lady’s body? If word of this was to spread, it was likely that there would be a countless number of people charging to Dao Sect and causing trouble for him within a couple of days...

“Tsk tsk, little fellow, your eyesight is quite good. Ling Qingzhu is a renowned person amongst the younger generation in the Eastern Xuan Region. Even Xiaoxiao... that lass is overshadowed by her. There are a countless number of young geniuses from various super sects chasing after her during these years in an attempt to win the heart of the beauty. However, no one has succeeded.”

Wu Dao patted Lin Dong’s shoulders. His smile appeared a little wretched under the moonlight, “Your target is really challenging. Good luck. I have confidence in you. If you can capture Ling Qingzhu, I believe that the expressions of those from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace will be extremely interesting.”

Lin Dong smiled in an embarrassed manner. Wu Dao really thought too highly of him. The former clearly understood the gap between him and Ling Qingzhu. Even after several years of bitter training, there was still quite a big gap between him and her. However, the current gap was already one that could be seen and it was no longer as ethereal and invisible like back then.

His effort during these years was not for nought. The current

him was also no longer the same tender youth who could only look up to her.

Lin Dong inhaled a deep breath of cool air. He turned his head and his eyes looked into the distance. Moonlight shone on his face, outlining a tough figure. He had already endured through the toughest time. Currently, there was no reason to give up.

Ling Qingzhu, I really look forward to our next encounter...

# Chapter 670: Peace

---

After the conclusion of the monthly competition, the Desolate Hall turned peaceful once again. However, there were now a few more good discussion topics that appeared secretly in the discussions between the disciples. These topics naturally did not stray away from the soul-stirring fight between Lin Dong and Jiang Hao that day.

News that Lin Dong managed to successfully learn the “Desolate Demon Eye” had also circulated around rapidly. This inevitably caused repeated shock to people who heard it, while quite a few Desolate Hall disciples smacked their lips in envy of Lin Dong’s talent.

After the intense fight with Jiang Hao during the monthly competition, Lin Dong had managed to thoroughly secure his footing within the Desolate Hall. Becoming the fifth senior direct disciple caused his status within the Desolate Hall to soar. Every day when he met disciples from Desolate Hall, they would show a face of respect and bow towards him and address him as a senior brother. This was even true for disciples, who were older and more experienced than him.

Although Lin Dong felt nonchalant about this kind of special treatment, it was great news for Mo Ling and the rest of the disciples, who followed Lin Dong and joined Desolate Hall. Although it was peaceful in the Desolate Hall, disputes and division into cliques were unavoidable. As new disciples, their position was considered to be the lowest as they did not have anyone to reply on. Typically, their training facilities will also be inferior compared to those veteran disciples.

However, following Lin Dong's meteoric promotion to senior direct disciple, these new disciples had a backer to rely on. Hence, thanks to Lin Dong's reputation, those veteran disciples would no longer dare to intentionally create trouble for them. As such, from that day onwards, Mo Ling and the rest of them faced significantly less troubles.

Furthermore, unknown to Lin Dong, there were quite a few disciples that were quietly following him. Gradually, this indicated the formation of a new clique with him as their leader.

Naturally, Lin Dong did not care much about this matter and would only smile when he occasionally discovered it. He had no intention of forming a clique. However, Mo Ling and the rest of them are his friends and they all came from Great Yan Empire. Hence, if they were to run into problems, he would naturally not standby idly.

After Lin Dong's official promotion to senior direct disciple, the current him was now formally considered as a core disciple of the Desolate Hall. As such, Lin Dong could finally enjoy the life of being a disciple in the Desolate Hall...

In the subsequent month after the monthly competition, a large majority of Lin Dong's time was spent within the martial arts hall. Of course, he was not delusional enough to attempt to master the three other great martial arts. Hence, every time he entered the martial arts hall, he would sit in front of the Desolate Stone to absorb the Desolate Energy for his Desolate Arts. Other than that, he would spend the rest of his time before the "Desolate Demon

Eye” martial art tablet.

The perverted lethality of the “Desolate Demon Eye” was experienced first-hand by Lin Dong after his fight with Jiang Hao. This martial art was truly fearsome and Lin Dong only had an initial mastery over it and could barely control it. Therefore, during this one month’s time, he spent all his time shuttling in and out of the mental space within the stone tablet. Inside there, he continuously received the dreadful attack from “Huang”...

This training method was slightly masochistic. However, since Lin Dong had the Mysterious Stone Talisman, he was not afraid of the fiendish corrosive strength.

Thanks to this masochistic training, Lin Dong could sense that his control over the “Desolate Demon Eye” was become increasingly proficient after a month’s training. This fact brought joy to his heart.

Furthermore, due to the long period of time spent within the Martial Arts Hall, he had gotten rather close with the blind old man. This person, who appeared to be an eccentric blind old man, was rather cordial with Lin Dong. This was especially true after he learnt that Lin Dong had successfully learnt the “Desolate Demon Eye”. Their relationship grew even stronger and the warmth that he showed Lin Dong, was something denied to Chen Zhen and Wu Dao.

Between their interactions, Lin Dong found out the name of the blind old man, Gu Mo. At the beginning, when Lin Dong first saw him, he was eccentric and distant. However, his status gave Lin



Dong quite a shock, as he was actually an elder of the Dao Sect. His status was even higher than Chen Zhen and Wu Dao by a level.

Furthermore, what truly shocked him was that even though Elder Gu Mo failed initially when he tried to learn the “Desolate Demon Eye” and even lost his sight, thanks to his stubborn nature and determination, he was able to forcefully master it in the end. This caused Lin Dong to be secretly in awe because only the individuals who have tried to learn the “Desolate Demon Eye”, would understand how potent the corrosive power of the fiendish Qi was. Nonetheless, Elder Gu Mo actually refused to give up even after losing his sight, and forcefully managed to master it in the end...

Of course, it may be have been because he had nothing else to lose. Since he had already turned blind, there was nothing else for that fiendish Qi to corrode. Subsequently, Elder Gu Mo chose to gave up his Yuan Power cultivation and decided to focus on his Mental Energy cultivation. Once his Mental Energy was unleashed, the world that he saw was clearer than the world he previously saw with his fleshly eyes.

In Lin Dong’s opinion, the reason why Elder Gu Mo saw eye to eye with him, was likely because he had also trained in the “Desolate Demon Eye”...

And this was how Lin Dong spent one month’s time, in peace and tranquility. Within this month, Lin Dong gradually integrated himself into this foreign yet familiar Desolate Hall. After thinking for a while, Lin Dong felt like this might turn into another home for him. At the very least, even a cautious and prudent person like

him did not feel put off by this place...

His life within the Desolate Hall was unlike the Ancient Battlefield, where he had to be constantly on the tenterhooks and be ready for a life or death fight with an opponent at anytime. However, thanks to this unique peaceful environment, it caused Lin Dong's state of mind to become increasingly mild and peaceful. Meanwhile, the viciousness and antisocial behaviour that was drilled into his bones in the Ancient Battlefield was slowly being withdrawn...

.....

Huff.

A meager form sat cross-legged quietly before the black coloured stone tablet. After a long time, the black coloured eye on the surface of the stone tablet suddenly blinked once. Wave after wave of mysterious fluctuations started being emitted. In the end, most of them shot directly into the grey line present on the forehead of the figure.

The grey line gradually dissipated, before Lin Dong's eyes gradually opened. A mysterious grey flash flickered across his eyes before a smile appeared on his face.

“Looks like you have made good training progress on the “Desolate Demon Eye...”

A hoarse voice rang out from behind Lin Dong. He turned around and gave a smile toward the blind old man, who was holding onto a broom before he said: “This is all thanks to the guidance from senior uncle Gu Mo.”

If they were going by status, Lin Dong had to address Gu Mo as elder. However, due to the latter’s eccentricness, he scolded Lin Dong when he first addressed him as elder and made him change it to senior uncle. As Lin Dong was not a person to be constrained by mannerism, he felt that calling him senior uncle will help bring them closer.

“If you are not talented, any advice that I give will be of no use. You brat, you are getting more and more greedy...” replied the blind old man, while a smile appeared on his fully wrinkled face. He proceeded to say: “ You should go. Wu Dao is waiting for you outside the martial arts hall. It seems like he has a task for you.”

“Yes.”

Lin Dong was startled for a short while before he smiled and nodded his head. Without saying anything else, he bowed and saluted to Gu Mo before swaggering out.

Walking out of the martial arts hall, Lin Dong was not surprised to see Wu Dao, with his hands behind his back. During this one month, Lin Dong had rarely met up with him. Thinking about it, it seemed like there are quite a few internal matters within the sect. Being the vice head of the Desolate Hall, it was natural that Wu Dao would be much busier than someone like him, who was merely concerned with training.

“You sure know how to network. It hasn’t been a few months, yet you actually managed to win over senior brother Gu Mo. At this present moment, even I can’t disturb you during your training...” When Wu Dao saw Lin Dong walked out of the hall, he involuntarily chuckled before he chided him.

Hearing this, Lin Dong smiled. Never would he have imagined that senior uncle Gu Mo was actually so suave. He actually forced Wu Dao to wait outside the martial arts hall...

“What is going on, senior uncle Wu Dao?” asked Lin Dong while he blinked and grinned.

“Yes, this time you will have to make a trip out of the sect. There are missions that the higher-ups want you disciples to complete. You can treat it as a training trip. Since you are new, you won’t be assigned with major responsibilities. After all, there will be other hall disciples. Just learn to adapt to it,” said Wu Dao with a smile.

“Going out of the sect?”

Lin Dong gawked for a moment before nodding his head. He knew that for these super sects, there is a high possibility that they would assign missions for their disciples in order to train them. From the looks of it now, it seems like he would be taking part in one now...

“Follow me, I take you to meet your buddies who would be traveling together with you...” said Wu Dao, who shot a smile

towards Lin Dong, before proceeding to turn around and walk off.

Lin Dong looked at Wu Dao's back in doubt. The smile present on that old fellow's face was slightly odd and strange. However, he did not ponder on this issue. With a twist of his body, he quickly chased up to Wu Dao.

The two of them dashed past all the groups of mountains within the Desolate Hall before descending on a gigantic platform towards the north. After descending, Lin Dong took a quick glance around, before his facial expression turned into one of doubt.

At this moment, on the platform, a young girl at the prime of her youth, dressed in a white blouse and a green skirt was staring lazily at him. Within those bright and beautiful big eyes, were a peculiar elf-like sadism and a deeply hidden feeling of intrigue.

This young lady was precisely the one who called Lin Dong, a shameless braggart, proud and aloof when he first entered Dao Sect, Ying Huanhuan...

# Chapter 671: Heading out of the Sect

---

Sunlight shone down from the sky and turned into rays that lit up the lady's alluring and slender body on the platform. She looked extremely dazzling.

A head full of dark black hair was tied up into a simple ponytail, which hung softly on her body till her waist. Her ponytail was slightly curled, giving her the feeling of youth and liveliness that was quietly blossoming. This would definitely brighten up the mental state of the surrounding individuals who saw her.

Anyone who laid their eyes on this lovely and pure young lady would feel quite joyful. Lin Dong, however, was the only exception. When he saw Ying Huanhuan's beautiful face, he involuntarily rubbed his nose. It turns out that his travelling buddy this time around was actually her...

Only now did he finally realize why Wu Dao's smile looked so strange. It seems like that old fellow had known about it all along.

Lin Dong's eyes lingered on Ying Huanhuan for a while, before he turned away. Glancing at her side, there were two young men standing arrogantly.

The two of them were tall and thin and they looked fairly dashing. One of them was dressed in white, while the other was dressed in black. From a single glance, one could tell that they gave off an imposing aura. When they occasionally glanced at Lin Dong, one could easily identify a tinge of arrogance in their looks.

Naturally, Lin Dong did not care about this. His Desolate Hall has been ranked last for the past few years. Therefore, when disciples from the other three halls looked at them, they naturally felt a sense of superiority.

Based on the Yuan Power fluctuations emitted from their bodies, which did not lose out to Jiang Hao, Lin Dong was able to deduce that they must hold a pretty respectable status in their respective halls. In fact, they may even be senior direct disciples as well. Hence, it was reasonable for them to be slightly arrogant.

An old man with a head full of white hair beamed and looked towards Wu Dao and Lin Dong, who were descending on the platform. He smiled and said, “Haha, the members from Desolate Hall have arrived...”

Wu Dao smiled and nodded his head. He bowed at the old man before introducing him to Lin Dong, “This is Elder Bai Hua.”

“So this little brat is Lin Dong from your Desolate Hall, who has recently become quite a sensation? Entering the hall for less than a month and becoming a senior direct disciple. It seems like he might have broken some records,” said the old man with a smile, while he stared at Lin Dong.

After the old man spoke, behind him, Ying Huanhuan could not help but shoot a glance at Lin Dong. She naturally knew about this incident as well. Furthermore, when she first heard about it, not only her but even her elder sister Ying Xiaoxiao was slightly startled. Evidently, both of them had never expected that Lin Dong could actually become a senior direct disciple in Desolate Hall

within such a short period of time.

“Elder, you’ve overpraised me. It was all thanks to the generosity of my senior brothers, who let me pass their tests,” replied Lin Dong with a faint smile.

When he heard Lin Dong’s modest reply, the white-haired old man was quite pleased. Stroking his beard, he nodded his head faced Wu Dao and said: “Not arrogant and not hot tempered. He is a good seed. Looks like this time your Desolate Hall got lucky.”

“That is..” said Wu Dao, while laughing without a shred of politeness. The behaviour Lin Dong displayed during this period had consistently exceeded his expectations. At this rate, if Lin Dong was given time, his future achievements would definitely be quite spectacular.

The white-haired old man laughed before turning his attention towards Lin Dong and the other three and said: “Huanhuan will be the leader for the mission. As for the specific details, she will update and brief all of you once you guys are on your way.”

When he heard the old man’s words, it caused Lin Dong to gawk for a moment. He could not resist but look doubtfully at the young lady in front of him, who was wearing a white blouse and a green skirt. She looked exactly like a naive and innocent young girl. Why did the elder choose her to be the leader?

A crack appeared at the corner of Lin Dong’s mouth. He was a person who had come out of a place like the Ancient Battlefield.



However, he had never expected that they would actually choose a silly little lass to be their leader...

Moreover, what really stunned Lin Dong was the reactions of the two males after the white-haired old man spoke. The two of them from Earth and Flood Hall did not have a shred of objection, as if they were completely agreeable with this arrangement.

“Could it be this little lass is not as simple as she seems?” murmured Lin Dong secretly.

“Yes? Do you have a problem with Elder Bai Hua’s arrangement?”

Just as Lin Dong murmured in his heart, a clear and sweet-sounding voice rang beside his ear. Raising his head, the first thing he saw was Ying Huanhuan revealing a smile so sweet it could make bones turn soft. However, within her big beautiful eyes, Lin Dong could identify a cunning fox-like nature. Immediately, he suavely waved his hand and said: “I will do whatever elder has instructed.”

Lin Dong’s swift response caused Ying Huanhuan’s crescent-shaped eyebrows to jump slightly. However, she could only swallow the words that were about to leave her mouth. Curling the corner of her mouth, she said, “I’ve led groups out of the sect for over ten times. Thus, I have much more experience than you newbies. In this world, being older does not automatically give you the right to be arrogant.”

The moment those words came out of her mouth, it caused Wu Dao and Elder Bai Hua to gawk. Promptly, they could only shake their heads helplessly. Even innocent bystanders like them were roped into this conflict. Seems like this lass's mouth is still so sharp...

Lin Dong's expression did not change. Although the contrast between Ying Huanhuan's age and her experience left him surprised, that was all to it. Perhaps Lin Dong cannot match up to her in terms of knowledge and experience, however, having slaughtered his way out of the cruel Ancient Battlefield, Lin Dong possessed the cautiousness and ruthlessness that these super sect disciples did not have.

However, when Ying Huanhuan saw Lin Dong's calm expression, she immediately clenched her teeth. This fellow is simply too disrespectful...

“Let's go.”

Ying Huanhuan casually shot a glance at Lin Dong. Following which, without hesitation, she extended her semi-transparent jade-like finger. It looked like a perfect piece of artwork and caused one to be unable to tear their gaze away.

Dong.

Ying Huanhuan's slender jade-like finger waved around casually in the space before her. A clear sound unexpectedly rang out, before it dissipated in the sky.

Hiss!

Not long after the dissipation of that sound, a clear cry rang out from a huge verdant mountain not far away. The sound came from a large green condor that flew over to the platform while carrying along crazy gusts.

“Let’ go, we will leave and return quickly.”

As her alluring body flashed, Ying Huanhuan mounted the green condor. Upon seeing this, the disciples from Earth and Flood Hall quickly followed behind her. Lin Dong hesitated for a moment before saluting to Wu Dao and Bai Hua and leaving.

Hua!

After the three of them boarded the green condor, Ying Huanhuan gave it a light pat. It began to flap its gigantic wings, creating crazy gusts before it took off with a lightning speed.

On the platform, Wu Dao looked at the green condor in the horizon, before turning his head around and asked: “Are they headed towards the Blood Cliff Grounds this time?”

“Yes.”

“That place is very chaotic with a mix of good people and

scumbags. Is it alright to let four youngsters go?” asked Wu Dao while frowning.

“Relax, nothing will happen to them. Our Dao Sect has a Yuan mine at that area. According to the reports, there is some strange activity occurring there. I believe that it should be some demonic beasts wreaking havoc. The four of them are all top individuals from their respective halls. Therefore, I believe that they should be able to settle this issue,” replied Bai Hua with a smile.

After hearing his reply, Wu Dao did not speak further. However, within his heart, uncertainty unknowingly started to bubble up...

.....

Above the horizon, the green condor's flapping wings create crazy gusts as it flew through the sky. The speed they were travelling at was as quick as lightning.

Lin Dong sat cross-legged on the back of the green condor. This condor was obviously not a normal creature. It was emitting energy from its body, which completely blocked the crazy gusts that it generated. Therefore, they were able to sit peacefully on its back.

Ying Huanhuan was seated at the front of the green condor. The two disciples from Earth and Flood Hall were quite familiar with her and sat slightly behind her. From their conversation, Lin Dong could sense that the two of them fancied her. This was no surprise to Lin Dong, as Ying Huanhuan is not only exceptionally talented,

but she was adorable, cute and lovely as well. Furthermore, she gave off a pure and innocence vitality that could infect anyone. In fact, even Lin Dong found it hard to resist. As such, it was not surprising that the two of them would fancy her.

Lin Dong gradually withdrew his gaze from Ying Huanhuan and the two of them. Looking towards the sea of trees that were rapid retreating, he could not help but think of Little Marten and Little Flame...

“I wonder how they are right now...”

Lin Dong pursed his lips. Little Marten and Little Flame had been gone for over a month. However, Lin Dong had yet to receive any updates from the both of them. Although he knew that they would not face any major issues due to Little Marten’s abilities, it was inevitable that he still felt a little worried in his heart.

After being accustomed and relying on their presence during numerous struggles and fights, Lin Dong was somewhat unable to adapt with their sudden separation.

“Hey.”

Just as Lin Dong was slightly absent-minded, a melodious voice rang out from the front. He raised his head while staring blankly in front for a while before the surrounding scenery retreated rapidly around him. The young lady in a white blouse and a green skirt tilted her head and stared at him. Her pitch black ponytail brushed across the nape of her neck. Coupled with her bright and beautiful

big eyes, which were akin to a lak, she looked exceptionally beautiful.

“What?”

After being slightly absent-minded due to such a soul-stirring scene, Lin Dong regained his consciousness and asked.

“You are quite antisocial. Everyone here is your senior. Your actions would cause others to assume that you are proud and aloof. Our Dao Sect disciples do not behave in this manner during missions.” replied Ying Huanhuan. The tone of her voice coupled with her young lady-like appearance was quite comical.

Lin Dong felt quite helpless. Isn't it clear you guys were deliberately ignoring me? Why am I being criticized for being proud and aloof now...

“We can be considered as comrades for this mission. Since you are a newbie, we will take good care of you. Don't be nervous and just treat it as a training exercise. Since you left with all four limbs attached to your body, I will make sure that you will return without any pieces of meat missing,” replied Ying Huanhuan with a grin.

Lin Dong rubbed his nose and could not resist but laugh. He had a slightly favourable impression of the young lady in front of him. Although she was somewhat weird and bizarre, she was definitely not a bad person.

“Haha, junior brother Lin Dong, please relax. We will handle anything that happens. Just use this trip to gain some experience,” said the two males from Earth and Flood Hall, standing beside Ying Huanhuan while laughing merrily. However, there was a sensation of pride within their laughter.

Lin Dong gave a faint smile without showing his approval or disapproval.

“I’ve heard that you have successfully learnt the “Desolate Demon Eye” of the Desolate Hall?” asked Ying Huanhuan suddenly as she stared at Lin Dong. After she asked this question, the pupils of the two males expanded for a while. Evidently, they had heard of the Desolate Demon Eye.

“I got lucky and was barely able to master it...” Lin Dong hesitated for a moment before he nodded his head and replied.

“Oh...”

Ying Huanhuan gave a slight nod, before a slight tinge fled across her beautiful pupils. She could clearly remember the shocked expression on her elder sister’s face when she heard the news.

Ying Huanhuan did a lazy stretch, exposing her soft waist which showcased her alluring curve. After casually shooting a glance at Lin Dong, she said “I really couldn’t tell that you are quite talented. I will now withdraw my initial appraisal that you are arrogant.” said Ying Huanhuan.

After hearing her words, Lin Dong instantly did not know whether to cry or to laugh. Although Ying Huanhuan had taken back her words of him being arrogant, that still meant that her appraisal of him being extremely boastful was still stuck to him.

“As for the other one, we will talk about it after you have comprehended the Great Desolation Scripture.”

As if she knew what Lin Dong was thinking of, Ying Huanhuan’s soft and gentle voice was transmitted over once again.

Looking at the charming cheeks of the young lady, Lin Dong gave a smile and replied: “If my memory serves me right, I recalled you saying that if I understood the Great Desolation Scripture, you will fulfil one of my requests, right?”

Ying Huanhuan gawked for a moment before a crimson shade appeared on her cheeks. She proceeded to bite her lip and maliciously shot a look at Lin Dong before twisting her body away.

“I am only afraid that you don’t have the ability to fulfil this criterion!”

Staring at the form of the young lady, who was slightly outraged, Lin Dong gave a faint smile. It seems like this mission would not be so boring as he had thought...



# Chapter 672: Blood Rock Grounds

---

“The place where we will be going is called the Blood Rock Grounds. It is going to be approximately a five days’ trip from Dao Sect. Since that area is located at the intersection between the borders of a few super sects, it has turned into a fairly chaotic region. Even some of the most fearsome wanted individuals frequent that place.”

The green condor flew across the azure blue sky. Ying Huanhuan, who was on it, was currently briefing Lin Dong and the rest about the mission.

“The sects’ wanted list...”

Lin Dong was slightly startled. He had also gained some knowledge about the Eastern Xuan Region during this period of time in Desolate Hall. The sects’ wanted list was issued together by some super sects. Those who appeared on this list were all powerful experts with shocking abilities.

“Back then, senior Zhou Tong was also on this list. Moreover, he was placed at the top of the list. Of course, this was issued by the Yuan Gate and it was eventually removed due to objection from our Dao Sect.”

Lin Dong was stunned. Promptly, he didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. This senior Zhou Tong really caused trouble wherever he went. After arriving at Dao Sect, many of the things that Lin Dong heard about this person were related to his

numerous great achievements.

However, from this, Lin Dong was able to deduce the quality of this so-called sects' wanted list. If one was not truly skilled, it would be really difficult to end up alive after offending some super sects.

“Therefore, it is best to avoid causing any problems when we reach the Blood Rock Grounds. Although we are disciples of Dao Sect, the prestige of a super sects is diminished in a chaotic place like the Blood Rock Grounds,” Ying Huanhuan looked at Lin Dong with her large eyes and warned.

Lin Dong curled his lips helplessly. Being lectured by this girl, who was around the same age as him, really felt a little strange.

“Our Dao Sect has a Nirvana Crystal mine there. This time around, there are some disturbances there that have interfered with the mining process. Our mission is to observe the area. It is likely some demonic beasts causing the problem. This mission is not difficult and if things go smoothly, we will be able to return in half a month's time.” Ying Huanhuan said.

Lin Dong nodded slightly. He knew a little about Nirvana Crystal mines and they were similar to Nirvana Pills. Within those crystals were pure natural Yuan Power mixed with Nirvana Qi. Furthermore, these crystal mines were an extremely important resource to the various super sects. That was because the Pill Rivers within the sect would have to be replenished with a large amount of Nirvana crystals every year. Otherwise, the Pill River would wound up being gradually exhausted.

“Haha, with senior sister Huanhuan in charge, it is likely that there will not be much problems during this mission. We’ll just treat it as coming out to take a tour. Although the Blood Rock Grounds is chaotic, the auction house there is quite developed and we can see various interesting items. At that time, we might even be able to go and take a look.” The white clothed man beside Ying Huanhuan also opened his mouth and laughed.

After chatting along the way, Lin Dong also gained some understanding of the two other men. The white clothed man was called Jiang Kun. He was a senior direct disciple in Earth Hall and he was also at seven Yuan Nirvana Stage. The black clothed man was called Yuan Ling and he was also a senior direct disciple of the Flood Hall and was as powerful as Jiang Kun.

Judging from the surface alone, amongst the four of them, the strongest one should be Ying Huanhuan. The Yuan Power fluctuation around her body was stronger than the Jiang Kun duo. It was likely that she had reached the peak of seven Yuan Nirvana Stage. Moreover, for some unknown reason, Lin Dong was unable to sense any extraordinary fluctuation around her. One could tell that the young lady in front of him was definitely not as simple as she appeared on the surface.

Lin Dong smiled and his heart also relaxed a little. In any case, he had yet to come out after having reached the Eastern Xuan Region. This time around, he could take it as a chance to explore the outside world.

.....

The Blood Rock Grounds was quite a great distance from the Dao Sect. Even though the green condor flew at a rapid rate, the journey still took around five days.

Lin Dong, who was seated on the green condor, suddenly sensed something when the morning of the sixth day arrived. He raised his head and looked into the distance. He could see that the originally lush green forest a great distance in front, had suddenly come to a halt. A somewhat bright red colour spread apart from the area that he could see. That colour was just like the earth was being invaded by fresh blood. A faint yet fearsome evil scent arose from the land...

When approaching this region, Lin Dong could sense that the aura around the place had become much messier. These auras mostly contained a degree of ferocity. Some were hidden in the darkness, while others were ferociously sweeping their dark and cold eyes over the green condor that was flying across the sky.

This is an unfriendly place.

Lin Dong knitted his brows slightly when this thought appeared within his heart. It seemed like it was just as Ying Huanhuan had said, this was quite a chaotic area.

“We have arrived at the Blood Rock Grounds...”

At the head of the condor, Ying Huanhuan stretched her lazy waist. She immediately spoke with a smile: “Let’s head to the mine

first. There are disciples of our Dao Sect situated there.”

The Jiang Kun duo would naturally not oppose her instructions. Moreover, Lin Dong was unfamiliar with the area since it was his first time here. Therefore, most of the decisions were made by Ying Huanhuan...

Seated on the green condor, Ying Huanhuan waved her hand gently before the green condor immediately flapped its large wings changed its direction and upped its speed.

This leg of the trip merely lasted for half an hour. After which, Lin Dong saw a bright red mountain appearing in his sight. In fact, it was even possible to see some buildings and well spaced human figures within that mountain range.

Ying Huanhuan appeared to be quite familiar with this place. Her eyes merely drifted downwards before she directed the green condor to reduce its speed and finally encircled above a mountaintop before slowly descending.

Their landing spot was coincidentally a stone square. Soon after the green condor landed, some rushing wind sound were emitted from a short distance away. After which, over a dozen figures rushed over. From the badge in front of their chest, they were all clearly disciples of the Dao Sect.

The originally cautious expression on their faces quickly disappeared upon seeing Ying Huanhuan. Taking its place, was a respectful expression instead.

“Huanhuan.”

In front of them was a lady, who had a somewhat small and delicate figure. Although she was not as beautiful as Ying Huanhuan, she possessed a gentle demeanor. Her face contained some joy when she saw Ying Huanhuan. Her mannerism clearly indicated that she was somewhat familiar with the latter.

“Hehe, elder sister Fang.”

Ying Huanhuan also grinned and stepped forward when she saw that lady.

“Elder sister Fang, with regards to the disciples who are following me for this mission, all of you should be familiar with Jiang Kun and Yuan Ling. The last guy is a new disciple from Desolate Hall, Lin Dong...” Ying Huanhuan chatted a little with the one called elder sister Fang, before pointing her delicate finger towards Lin Dong.

“A new disciple from Desolate Hall?” That elder sister Fang was clearly startled upon hearing this. Her eyes looked over Lin Dong and spoke uncertainly, “Five Yuan Nirvana Stage?”

The Blood Rock Grounds is quite a chaotic place. As such, the Dao Sect would typically dispatch powerful disciples to this area and it was very rare to see someone like Lin Dong.

Of course, she was not the only one who felt this way. Even the other Dao Sect's disciples following her were staring at Lin Dong with surprise in their eyes. Clearly, they did not understand why such a weak new disciple would be dispatched here this time around...

“You should not underestimate this fellow. He has only joined the Desolate Hall for less than a month, but he has already become a senior direct disciple of Desolate Hall. Even Jiang Hao is unable to do anything to him.” Ying Huanhuan was also clearly aware of the thoughts in the hearts of elder sister Fang. She immediately spoke softly behind the latter's ear.

“Oh?”

The expression of this lady changed a little. Being promoted to senior direct disciple within less than a month? This speed was truly a little frightening. It seems like Lin Dong should be quite capable...

“This is senior Yuan Fang and she is also a senior direct disciple of Sky Hall. These mines are all managed by her.” Ying Huanhuan smiled at Lin Dong and introduced.

“Greetings to senior Yuan Fang.” Lin Dong cupped his hands together towards that lady. Although he did not need to address her as a senior given his status as a senior direct disciple of the Desolate Hall, Lin Dong clearly did not feel that this would cause him to lose face.

“Junior brother Lin Dong is too courteous.”

Lin Dong’s manner of address also caused that lady’s expression to soften. Clearly, Lin Dong’s respectful greeting caused her to experience some favourable feelings towards him.

“Elder sister Fang, bring us to take a look at the problem that has appeared this time around. If it is those irritating demonic beasts again, don’t blame this little grandaunt for being ruthless.” Ying Huanhuan grabbed violently with her hand. Her action, along with her lovely appearance, caused everyone to laugh involuntarily.

Yuan Fang also laughed. She dotingly patted Ying Huanhuan’s little head. Immediately, her eyes became a little grave as she said, “The problem this time around is a little strange. I shall bring all of you to go and take a look first...”

Yuan Fang directly turned around and rushed out as she spoke. Ying Huanhuan, Lin Dong and the rest also followed her immediately.

After Lin Dong’s group disappeared, a pair of eyes containing a dark chilling glint, gradually disappeared within the darkness at the top of a distant mountain...



## Chapter 673: Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree

---

“Our mineral vein is the largest one within the Blood Rock Grounds, and there are about a hundred disciples stationed here. Of course, such a number isn’t large for a place like the Blood Rock Grounds. Fortunately, given our Dao Sect’s reputation, there are seldom any individuals or factions that would dare to target us.”

Over a dozen figures flew over the bright red mineral veins. At their front, Yuan Fang introduced these mines, which were owned by their Dao Sect, to Lin Dong’s group along the way.

Lin Dong’s eyes continuously scanned his surroundings while he was in the air. The security of this place could be considered quite tight. Occasionally, individuals would flash past in the air as they vigilantly surveyed the activity around the veins.

The size of this Nirvana Crystal mine far exceeded Lin Dong’s expectations. Back then, he had once discovered a Yang Yuan Stone mine at Qingyang Town. However, that place could hardly hold a candle when compared with this place.

Under Yuan Fang’s lead, the entire group gradually entered the deeper parts of the mine. Compared to the outside, the colour here was growing increasingly crimson red. The entire land appeared to be about to ignite, giving it an extremely mysterious appearance.

Yuan Fang’s body rushed out before suddenly landing on a protruding rock peak. She looked towards the front, while Ying Huanhuan, Lin Dong and the rest also swiftly descended and gazed

into the distance.

In front of the stone peak, was a bright red forest. Large trees towered within the forest, and as wind blew on the fiery red leaves, they immediately rustled and danced, appearing just like a sea of fire.

Lin Dong's eyes swept over that bright red forest, and his eyes quickly focused slightly. With his Mental Energy, he could sense dozens of auras within the forest. These auras were filled with violence and ferociousness. Moreover, all of them were extremely powerful. It was likely that they would not lose to a five Yuan Nirvana stage expert...

“Demonic Beasts?” Lin Dong glanced at Fang Yuan and asked.

“Fire Crystal Demon Ape, a Demonic Beast found in the Blood Rock Grounds. They are extremely troublesome to deal with and always appear in groups. Moreover, each and every one of them is extremely powerful. There are at least forty of them inside. If we engaged them in battle, even if we manage to chase them away in the end, it is likely that the disciples here will suffer serious injuries and even die.” Yuan Fang spoke in a solemn voice.

“So many Fire Crystal Demon Apes?” Beside her, Jiang Kun and Yuan Ling were startled. Although they were experts who had advanced to the seven Yuan Nirvana stage, such a number would be rather troublesome to deal with.

“Elder sister Fang, no Fire Crystal Demon Apes have appeared

around this place in the past, no? Why have so many of them suddenly appeared now?” Ying Huanhuan frowned slightly and asked.

“I am too sure either. Moreover, these Fire Crystal Demon Apes will occasionally appear and disturb our mining operations. This has left us with no choice but to relay this information back to the main sect...” Yuan Fang shook her head and said.

“There should be something that they are interested in within this forest...”

Lin Dong suddenly spoke. He watched as eyes turned towards him as he continued, “Demonic Beasts are extremely sensitive towards natural energy, hence, they usually do not gather without reason. They definitely have some motive for gathering together...”

“We have explored this forest in the past, but we did not discover any natural treasures.” Yuan Fang knitted her brows and said.

“Just because it was not there before does not mean that it doesn’t exist now...” Lin Dong spread out his hands and said, “We will probably have to enter the forest in order to find out why they have gathered.”

Lin Dong’s eyes overlooked the fiery red forest as he spoke. For some unknown reason, he could sense that the natural energy at that place appeared to possess an extremely faint yet chaotic aura.

“Enter? Those Fire Crystal Demon Apes are not easy to deal with.” Yuan Fang said.

Jiang Kun and the rest also nodded. It would not be easy to charge past such a large number of Fire Crystal Demon Apes. Moreover, no one knew exactly what was inside the forest.

Lin Dong frowned a little. It was possible to forcefully charge in. However, it was likely that only the four of them possessed the qualifications to do so amongst this group.

“Leave it to me. Why should we clash head on with those foolish fellows?” Ying Huanhuan gently moved her feet and laughed softly while Lin Dong was in deep thought.

Lin Dong was slightly startled as he stared at her large black eyes. However, he did not say anything else. He would not underestimate her because of her age. Since she was able to become a senior direct disciple of the Sky Hall, it was likely that not even a fool would be convinced if one said that Ying Huanhuan did not possess some ability.

Ying Huanhuan’s graceful body gently flew forward. She appeared in the sky above the forest and waved her hand as a Yuan Power pillar directly shot into the forest.

Roar!

Yuan Power exploded within the forest. Immediately numerous

furious roars violently rang out. Rushing wind sounds were heard as dozens of giant fiery red apes appeared on the large trees. Fearsome auras emerged from their bodies as their bright red eyes ferociously stared at Ying Huanhuan.

Lin Dong was now able to clearly see what these Fire Crystal Demon Apes looked like. They were around a couple of dozen feet in size, and their fiery red bodies looked as if they were covered by a layer of crystal. Wild and violent energies continuously spread from within their bodies.

Ying Huanhuan's body hovered in the air. She looked down at the Fire Crystal Demon Apes, only to release a lovely laughter. She extended her long hands and gently drew it across the empty space in front of her.

Faint green energy gathered after her hand drew past in the air. At a glance, it looked like a couple of green strings.

Dong!

Ying Huanhuan's hand gently teased the zither on her hand. Immediately, a melodious zither music began to spread under her fingers.

Lin Dong's eyes focused on the zither sound that was being transmitted from Ying Huanhuan's fingers. When the zither sound entered his ears, his mind became a little blurry and his heart immediately tensed up. Promptly, he activated his Yuan Power and covered both his ears, blocking off the zither sound.

“Sound wave attack...”

A surprised expression flashed across Lin Dong’s eyes. He had clearly not expected that Ying Huanhuan would actually be able to use the zither sound as an offensive weapon. This sound wave attack would truly catch some individuals off guard.

Bang bang!

While Lin Dong was in awe, the Fire Crystal Demon Apes above the forest actually shut their ferocious eyes at this moment. After which, all of them fell down one after another, smashing into the ground and making it shake. From the looks of it, all of them had been put to sleep by Ying Huanhuan.

“Done, it’s over.”

Ying Huanhuan curled her lips slightly when she saw this. Only then did she dismiss the zither strings in front of her. She turned around and looked at a stunned Lin Dong as pride immediately swelled in her heart. This is nothing, it’s your fault for always acting so unfazed in front of me...

“Powerful.”

Lin Dong could not help but nod as he secretly upped his assessment of Ying Huanhuan. This was the first time he had seen someone able to combine Yuan Power and zither sound. It was

likely that even he would find Ying Huanhuan's attack extremely troublesome to deal with.

“Let's go, we'll enter the forest to take a look and see what has attracted those fellows...”

Ying Huanhuan waved her hand in a big sister like style. After which, she took the lead and directly rushed into the fiery red forest, while Lin Dong's group quickly followed.

The entire group directly charged into the forest. Due to the absence of the Fire Crystal Demon Apes, they were able to smoothly enter the forest region.

Clatter.

Lin Dong's figure landed on a tree branch as he frowned once again. Ever since he entered this forest, he had begun to feel disorder in the natural Yuan Power.

The source of the chaos... appeared to be somewhere to their front...

Lin Dong raised his head as he heard Ying Huanhuan exclaim in shock. His heart immediately leaped and his body rushed forward. Within a couple of flashes, he appeared beside her. At this moment, Ying Huanhuan's eyes were wide, her pretty face covered with a rich shock as she looked forward.

The area before them was a bright red land. However, the land had already been torn apart. A black tree broke through the ground. Branches covered the black tree as it flickered and emitted an icy cold steel-like luster.

It was possible to spot some seemingly naturally formed ancient symbols on that tree, while an extraordinary ripple was being quietly scattered.

Moreover, the thing that truly drew one's attention were the five bright red burning flame-like fruits hanging on the tree. These fruits were shaky, appearing as though they were about to fall.

“This is...”

Lin Dong's pupils shrunk a little. Although he did not recognise it, he could tell that it must be an extraordinary object based on the aura it gave off.

“Immortan Yuan Ancient Tree.” Ying Huanhuan gently covered her mouth with her hand. Rich shock filled her face.

“This thing... why would it appear here?” The Jiang Kun duo were also flabbergasted as they muttered.

The forest was completely silent. Everyone was drawn in by the black tree that seemed to have broken out from the ground....

Ying Huanhuan stared at the black tree with incomparable joy.



Soon after, she could not resist and tried to head over. However, just as she had taken a step forward, the expression on Lin Dong's face suddenly changed drastically. He grabbed her smooth wrist and pulled her back.

“Bang!”

The land where Lin Dong and Ying Huanhuan stood suddenly blasted apart just as the former grabbed the latter and pulled her back. A large fiery red hand had burst out from the ground. After which, a titanic fiery red figure rushed out from the ground and landed beside the black tree.

Lin Dong brought Ying Huanhuan as they landed on a large tree. His eyes looked towards flying dirt where a titanic dark red ape stood in a fearsome manner. A monstrous and fearsome evil aura swept forth like a storm.

“Fire Crystal Ape King?”

Ying Huanhuan's expression changed slightly when she saw this huge fellow, whose colour and luster was completely different from those from before.

## Chapter 674: Ape King

---

A dust storm spread within the forest. At this moment, the gazes of Lin Dong's group penetrated through the dust and focused on the enormous being a short distance in front.

The enormous figure looked similar to the previous Fire Crystal Demon Apes. However, it was even larger and the colour of its body was also deeper. Looking from a distance away, the figure appeared to be wearing a thick fiery red crystal armour. Moreover, its savage red eyes actually had a human-like cunningness and ferocity surging within it. At a glance, one could tell that it was quite intelligent.

“A Fire Crystal Ape King huh?”

Lin Dong's eyes also hardened because of Ying Huanhuan's soft exclamation. He could sense an extremely wild and violent energy fluctuation from its body. It was likely that its strength far exceeded those ordinary Fire Crystal Demon Apes.

“It is unexpected that even a Fire Crystal Ape King has appeared... this fellow is fairly famous around the Blood Rock Grounds. However, it usually trains deep within the mountains. Unexpectedly, it has actually barged into our place this time around.” Yuan Fang's eyes were slightly cold as she looked at the enormous being with a stern aura and coldly said.

“Huanhuan, are you alright?” At this moment, Jiang Kun and Mo Ling rushed over to Lin Dong's side. After which, they looked at

Ying Huanhuan and asked.

“I’m fine.”

Ying Huanhuan glanced at Lin Dong. She hesitated a little and was just about to thank the latter for his help when she saw that Lin Dong was already waving his hand. After which, the latter’s stared at the Fire Crystal Ape King a short distance away in an unblinking manner. His attitude caused Ying Huanhuan to involuntarily grit her teeth.

“All of you get lost now. I am the one who first discovered it!”

That Fire Crystal Ape King in the forest was fanning his large hand in front of him in a violent manner. Wild wind scattered the dust. Its scarlet eyes stared at Lin Dong’s group as it cried out explosively with a mouth filled with an evil aura.

After training till this stage, the Fire Crystal Ape King clearly possessed an intellect that was not inferior to a human. If it was not because of its impure bloodline, it would have likely taken on a human form already.

“What a joke. This mineral vein belongs to our Dao Sect. Since when is it your right to claim the items within here. Fire Crystal Ape King, if you know what is good for you, you should take your minions and return to the mountains. Otherwise, once the experts from our Dao Sect hurry over, your years of bitter training would likely end up coming to naught!” Yuan Fang laughed coldly.

“Heh, there is nothing I haven’t been through all these years. Don’t use the Dao Sect name to scare me. Just you young fellows alone do not have the qualification to get me to obediently withdraw!”

“Such arrogant words!”

Fury flashed across Ying Huanhuan’s large eyes before she said: “Big fellow, you merely have the strength of a seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert. Therefore, you do not have the qualification to act so arrogantly in front of us!”

Although Demonic Beasts typically have powerful fighting strength, this Fire Crystal Ape King was merely at seven Yuan Nirvana Stage. However, from his appearance, he clearly possessed a fighting strength that was not inferior to an eight Yuan Nirvana Stage expert. Nonetheless, if they were to include Lin Dong, who possessed a fighting strength that far exceeded his appearance, their side would possess four seven Yuan Nirvana Stage experts. It was likely that the Fire Crystal Ape King would not gain much advantage if the four of them were to join forces.

“Lin Dong, we must obtain that Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree...”

Ying Huanhuan’s eyes looked towards Lin Dong after her words sounded. Her mouth moved slightly and a soft whisper was transmitted into Lin Dong’s ears.

“Is that thing very rare?” Lin Dong asked instead. He did not know much about this Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree.

“Yes. Moreover, it is extremely useful for our sect. This Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree is able to automatically absorb the natural energy and agglomerate them into fruits. Those fruits are extremely beneficial for disciples like us...”

Lin Dong’s glanced at the five bright red fruits hanging on the black tree. He could indeed sense a powerful energy from within them. However, isn’t this amount a little too insignificant for a super sect?

“The Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree that we see in front of our eyes is merely a seedling. We do not know if there are any seeds within. If there is a seed... its value would soar by a hundred times!”

“Seed?” Lin Dong’s eyes became slightly focused.

“There is an Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree in Yuan Gate. However, that ancient tree has already matured through their grooming. Currently, it is rumored to be tens of thousand of feet in size. Each time the ancient tree bears fruits, it will produce thousands of Immortal Yuan Fruits. The Immortal Yuan Tree is one the key reasons why Yuan Gate disciples are far stronger than that of the other sects...” Ying Huanhuan bit her lips with the back of her teeth. Her pretty face turned unusually grave at this moment.

Lin Dong’s heart skipped a beat. A few thousand fruits together? If that was truly the case, it would be a little too frightening.

However, in order to groom an Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree till that extent, the amount of hard work and effort required would be terrifying as well. A single person is unlikely to be capable of doing so...

“If this Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree really has a seed within, it is likely that the upper echelons would be shocked when this news is transmitted back to the sect...” Lin Dong muttered to himself. In the next instant, he appeared to have thought of something as his expression suddenly became stern.

Since this seed was so valuable, it would likely cause a commotion should news of this spread. Moreover, this Blood Rock Grounds was not a peaceful area. At that time, there would be an unknown number of people targeting this place. In fact, there might even be a few stealthy individuals who might try to secretly steal it. With such a valuable prize in sight, even the deterrence brought by Dao Sect’s name will be significantly weakened.

Based on them disciples alone, it might be very difficult to intimidate those lawless criminals in Blood Rock Grounds.

Lin Dong turned his head and coincidentally saw Ying Huanhuan staring at him. Her large black eyes were filled with a solemn expression. Originally, they thought that this was going to be an ordinary mission, instead, it turned into such a troublesome one.

Lin Dong’s lips were curled. After which, his eyelid narrowed. Using a soft voice that only a few of them could hear, he softly said, “In that case... this ape king... we must not let him escape.”

Lin Dong's voice was very soft, but the hearts of Ying Huanhuan, Jiang Kun and the rest skipped a beat. From former's words, they could hear an icy cool bone piercing killing intent that was contained within it.

All of them turned silent. They also knew that if the Fire Crystal Ape King escaped and end up spreading news regarding this Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree, it would wound up causing them a great deal of trouble. However, they were still unable to form a heartless killing intent instantly...

After all, they did not go through what Lin Dong had experienced.

"Lin Dong is right... we cannot let him escape." Yuan Fang was clearly a lot more mature compared to Ying Huanhuan and the other two. Her eyes immediately flickered before she nodded solemnly.

Ying Huanhuan also clenched her silver teeth after hearing Yuan Fang's words. She decisively said, "Jiang Kun, Yuan Ling, the both of you will attack and block him at the front. Lin Dong, you will aid them from the side. Elder sister Fang, arrange for the disciples to lock down this area!"

Although Ying Huanhuan knew that Lin Dong could match up evenly with Jiang Hao, she did not arrange for him to be at the frontline. After all, this Fire Crystal Ape King was much stronger than Jiang Hao. If he was not careful, he might end up being

seriously wounded.

Lin Dong did not say anything after hearing Ying Huanhuan's arrangement. He merely looked towards Yuan Fang and softly said, "Elder sister Fang, those Fire Crystal Demon Apes that have been put to sleep earlier... do not even let one of them off."

Fang Yuan's heart was startled as she looked at Lin Dong's young and calm face. Clearly, she did not expect that Lin Dong's mind was so cautious and ruthless despite this tender age. She involuntarily sighed quietly. It was fortunate that he was a disciple of their Dao Sect. Otherwise, it would really cause one to have difficulty sleeping and eating in peace...

"Junior Lin Dong, it is fine for you to stop the Ape King from the side. Leave the rest to us!" Jiang Kun flickered his sleeve and laughed with great boldness.

"Attack!"

A soft cry was suddenly sounded from Ying Huanhuan's mouth. At the next moment, mighty Yuan Power suddenly erupted from Jiang Kun's and Yuan Ling's body. Immediately, their bodies rushed out with a lightning-like speed. A sharp aura quickly covered the Fire Crystal Ape King a short distance away.

Just when Jiang Kun and Yuan Ling attacked, Ying Huanhuan leaped and her lovely body landed on a large tree. Immediately, she waved her hands and an emerald-like green zither appeared. After which, a wave that caused Lin Dong to be surprised slowly spread



from the zither.

## Chapter 675: Battling the Ape King

---

A young lady wearing a green blouse and white pants was seated crossed-legged on a large tree. An emerald-like zither was placed gently on her knees. Her snow white jade-like hands extended before they gently landed on the zither strings.

Ding dong.

The zither strings moved slightly and the space surrounding Ying Huanhuan appeared to be distorted. At this moment, her clear eyes were focused on the zither in front of her and she seemed to have entered an extremely focused state. An extremely shocking ripple spread from the zither in front of her.

Lin Dong was similarly a little shocked as he stared at Ying Huanhuan, who was emitting a shocking ripple from within her body. Immediately, his eyes fell onto her emerald zither. His eyes shrunk immediately.

“Soul treasure huh...”

Based on the fluctuations given off, the zither in Ying Huanhuan’s hands should be an extremely powerful soul treasure. Moreover, that fluctuation was even more powerful than his “Black Dragon Sky Roaring Seal”. It was likely that it could be considered to be at the upper tier amongst Heavenly Soul Treasures.

“It is likely that this girl has quite a significant background...”

This thought flashed within Lin Dong's heart. Such a high-grade Heavenly Soul Treasure was no ordinary object. If it was sold at an auction house, it would be worth tens of millions of Nirvana Pills. Furthermore, Most ordinary disciples were unable to fork out such a vast sum.

Lin Dong was not aware of Ying Huanhuan's background. All he knew was that her elder sister was the big senior sister in Sky Hall and was the most outstanding younger generation member. From the looks of it now, the background of these two sisters Dao Sect was definitely not a simple one.

“Boom!”

Jiang Kun and Yuan Ling rushed out while this thought lingered within Lin Dong's heart. Powerful Yuan Power erupted and directly covered the Fire Crystal Ape King.

“You wish to attack? You are seeking death!”

A ferocious killing intent flashed across the scarlet eyes of the Fire Crystal Ape King when he saw this scene. However, he did not show any signs of pulling back in the face of a combined attack by the Jiang Kun duo. Instead, he took a step forward before monstrous evil aura surged. His large hand, which was covered by fire red crystals, slammed violently towards the Jiang Kun duo while accompanied by an evil wind.

Boom!

The unusually wild and violent palm wind from the three of them directly clashed in midair in a rampant manner. A loud sound immediately appeared. After which, a shocking energy storm instantly swept apart. That wind directly forced the Jiang Kun duo back by over a dozen steps. In contrast, that Fire Crystal Ape King merely took two steps back before stabilizing his body. The powerful fighting abilities of a Demonic Beast was completely revealed at this moment.

“You actually dare to come and mess with this king with such little ability? You really don’t know your limits!” The Fire Crystal Ape King laughed out loud after forcing back Jiang Kun duo with one punch. His laughter was filled with disdain and ridicule.

However, after his loud laughter had just sounded out, a melodious zither sound suddenly appeared. After which, numerous jade green sonic waves spread rapidly and swiftly engulfed the Fire Crystal Ape King.

“What nonsense is this?”

The scarlet eyes of the Fire Crystal Ape King flashed. His punch directly smashed at the jade green sonic wave that spread apart. After which, he heard a cracking sound before the sonic waves were directly shattered by him.

“How usele...” That Fire Crystal Ape King parted his lips and laughed loudly after seeing that the sonic waves were unable to even withstand one punch. However, his cold laughter had yet to fully form, when he suddenly stiffened. This was because he discovered that those shattered sonic waves did not disappear.

Instead, they stuck to his body like maggots in a bone. Finally, they swiftly penetrated his body.

After these jade green light penetrated his body, the Fire Crystal Ape King's eyes immediately changed drastically. This was because he sensed that his body was emitting a slight numb sensation wherever the jade green light passed. Even his surging energy became a little sluggish.

“Little girl, you are seeking death!”

At this moment, the Fire Crystal Ape King finally became aware of just how powerful these sonic waves were. He immediately roared furiously. His scarlet eyes looked towards the young lady wearing a white blouse and green pants before his large foot stomped on the ground. Immediately, he transformed into a fiery red figure and rushed towards Ying Huanhuan together with a monstrous and fearsome aura.

Boom!

Ying Huanhuan's eyes paused on the zither. However, she was clearly able to sense the violent wind that had suddenly arrived. Immediately, her delicate fingers swept passed her zither strings.

Bright jade-green sonic waves rushed out from her zither in a lightning-like fashion. After which, they actually transformed into monstrous jade-green arrows that violently rained down on the Fire Crystal Ape King.

Clang clang clang!

Jade-green arrows rained down on the Fire Crystal Ape King's body. Those glowing arrows were extremely sharp. Even though the Fire Crystal Ape King had extremely powerful defences, it was still able to feel waves of piercing pain. Moreover, those glowing arrows did not disappear after they struck him. Instead, they transformed into jade green liquid that stuck on his body and continued to invade his body.

“Roar!”

That Fire Crystal Ape King clearly become furious because of Ying Huanhuan tactics. The scarlet colour within his eyes brightened. Monstrous red light suddenly swept out from within his body and it actually forcefully shattered the green liquid around his body. After which, his enormous palm directly blasted at Ying Huanhuan.

Ying Huanhuan lifted her pupils slightly. She looked at the Fire Crystal Ape King's fist, which was being violently thrown over. However, she did not look like she was going to dodge it.

An enormous black metal seal suddenly whistled out at this moment. It expanded with the wind while a dragon roar resounded over the place. A black dragon spirit whizzed out from the metal seal before its enormous dragon claws collided violently with the Fire Crystal Ape King's huge fists.

Bang!

Wild and violent wind swept apart and the surrounding large trees were all directly blasted into powder at this moment. However, the Fire Crystal Ape King's attack was successfully blocked.

“You damn brat!”

The Fire Crystal Ape King furiously stared at the enormous metal seal that was suspended in the mid-air. He could see Lin Dong lowering his head and staring at him with calm eyes.

“This lady has kindly played some zither music for you. Foolish fellow, you truly lack class.” Lin Dong teasingly said.

“Grug.”

Ying Huanhuan involuntarily laughed when she heard Lin Dong's words. This fellow was truly intending to piss off that Fire Crystal Ape King until it turned crazy...

“I will rip you into pieces!”

That Fire Crystal Ape King indeed became quite furious because of Lin Dong's words. Murderous intent surged within his scarlet eyes. However, he was just about to attack when two unusually strong wind rushed over from behind. They were the Jiang Kun duo, who had tailed behind closely.

That Fire Crystal Ape King clearly did not dare to slight the Jiang Kun duo. Moreover, he was currently being disrupted by the zither sound and his fighting strength had declined. Immediately, he could only forcefully turn around and engage with the Jiang Kun duo again.

Lin Dong looked at the unusually fierce and violent battle from high above. He waved his hand before the enormous black dragon that lingered around his body rushed forth. After which, it wrapped Ying Huanhuan within it. He could tell that the latter's zither sound seemed to possess the ability to suppress the Fire Crystal Ape King's strength. With the help of the zither sound, it would be much easier to deal with the Ape King. Hence, Ying Huanhuan's zither sound was quite important in this battle and it was necessary to protect her well.

Ying Huanhuan's eyes glanced at Lin Dong when the dragon spirit whizzed over. Immediately, the speed at which she played the zither stealthily increased. Numerous jade-green sonic waves spread apart in the midair and continuously entangled the Fire Crystal Ape King, who was fighting intensely with the Jiang Kun duo.

While the Jiang Kun duo was engaging in an intense battle with the Ape King, Yuan Fang also lead some disciples and swiftly withdrew. After which, those Fire Crystal Demon Apes that Ying Huanhuan had put to sleep earlier, were all finished off one after another.

Boom boom!



A fierce and violent battle erupted crazily within the deep parts of the forest. However, with the flow of time, that Fire Crystal Demon Ape began to show signs of tiring. This was due to the corrosive effect of Ying Huanhuan's zither sonic waves. Otherwise, just the Jiang Kun duo alone, would likely find it very difficult to fight with the Fire Crystal Ape King.

“That big fellow is going to tire out soon...”

Ying Huanhuan's eyes were focused on the battleground. A joyful expression also flashed across her eyes, while her movements involuntarily became a little slower.

“Do not slow down the zither music!”

Lin Dong was the closest to Ying Huanhuan. He was also the first to discover the zither music slowing down. His expression immediately changed as he cried out in a deep voice.

Ying Huanhuan was a little startled upon hearing Lin Dong's voice. She was just about to immediately increase her speed when the Fire Crystal Ape King below roared towards the sky. His loud roar blocked some of the zither music, which had slowed down.

Bang!

The Fire Crystal Ape King's aura suddenly soared when the zither music was blocked. A punch forcefully pushed back the Jiang Kun duo. Immediately, he stomped on the ground and directly fled

towards the sky.

“Be careful, he is intending to flee!”

Ying Huanhuan’s expression changed as she hurriedly cried out. Promptly, she tried to play her zither in order to stop the Fire Crystal Ape King.

Roar roar!

However, that Fire Crystal Ape King had wised up this time around. Numerous deafening roars that contained powerful energy wildly spread apart and blocked Ying Huanhuan’s zither music.

“Damnit!”

Ying Huanhuan immediately clenched her teeth when she saw this. A cold glint flashed across her clear eyes. However, just when she was about to use some technique, Lin Dong, who had observed all of these while standing on the metal seal, suddenly rushed out explosively.

Swoosh!

Lin Dong’s speed was extremely quick. Within a flash, he had already appeared in front of the Fire Crystal Ape King.

“A five Yuan Nirvana Stage trash also dares to block this king?

You really are seeking death!” The Fire Crystal Ape King immediately laughed furiously when he saw Lin Dong appearing in front of him. His enormous fist carried a monstrous wind as he smashed violently towards Lin Dong.

“Lin Dong, be careful!”

Ying Huanhuan and the rest below were immediately startled when they saw this scene. They clearly understood just how wild and violent the Fire Crystal Ape King’s attack was.

“Bang!”

The enormous fist was swiftly magnified within Lin Dong’s eyes. His expression was still like an old well without ripples. A grey line was formed between his eyebrows in a lightning-like fashion. After which, it swiftly spread apart. The monstrous, evil and fearsome grey eye once again appeared.

“Desolate Demon Eye?”

Ying Huanhuan and the rest also saw the demonic eye between Lin Dong’s eyebrows. After which, their expressions suddenly turned solemn.

# Chapter 676: Kill

---

A grey demon eye appeared between Lin Dong's eyebrows as a shocking evil aura unfurled from it.

Swoosh!

Without skipping a beat, a grey light beam filled with an extremely frightening destructive force suddenly exploded from the demon eye!

The light beam distorted space itself as it shot out, causing the fearsome-looking Fire Crystal Ape King's expression to change drastically as a rich sense of danger seeped out from his heart.

Roar!

A violent roar was suddenly released from the Fire Crystal Ape King's mouth! Resplendent red light poured out from his body, swiftly gathering together to form fiery red crystals which completely wrapped around him.

When sunlight shone on these fiery red crystals, they looked as solid as diamonds and gave off a powerful and frightening defensive power.

However, that grey light beam did not slow down at all. Instead, it directly penetrated through the empty space. In the next moment, it collided heavily on that fire red crystal body.

Sizzle!

A slight hissing sound was continuously emitted the moment the collision occurred. After which, the pair of scarlet eyes under the crystal body suddenly shrunk, before shock gushed into its eyes. That was because it realized that on every spot on its crystal body touched by the grey light beam, numerous crack lines had swiftly formed!

Crack crack!

The rate at which the crack lines spread was extremely swift. In an instant, it had already spread over its entire crystal body.

“Break!”

The grey Qi within Lin Dong’s eyes surged before an icy bone-chilling word was softly emitted from his mouth.

Boom!

After he spoke, that fire red crystal body was completely blasted apart. Crystal fragments permeated the air. That grey light beam flashed past in a straight line. Finally, it penetrated the head of the Fire Crystal Ape King in a lightning-like manner to its bewilderment.

The grey light directly penetrated the head of the Fire Crystal Ape King. A trace of blood was left behind. Finally, the light shot into the distance and disappeared...

A bloody hole appeared on the forehead of the Fire Crystal Ape King. However, that Fire Crystal Ape King did not die immediately after suffering such a severe wound. Instead, it's expression suddenly became extremely hideous and ferocious. It's body staggered back by over a dozen over steps while the aura around its body quickly weakened.

“It is actually still alive?”

Ying Huanhuan and the others were shocked when they saw that the Fire Crystal Ape King was still alive! This demonic beast was truly hardy!

Bang!

Lin Dong's expression was calm as he observed the Fire Crystal Ape King, whose face was covered with blood. He clenched his fist before his black metal seal whizzed over. It soared with the wind, appearing like a metal mountain as it carried a frightening strength and violently smashed onto the Fire Crystal Ape King's body.

Bang!

A loud sound appeared in the sky. The Fire Crystal Ape King's

enormous body was immediately smashed by the large metal seal until it collapsed. Finally, it slammed heavily onto the ground. That great force shook the entire land.

The land collapsed. That black metal seal was just like a mountain and it squashed the Fire Crystal Ape King. Numerous large crack lines ended up being created on the surrounding land.

In the sky, Lin Dong looked at the Fire Crystal Ape King, which was squashed by his black metal seal. A cold tinge flashed across his eyes, before both of his hands directly moved with a lightning-like speed. Finally, they transformed into two icy cold and ferocious green dragon arms.

Swoosh!

Lin Dong's body emitted a 'swoosh' sound before he appeared on the black seal. After clenching both of his fists, he violently slammed his fists on the black metal seal.

Clang clang clang!

A clear metallic sound containing an incomparably wild and violent strength sounded out from the metal seal. Standing beside him, Ying Huanhuan was a little stunned when she saw that the black mountain-like seal was actually directly smashed into the ground by Lin Dong.

“What a violent fellow.”

Jiang Kun swallowed a mouthful of saliva while his entire body turn cold. Lin Dong did not attack previously, but who would have thought that he had merely chosen not to. When he attacked, however, he was actually this vicious. After his attack, it was likely that the Fire Crystal Ape King would definitely die regardless of how great its lifeforce was.

Lin Dong gradually ceased swinging his large hands while Ying Huanhuan and the rest stared at him as if he was a monster. His body shook and the green dragon arms swiftly disappeared. After which, he looked at everyone and rubbed his numb fists as though nothing had happened before he said: "If you want to finish off a Demonic Beast, you should prevent it from having the opportunity to go all out. Otherwise, we will not be able to stop it if it wants to flee."

There was still fresh blood continuously seeping out from under the metal seal at this moment. Lin Dong stood on top of the metal seal. His youthful face, which was of the same age as the rest, caused Jiang Kun and the rest to feel a chill within their hearts. They understood that if it were them, they would definitely not have such resolution.

"That fellow should be dead right?" Yuan Ling laughed dryly and asked.

Lin Dong smiled. He waved his hand and the black metal seal flew away. Finally, it transformed into a black light and rushed into Lin Dong's palm. Following the disappearance of the metal seal, a rich bloody scent immediately spread over the place.



Ying Huanhuan sniffed this smell and her small face became a little pale. She clearly did not have the courage to walk over and take a look at the bloody mess below. She immediately waved her hand before the soil on the ground moved and filled up the enormous pit.

After burying that bloodied body, Ying Huanhuan finally hugged her emerald zither and drifted down from a tall tree. She flipped her palm and kept her zither.

“Desolate Demon Eye is very powerful indeed. You must be quite abnormal to be able to successfully learn it.” Ying Huanhuan glanced at Lin Dong. If it was not because Lin Dong had used the Desolate Demon Eye and seriously wounded the Fire Crystal Ape King, his subsequent vicious attacks would definitely not be of no use.

Jiang Kun and Yuan Ling by the side also glance at Lin Dong with some fear in their eyes. In fact, their eyes no longer possessed even a trace of pride from before. Upon witnessing Lin Dong’s true strength and his vicious methods, they no longer dared to treat him like a newbie.

Lin Dong smiled. Desolate Demon Eye would greatly erode one’s eyes each time it was used. By paying such a price, how could the strength obtained be weak? Of course, this erosion clearly did not pose any threat to Lin Dong, who had the Mysterious Stone Talisman guarding his body.

Swoosh swoosh!

While Lin Dong and the others were chatting, a hurried rushing wind sound was being transmitted from the forest. Promptly, they saw Yuan Fang lead over a dozen disciples and swiftly rush over. Her tensed expression relaxed a little after seeing that Lin Dong's group was well.

“Where is the Fire Crystal Ape King?” Yuan Fang landed on the ground, swept her eyes around and asked in a stunned manner.

Jiang Kun stomped his foot on the ground. Yuan Fang's eyes looked over before seeing the land that had been dyed red by fresh blood and the large pit on the ground. Immediately, her expression changed slightly as she exclaimed, “Have you finished it off?”

“Hehe, it is all thanks to junior brother Lin Dong's Desolate Demon Eye.” Yuan Ling laughed.

“Desolate Demon Eye?”

Yuan Fang and some of the disciples beside her had a change in their expressions upon hearing these words. Being disciples of Dao Sect, they naturally heard of this mysterious martial arts within Desolate Hall. However, they had not expected that Lin Dong was actually able to successfully master it.

“If it was not because senior Jiang Kun and the rest wore down the Fire Crystal Ape King, I would not have the opportunity to

attack.” Lin Dong smiled and shook his head. He had no intention of taking all the credit.

“Elder sister Fang, what about the other demonic apes?” Ying Huanhuan looked towards Yuan Fang and inquired.

“They have all been finished off.” Yuan Fang nodded slightly. After which, her eyes were a little complicated as she looked towards the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree a short distance away. If this news were to spread, it was likely that the entire Blood Rock Grounds would erupt in an uproar. Compared to the seed of an Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree, this entire mine vein was hardly worth mentioning.

Everyone began to turn towards the black ancient tree that had broken free from the ground. Their fiery hot eyes were filled with seriousness. Originally, it was just an ordinary mission. However, it was likely going to become extremely complicated because of this.

“How can we know whether this seedling will have a seed?” Lin Dong glanced towards Ying Huanhuan and asked.

“We’ll have to wait till its fruits fall. If it really possesses a seed, the seed will naturally appear.” Ying Huanhuan whispered.

“Based on the energy fluctuations given off by the fruits, they will likely fall in less than five days.”

“Five days huh...”

Lin Dong curled his mouth and nodded slightly.

“Do we need to bring all the disciples over?” Yuan Fang asked.

“That will attract far too much attention.” Lin Dong shook his head gently. He spoke in a deep voice, “We should look relaxed but stay vigilant secretly. Try not to attract attention. All we need to do is to act normally.”

If the Blood Rock Grounds was as chaotic as Ying Huanhuan had described, a large-scale operation would only end up attracting the attention of others. Should news of the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree spread, they would likely end up in a truly dire situation.

Yuan Fang nodded. Although Lin Dong lacked the authority, his suggestions were calculated and prudent. As such, they had no reason to object to what he said.

“In that case, we will wait quietly for five days.”

Ying Huanhuan’s eyes turned towards the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree while she slowly clenched her fists. For some unknown reason, she felt like this mission would become extremely troublesome.

# Chapter 677: Activity

---

This was a fairly dark room. Within the room, a dim flame was dancing. The light from the flame was suppressed by darkness until it became extremely weak.

When one's line of sight expanded, it was possible to see a couple of black figures present within the darkness. They seemed to be seated around a circular table. Large black robes covered their bodies while an insidious aura slowly spread from within their bodies.

The atmosphere within the room was quite pressurising. It was a long while later before that seated black figure suddenly extended his sleeve. A pale hand landed on the table and gently tapped on it.

“The Fire Crystal Ape King is dead?” A hoarse voice was suddenly emitted from under the black robes.

“Yes, even those Demon Apes were completely finished off and not a single one of them was spared. It was likely done by those Dao Sect disciples. Since when did they become so vicious?” A black figure within the room moved a little before speaking in a deep voice.

“Four Dao Sect's disciples just arrived two days ago. It is likely related to them.”

“It is likely that the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree has also been discovered by them...” That black figure was quiet for a moment

before speaking in a hoarse voice.

“Chief, should we attack? Based on the strength of the Dao Sect disciples at the mineral vein, it will be very easy for us to snatch the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree.” A black figure inquired.

“If it is an ordinary faction, it is fine to attack them at any time. However, this is the Dao Sect... If we do not know whether there is a seed within the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree, there is no need for us to attack. Just a couple of Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits might be valuable, but it is not worthwhile to anger the Dao Sect because of them.” The black figure at the leader’s seat waved his pale hand and said.

“We’ll wait for a few days. If there is really a seed within the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree, it will cause quite a commotion. Quietly dispatch some people around the mines and monitor them closely!”

“If there is a seed within the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree?” A person asked softly.

“If there is a seed...”

The leading black figure’s body leant forward slightly. That black robe was lifted, revealing a pale and shady face. He parted his mouth and smiled before he spoke in a dense manner, “Then, those fellows can only blame themselves for being unlucky. Kill anyone who dares to obstruct us...”

“If I obtain the seed of the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree and hand it to Yuan Gate, all my previous sins will be forgiven. At that time, so what if the Dao Sect becomes furious? Don’t tell me that they will dare to charge up to Yuan Gate?”

The couple of black figures trembled as they looked at the bloodthirstiness that climbed onto his face. Immediately, they parted their mouths and laughed in a savage manner.

.....

The tree branches spread apart in the midair and blocked the light that scattered downwards, forming traces of light spots that shone on a couple of human figures seated below.

A ray of light shone on Lin Dong’s face before his gently-shut eyes slowly opened up. After which, he looked at the black tree in front of him. At this moment, the five bright red fruits hanging on the tree were becoming increasingly vibrant and they looked just like ripe fruits.

“Should be soon...”

Lin Dong softly muttered. A trace of Mental Energy surged out from his Niwan Palace. After which, it feedbacked any activity within this forest.

With his Mental Energy, he could sense ten powerful auras that were lurking within the forest. They were all Dao Sect Disciples.

Furthermore, there was also quite a number of Dao Sect's disciples tightly patrolling the area further away.

Sha.

Lin Dong's mental energy was swiftly withdrawn. A small pair of boots suddenly appeared on the ground in front of him. He was startled for a moment before raising his head. After which, he saw Ying Huanhuan with her hands behind her. She was staring downwards at him from an angle above. Her bright and beautiful eyes were filled with liveliness.

Jiang Kun and Yuan Ling were chatting softly a short distance away. However, their eyes would occasionally drift towards Lin Dong. Of course, most of the time, their eyes lingered on the young lady wearing a white blouse and green pants. One could easily tell that the both of them fancied her.

“Your Mental Energy is quite good.”

The young lady stared at Lin Dong under the observation of those two. Immediately she smiled. She had actually detected Lin Dong's Mental Energy probing around the place.

Lin Dong smiled in a non-committal manner while his heart felt a little surprised by Ying Huanhuan's sharp senses. His Mental Energy was usually quite well-hidden. Unless it was someone who was well-versed with Mental Energy cultivation, else, it would be extremely difficult to sense his Mental Energy probing.



“Although I mainly focus on my Yuan Power cultivation, my Mental Energy is also quite decent. Although it is not as strong as yours, I have survived one Wind Lightning Trial.” Ying Huanhuan appeared to be aware of Lin Dong’s doubts as she laughed immediately.

Lin Dong brows involuntarily twitched at this moment. Clearly, he did not expect that this young lady in front of him was actually training in both Yuan Power and Mental Energy at the same time. He immediately came to a sudden realization within his heart: “No wonder her zither sound is so mysterious. It seems like it is partly because of Mental Energy.”

“It is always good to be cautious.” Lin Dong softly said. He also understood that Ying Huanhuan was aware of what he was using his Mental Energy for.

“Originally, I thought that this is going to be an ordinary mission. I never expected it to become so troublesome.”

Ying Huanhuan sat down beside Lin Dong. Her eyes stared at the black ancient tree before she immediately laughed, “However, I am glad things turned out this way. If we are really able to obtain the Immortal Ancient Tree seed, it will be extremely beneficial for our Dao Sect. There will be countless disciples who will benefit from it in the future and our Dao Sect will also become stronger.”

Lin Dong was startled for a moment when he heard these words. There was not the slightest greed on the face of this young lady when she spoke. Despite the immense allure of the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree, the first thing that she thought of was actually their

sect.

Lin Dong curled his lips slightly and his eyes were somewhat complicated. He had clearly been through a lot more compared to Ying Huanhuan. His experiences during these years caused him to be extremely cautious. Although he currently had an extremely good impression of Dao Sect, his first thought when he realized the value of the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree was honestly not how he could help the Dao Sect to obtain it...

He might not be much older than Ying Huanhuan, but he was definitely nowhere as innocent as she was. Of course, if Lin Dong still had that mentality after all that he had been through over the years, perhaps... he would not have the chance to reach this stage.

Lin Dong's mouth was involuntarily lifted into an arc as he looked at the heartfelt joy on the young lady's face. A sect that was able to command the hearts of its members were the truly powerful ones...

“The competition between the super sects in Eastern Xuan Region is extremely intense. If the strength of our sect can be increased, our seniors would also gain additional protection when they are outside.”

Ying Huanhuan fondled her snow white smooth chin with her hand. Her dark black ponytail fell onto her shoulders. Immediately, she seemed to have thought of something and suddenly rolled her eyes at Lin Dong, “You are very talented. If you had joined Sky Hall, your future accomplishments will definitely be spectacular. Thankfully, you did quite well in Desolate Hall.

Otherwise, I will really be too lazy to bother with someone like you, who makes decisions randomly based on your own preferences.”

Lin Dong smiled. However, he did not provide too much explanation on this matter. Finally, he understood that Ying Huanhuan did not purposefully find fault with him during the Hall Selection Stage. Instead, she became furious over what she deemed to be his seemingly irresponsible decision.

Currently, it was difficult for him to place the sect as the most important thing in his heart like Ying Huanhuan. However, he understood her perspective as well.

“Rest assured. If this Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree really has a seed, we will definitely bring it back.” Lin Dong softly said.

Ying Huanhuan smiled sweetly. Her smile was extremely alluring as she curled her red lips and nodded heavily.

“Hey, what are the two of you talking about....”

Jiang Kun and Yuan Ling finally could not help themselves and decided to head over. Though they sounded nonchalant, there was a tinge of jealousy within their voices. This involuntarily caused Lin Dong to gently chuckle. He was just about to speak when his expression suddenly changed. He abruptly lifted his head before he stared at the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree. The five fruits hanging on it had begun to tremble slightly.

“The fruits are about to ripen!”

Immediately, Ying Huanhuan and the others also realized it. A tense yet joyous expression surged on their faces.

Lin Dong’s eyes focused on the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree. A shocking energy ripple was being continuously scattered from it. Even the land itself was trembling slightly.

Buzz buzz!

The five bright red fruits also began to tremble more intensely. In the next instant, they suddenly trembled violently before they actually fell from the tree.

Lin Dong waved his hand. A suction force erupted and sucked the five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits into his hand. However, he did not have the time to digest them at the moment. Everyone was completely focused on the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree.

After the fruits fell, the energy ripple that was being emitted from the tree did not show any signs of weakening. Rich green light spread from its roots. At the same time, a rich life force appeared to be emitted from within it.

A joy immediately surged within the eyes of Ying Huanhuan’s group when they saw this scene.

Buzz!

The Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree trembled. Suddenly, a green light appeared on the tree branch. The shocking life force was emitted from within this green light.

“Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed!” A wild joyous sound was directly being emitted from Jiang Kun’s mouth.

Lin Dong’s eyes were focused intently on the unusual green light. His eyes suddenly shrunk.

The Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree suddenly trembled intensely when his eyes shrunk. A thick green light suddenly spluttered from the top of the tree. Finally, it broke through the forest and shot directly towards the clouds.

Lin Dong’s expression instantly turned gloomy when he saw this scene.

# Chapter 678: Bad News

---

The green light pillar broke through the forest and entered the clouds. Like an enormous green light barrier, it descended from the sky. The commotion that it caused could clearly be seen everywhere within a fifty kilometre radius.

Lin Dong's expression turned grim when he saw this scene as he deeply breathed in. Looks like it was going to be impossible to quietly bring the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed back to the Dao Sect.

By his side, the joy on the faces of Ying Huanhuan and the others also swiftly disappeared at this moment, while panic flashed across their eyes.

“Swoosh!”

In the forest, Yuan Fang was also alarmed by this commotion. Brining a dozen disciples with her, she rushed over, only to end up sighing when she saw the expression on everyone's faces.

“Has this news been transmitted back?” Lin Dong swiftly collected himself and asked in a solemn voice.

“It should have reached them. However, regardless of how fast they are, it is likely that reinforcements can only arrive by tomorrow.” Yuan Fang laughed bitterly, pausing for a moment before continuing. “Additionally, there is an extremely bad piece of news... earlier, we discovered the traces of some people around

the mines. If I am not wrong, they are likely from the Devil Seal Mass.”

“Devil Seal Mass?” The expressions of Ying Huanhuan and the others changed when they heard these words.

“Who are they?” Lin Dong frowned and asked.

“A faction that is quite infamous within the Blood Rock Grounds. Their leader is called Yao Ling and is ranked fourth on the sects’ wanted list. He has likely reached the formidable nine Yuan Nirvana stage.” Ying Huanhuan gritted her silver teeth and replied.

“Nine Yuan Nirvana stage...” Lin Dong’s expression changed slightly at this moment. This place was indeed worthy of being the Eastern Xuan Region. Just any random criminal they encountered actually possessed such power.

“Yao Ling was once a deacon of the Yuan Gate. However, he was expelled after committing a major crime. However, he possess quite an extraordinary background. As such, the enforcement unit of Yuan Gate was lax in chasing after him. All these years, he has been living in Blood Rock Grounds and he is quite infamous.” Yuan Fang added.

“It is unexpected that we have been targeted by them...” Jiang Kun spoke with quiet anger.

“There are three cities within a fifty kilometre radius of our mines. These cities are extremely chaotic and are filled with all sorts of people. With such a huge commotion, it will definitely end up attracting the attention of many. Should news of the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed spread, then...” Yuan Fang’s face turned unusually grave as she spoke.

“Harvest the seed!” Lin Dong knitted his brows tightly and spoke in a deep voice.

“Yes.”

Ying Huanhuan nodded. She did not dare to hesitate as she swiftly stepped forward. Her hand directly penetrated into the light pillar and grabbed the brightest glowing spot within it.

After Ying Huanhuan grabbed the glowing spot and withdrew her hand, the enormous light pillar finally gradually disappeared, while Lin Dong also looked over.

At this moment, there was a round dark green seed lying quietly in Ying Huanhuan’s palm. The surface of the seed appeared to have some naturally formed symbols on it. A shocking lifeforce was continuously being emitted from within.

“Is this the seed of the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree...”

Lin Dong glanced at the black tree. After the seed was extracted, the dark green luster that had originally covered its branches also



disappeared. Meanwhile, its life force had also significantly diminished.

Its black trunk appeared to be made of metal and its branches were just like icy cold metal branches. An old, hardy and icy cold feeling spread from it.

Lin Dong stared at it. His eyes moved slightly as he extended his hand and felt it. When his hand touched the black icy cold tree branch, he suddenly felt the Yuan Power circulating within his body turn sluggish. It was as if it had been suppressed by something. His heart immediately became slightly startled.

“The Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree trunk possess the mysterious effect of suppressing various types of energy. Only by touching its roots, can one avoid this suppressing effect. However, it is too heavy. Even experts who specialize in physical strength are unable to swing it around as they please.” Ying Huanhuan appeared to be aware of what Lin Dong was thinking and explained.

“Oh?”

Lin Dong's brows twitched upon hearing this. He took a step forward as his foot stomped violently on the ground. The ground in front of him was directly cracked apart, revealing the black roots that were entangled below the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree.

Lin Dong bent his body and extended his hands, grabbing the thickest black root. A bone-chilling icy cold feeling seeped out.

“It is heavy indeed.”

Lin Dong tugged the tree roots. However, he was surprised to discover that this Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree did not budge an inch despite his formidable strength.

However, the more difficult it was, the stronger Lin Dong's interest grew. Promptly, he clenched both his hands tightly as the veins on his arms started to wiggle. One could vaguely catch sight of some green dragon scales appearing on his arms as a majestic strength quietly erupted.

Bang!

After Lin Dong unleashed his dragon-like strength, that large Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree, which was dozens of feet in height, was actually directly uprooted by Lin Dong before the stunned gazes of Ying Huanhuan's group.

Woo!

Lin Dong grabbed the root of the large tree and swung it down violently. The air in front of him immediately exploded. An invisible energy erupted from it, directly causing a wide large crack to be ripped open on the ground in front of him.

“Such a good item.”

Lin Dong involuntarily parted his mouth and smiled when he

saw how powerful this object was. With a wave of his hand, he stored the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree in his Qiankun bag in an unceremonious manner. After which, he raised his head, only to find Ying Huanhuan staring at him with a strange expression.

Even though his skin was thick, Lin Dong's face could not help but redden a little when he saw this. He coughed dryly and was just about to speak when his expression suddenly changed. Immediately, he raised his head and slowly said, "Trouble is coming..."

Lin Dong's body moved after he spoke. He rushed upwards, breaking through the forest canopy as he appeared in the sky above the forest. He gaze swept around and finally paused on a spot in the distance. Dozens of black figures were quietly hovering there. Numerous shady and cold gazes were locked onto Lin Dong's group from under those black robes.

Swoosh swoosh.

A fluctuation appeared in the forest below. Ying Huanhuan, Jiang Kun and the rest swiftly rushed out before stopping beside Lin Dong. Their eyes also looked towards the front.

"Devil Seal Mass... it is indeed those bastards!" When Yuan Fang saw the dozens of black figures, her eyes darkened as she cursed.

"There are still quite a number of people heading towards to our location... they are likely the experts and factions nearby that have been alerted..." Lin Dong's Mental Energy spread outwards.

Immediately, he exhaled a deep breath of air. He could sense some slight rushing wind sounds from the distant sky as some faint auras began to appear one after another.

There were some Dao Sect disciples occasionally rushing over in the forest below. Their numbers were not few and totalled to a hundred people. However, Lin Dong knew that if news of this Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed was to spread, just these numbers alone would not be enough to deter everyone.

“Haha, Yuan Fang, there are some things that cannot be hidden. Obediently surrender the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed. Otherwise, blood will flow like a river today!”

A person in front pulled apart his black robes, revealing a dark and cold middle-aged face. He was smiling strangely as he stared at Yuan Fang and spoke.

“Su Lei, you actually dare to target something that belongs to our Dao Sect!” Yuan Fang’s eyes were icy cold as she cried out.

“Heh, as long as we obtain the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed, our chief can naturally use it to exchange for a great reward from the Yuan Gate. What can your Dao Sect do then?” The middle-aged person called Su Lei laughed sinisterly.

“That fellow is the second in command of the Devil Seal Mass, Su Lei. People call him Lightning Blade. He is at the eight Yuan Nirvana stage.” Ying Huanhuan whispered beside Lin Dong.

“There are six core members in the Devil Seal Mass. They are all people on the sects’ wanted list. Other than Su Lei, the remaining four all have the strength of the seven Yuan Nirvana stage.”

“Their chief... he hasn’t revealed himself.” Lin Dong’s eyes swept across the group of black figures before remarking.

“Yeah. That fellow is extremely cunning. However, with the Devil Seal Mass launching such a huge operation, he is definitely hiding somewhere nearby.” Ying Huanhuan said.

Lin Dong nodded quietly. He immediately raised his head before his eyes looked towards the distant sky. Numerous black spots were flying over at a rapid pace. Moments later, they finally turned into numerous figures that appeared in the sky. Suspicious eyes looked towards Lin Dong’s group...

When he saw an increasing number of experts rushing over, Lin Dong’s heart sank even further. The situation was only deteriorating...

# Chapter 679: A Troublesome Situation

---

Swoosh swoosh!

The sound of wind splitting continuously resounded over the skies above the mines. Lin Dong's group watched as numerous figures with powerful auras walked through the skies towards them, before finally coming to a stop and hovering in the skies above the mines.

Lin Dong's watched the figures that had rushed over from the skies as his expression gradually turned solemn. He could sense a rather formidable and oppressive pressure from their bodies. Evidently, none of them were ordinary individuals.

"We are in trouble..." Yuan Fang's face also gradually turned ugly because of these newcomers. Soon after, she clenched her teeth and softly whispered.

"Do you know these people?" Lin Dong softly inquired.

Yuan Fang laughed bitterly and said, "Look at the northern area, the one in green is called Xiao Tian. People call him the Eroding Demon Hand. He is fifth on the sects' wanted list and an eight Yuan Nirvana stage expert..."

Lin Dong's looked over and sure enough, he caught sight of a person clad in green. He appeared to be around thirty years old, was rather tall and had quite a handsome face. However, an evil aura lingered around him. At this moment, both his hands were

placed behind his back, his gaze containing some suspicion as they locked onto Lin Dong's group.

“That fellow to the south is known as Luo Yi. People call him the butcher. He is ranked sixth on the sects' wanted list and is also at the eight Yuan Nirvana stage.”

Lin Dong's gaze shifted and was slightly taken aback. He saw a white clothed man that looked extremely scholarly. His face was pale and the so-called butcher nickname did not suit him at all.

However, Lin Dong would naturally not judge a book by its cover. Although the white clothed man wore a smile on his face, Lin Dong could sense a faint bloody scent from his body. One could tell that this fellow was quite a vicious character.

“There are still a few who are quite infamous around the Blood Rock Grounds...” Yuan Fang bitterly said. It seemed like it would not be an easy matter to successfully escape today.

Lin Dong sighed quietly within his heart. However, he did not panic. He had experienced far too much over the years. What kind of dangers had he not faced before? Although they were in a rather grave situation now, it was not so easy to force Lin Dong into a dead end.

While these thoughts swirled in Lin Dong's mind, he suddenly felt something cold on his palm. A round ice cold object had been pushed into his palm, causing him to be startled. He was just about to speak when a pretty young lady's face appeared in front of him.

“Lin Dong, you must bring the seed back no matter what.”

Ying Huanhuan gently bit down with her silver teeth. There was a resolve on her face that did not match her age. Clearly, she could also tell that the current situation was quite dire.

Lin Dong knitted his brows slightly but did say anything. He merely flipped his hand and stored the seed into his Qiankun bag, before he softly said, “Don’t worry. Things have not reached that stage yet. Even if the situation reaches that point, there is no need for a girl like you to bear that burden.”

“Hehe, can anyone tell me what just happened? What was the green light from before?”

Just as Lin Dong’s voice faded, the white clothed person in the distance, whom others called the butcher, Luo Yi, grinned and asked Yuan Fang’s group.

Yuan Fang’s expression changed slightly but she did not reply. Clearly, she did not wish to leak news of the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed.

“Heh heh, I’ve heard it’s an Immortal Ancient Yuan Seed...” However, Su Lei from the Devil Seal Mass laughed in a strange manner while Yuan Fang remained quiet. He was not worried that the seed would be snatched by others should news of it be leaked. Clearly, he had great confidence in the power of their group.



“You!” Yuan Fang expression changed drastically as fury surged within her eyes.

“Oh?”

An uproar broke out in the sky when his words sounded out, while greed surged in the eyes of many. A person licked his lips and laughed, “It is unexpected that there would actually be such a treasure here...”

Luo Yi was similarly startled due to the so-called Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed. Immediately, an intrigued expression surfaced on his face. He stared at Yuan Fang and said, “I have never seen an Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed before. Could Miss Yuan Fang kindly take it out and allow me to broaden my horizons?”

Yuan Fang’s expression turned cold. She was just about to speak when Lin Dong stepped out from beside her. He stared at Luo Yi but he did not say anything unnecessary. Mental Energy spread out at lightning speed, quickly scanning everyone’s faces.

“Brat, what are you doing?” Luo Yi was startled by Lin Dong’s action. Immediately, his eyes turned cold as he cried out.

Lin Dong ignored him. He waved his sleeve and his Mental Energy transformed into numerous light curtains in front of him. On the light curtains were faces drawn with Mental Energy. They belonged to Luo Yi’s and the rest.

Swoosh swoosh!

Lin Dong sleeves trembled. Numerous jade stones flew out. Promptly, he imprinted his Mental Energy with everyone's faces into those jade stones. With a wave of his hand, the hundred over jade stones flew into the hands of the Dao Sect's disciples below.

“Everyone, regardless of what happens today, as long as one person returns to Dao Sect and hands the jade stone to the Elders, I think that they will know what to do!”

Lin Dong's low and deep voice spread out in the sky and was transmitted into everyone's ears.

The expressions of the mob in the sky changed a little when they heard his words. Their eyes flickered and rapidly alternated between viciousness and hesitation.

Lin Dong's tactic was truly vicious. He had directly imprinted the faces of everyone present and used the Dao Sect's name as a deterrence. Although the people here were not ordinary individuals, the Dao Sect was one of the eight great super sects and one of the overlords of the Eastern Xuan Region. If the fury of the Dao Sect really poured down on them, it was likely that none of them had the ability to resist.

“What a ruthless fellow. However, aren't you afraid that we will be equally ruthless and butcher all of you?” The corner of Luo Yi's eyes twitched a little. He stared directly at Lin Dong before he

chuckled coldly.

“Come and try if you have the ability to do so!”

Lin Dong took a step forward, his expression immediately turning savage. A shockingly vicious aura spread out from within his body, causing quite a number these ruthless characters, who had even taken lives before, to feel fearful. Why did this Dao Sect disciple seem even more vicious than them?

Beside him, Yuan Fang, Ying Huanhuan and the rest glanced at each other. They could clearly see the hesitation on their faces. All of them secretly sighed. It seems like in order to deal with these vicious characters, they had to be even more ruthless than them.

“Heh, times are really changing. A mere five Yuan Nirvana stage brat actually dares to act so arrogantly in front of me? Could it be that the disciples taught by the Dao Sect these days all don’t know their limits?” A cruel expression flashed across Luo Yi’s pale white face at this moment. His tone had also become sinister.

A short distance away, Su Lei and the others observed this scene with a cold smile. However, they did not attack immediately.

“Everyone, all of you here are fairly famous individuals. Don’t tell me that you are actually intimidated by this brat?” Luo Yi turned his head. He looked to the many figures hovering in the sky as he sneered.

Some people frowned when they heard his words. While varying thoughts ran through their minds, Xiao Tian, that green-clothed man nicknamed Eroding Demon Hand slowly stepped forward.

The fifth on the sects' wanted list had quite a solid reputation in this place. Hence, quite a number of people turned to look when he walked forward, and even Luo Yi's eyes become a little more serious.

Yuan Fang and the rest looked at Xiao Tian with some anxiety. If the latter was to attack them at this moment, the situation would be completely disadvantageous to them.

"You are Ying Huanhuan right?" However, under the crowd's attention, Xiao Tian's gaze paused on Ying Huanhuan before he slowly opened his mouth and asked.

Ying Huanhuan gently knitted her brows. There was some doubt in her eyes. Clearly, she did not recognise him.

"Although I should interfere in today's matter given my character, I still owe your sister Ying Xiaoxiao a favour from back then..." Xiao Tian spoke faintly.

Yuan Fang's group sighed in relief when they heard his words. However, Luo Yi's and Su Lei's expressions darkened.

"The Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed might be rare, but the Dao Sect is no pushover either. I am unable to handle the weight of

such an object. If you guys are interested, go ahead and snatch it.” Xiao Tian’s indifferent gaze swept over everyone before he suddenly withdrew. His manner clearly indicated that he had no intention to interfere.

“Haha, it is unexpected that even you, Xiao Tian, would be afraid of the super sects...” Luo Yi coldly mocked.

Xiao Tian glanced at him. An icy glint flashed within his eyes but he did not respond.

“Alright, since you lack the courage, I shall do it. I want to see just what gives this arrogant brat the qualifications to utter such words in front of me!”

Luo Yi strided forward. His finger pointed towards Lin Dong. Immediately, he curled it as a derisive smile appeared on his face.

“Brat, if you are able to handle ten attacks from me, I will no longer interfere in this matter. What do you say?”

Lin Dong stared at Luo Yi. Immediately, a sinisterly cold arc slowly formed on his face.

## Chapter 680: Fighting the Butcher

---

In the sky, countless pairs of eyes congealed on Lin Dong's body, while a shady expression appeared on Luo Yi's face. Obviously, the latter had developed a rich killing intent towards him after his previous action. From his point of view, since he was at eight Yuan Nirvana stage, killing Lin Dong was going to be as simple as flipping his palm.

“If you want to steal, use your own hands. Don't waste your time doing these stupid things and stop being so wishy-washy!”

However, while the crowd stared at him, the chilliness on Lin Dong's face grew increasingly richer. He proceeded to stare at Luo Yi and chuckled.

Woah.

The moment Lin Dong's words sounded out, an uproar immediately erupted in the entire sky. Quite a few people stared at Lin Dong with a strange expression on their faces. They truly could not imagine how a brat merely at five Yuan Nirvana Stage, would actually dare to utter such words to Luo Yi, who was at eight Yuan Nirvana Stage. Did he really think that the latter would be intimidated just because he was a disciple of Dao Sect?

“Heh, the disciples of Dao Sect are truly getting more and more egotistical. Does that brat know who Luo Yi is? Does he really believe that his reputation of butcher is unwarranted?”

“Since he provoked Luo Yi, this matter would not be settled so easily.”

“Truly an arrogant and foolish brat...”

One whisper after another containing ridicule and sneer started to spread across the sky while quite a few people started to point at Lin Dong. Their expressions looked as if they enjoyed taking joy in other people's misfortune.

Behind Lin Dong, Ying Huanhuan and the rest looked at each other in dismay after hearing Lin Dong's words. However, they knew a little about Lin Dong's character and understood that the latter was not a hot-headed individual. Since he dared to utter those words, it was likely that he had confidence in himself. However...

That fellow is a vicious individual that is ranked sixth on the sects' wanted list...

“Haha...”

Amidst the uproar that filled the skies, the shady grin already present on Luo Yi's face became even more quiet, gloomy and cold. His eyes stared maliciously at Lin Dong. However, he did not fly into a rage as he chuckled instead. Nonetheless, his laughter truly caused one's hair to stand.

“Nowadays, it seems like the number of stupid blockheads who

do not fear death have increased...” Luo Yi smirked as he shot a smile at Lin Dong from the corner of his mouth and revealed a set of sparkling white teeth. However, from within his pupils, shot forth an exceptionally ruthless luster instead.

“This friend, if you are still able to say those words later, I will truly admire your courage.”

A faint voice filled with gentle laughter rang out from Luo Yi’s mouth. A gloomy and cold murderous aura that made one’s skin crawl started to quietly pervade and spread in the air.

Swoosh!

However, the moment Luo Yi spoke, a malevolent expression suddenly appeared on his face. Taking a step forward, his figure suddenly disappeared.

“Lin Dong, be careful!”

The moment Luo Yi’s figure disappeared, Ying Huanhuan, Jiang Kun and the rest realized it as well. There was a faint change in their facial expressions as they quickly warned him.

Hovering in mid air, Lin Dong had already spread out his Mental Energy. Immediately, his pupils hardened, before he took a half a left step.

Chi!



A palm filled with scarlet blood Qi carrying the sharpest palm blade flashed past Lin Dong's shoulder with a lightning-like speed. As the palm wind flashed past, it sliced off a strand of Lin Dong's hair.

“Snort!”

After his attack failed, Luo Yi's body appeared in a flash. With a cold laugh, his arm turned into weapon, while his palm turned into a blade. Facing Lin Dong, he sent a slash towards his throat.

Ping!

While Luo Yi slashed towards Lin Dong's throat, Lin Dong's palm also exploded forth. Green coloured scales rapidly covered his palm, before he viciously grabbed Luo Yi's palm.

Squeak! Squeak!

A sharp and powerful force crazily rushed towards Lin Dong's palm in an attempt to corrode it. However, when it came into contact with that layer of green coloured scales, it exploded instead and created dazzling sparks.

Lin Dong's face had also turned icy-cold. Promptly, with a thought, vigorous amounts of Desolate Energy directly flowed through his arm and erupted out of his palm. Following which, they flew rapidly towards Luo Yi's palm and started to corrode it.

Chi!

Under the corrosion from the Desolate Energy, Luo Yi's bloody palm actually showed some signs of withering.

“Desolate Force? Snort, with such little ability, you actually dare to counterattack?”

Luo Yi's vision congealed for while before he gave a cold laugh. With a thought, boundless amount of violent Yuan Power howled and erupted from his body. Following that, the blood Qi on his palm welled up crazily and actually directly scattered the Desolate Energy. With a grasp of his palm, the blood Qi immediately congealed into a serrated great blade. Grasping the blade, he chopped down viciously at Lin Dong's head with a lighting speed.

Luo Yi's move was extremely ruthless. Together with his blood Qi, it made his attack extremely powerful and imposing. It was obvious that he was experienced in combat.

Lin Dong's gaze was frosty and cold. He knew that he was naturally unable to compete with Luo Yi, who was at eighth Yuan Nirvana Stage, in terms of Yuan Power. Nonetheless, he had no intention of going all out. Flicking his ten fingers, green light rushed out and transformed into green coloured scales which clashed against that serrated great blade.

Ding Ding Dong Dong!

Sparks crazily shot out and scattered around. The power of the serrated great blade was extremely forceful and it actually directly split apart Lin Dong's green coloured scales. However, with this slight obstruction, Lin Dong was able to drift away and leave the attack radius of the serrated great blade.

A ridiculing voice floated over, "How, brat? Where did your arrogance go now?" After his attack failed, the coldness and ruthlessness on Luo Yi's face turn even more thick and dense.

Lin Dong shot a glance at him as the coldness within his eyes suddenly grew stronger and more rigorous. Currently, although the surrounding people were being very subtle, they were all lusting after the Ancient Immortal Yuan Tree seed. However, the presence of Dao Sect made them indecisive. If he was defeated by Luo Yi now, perhaps the hesitation within their hearts might subside. Furthermore, there will also be a few who would let the greed within their hearts overwhelm their rationality...

That was the scenario that Lin Dong truly did not want to see. For the past few years, he had experienced quite a few harrowing events. Therefore, he was naturally aware that the opponents in front of him were all ruthless people with blood on their hands. So long as he revealed the slightest fear, they would likely become even more cruel and vicious and they will likely rush forth and devour them till not a single bone is left.

Therefore, any sign of weakness must not be revealed. Even if the fellow in front was ranked sixth on the sect's wanted list!

“If you want to steal something from me, you will have to leave something behind!”

Abruptly halting his retreat, an ominous glint appeared within Lin Dong’s eyes. He took a deep breath before his hands rapidly weaved seal after seal with lightning speed.

Following the fluctuations of the seals, the grey line on his forehead started to pulsate once again before splitting open. The demonic eye brimming with fiendishness slowly appeared once again.

“Chi!”

After his Desolate Demon Eye opened up, a grey light beam shot explosively towards Luo Yi.

As the grey light beam shot over, Luo Yi’s malevolent face turned sluggish for a while before a rich shock filled his eyes. It was obvious that he felt a grave threat from the light beam.

“Good brat, he has some mettle after all!”

Luo Yi gave a cold laugh before raising his serrated great blade. At this moment, a low roar was transmitted out of his throat, before boundless Yuan Power bubbled up and a blade chopped down with fury.

Swoosh!

A teen feet blood Qi blade glow that reeked of blood erupted from Luo Yi's great blade, before he viciously hacked the incoming grey light beam.

At the moment of impact, wild and violent energy waves erupted outwards crazily. This caused astonishment to appear in the eyes of quite a few people. It was obvious that they had never imagined that Lin Dong, who was at five Yuan Nirvana Stage, could actually unleash such a formidable attack.

“Did he block it...”

Lin Dong looked at Luo Yi and narrowed his eyes. This was the first time that his Desolate Demon Eye attack was blocked. Seems like the gap between Luo Yi and him was quite a large one...

“This brat...such a strange attack!”

While Lin Dong was still reeling over the shock, a turmoil also appeared within Luo Yi's heart. Although he managed to destroy the strange grey light beam, at the moment, his palms were secretly numb.

“There is something strange about this brat. I must finish him off quickly.”

Luo Yi took a look at the demonic eye on Lin Dong's forehead and secretly felt uneasy. Instantly, his vision turned cold before his

body suddenly exploded forward. The savage Yuan Power of an eight Yuan Nirvana Stage expert fully erupted forth. It was obvious that he wanted to kill Lin Dong as quickly as possible.

“Lin Dong, hurry and dodge it!”

When Jiang Kun and the rest saw Luo Yi’s move, their facial expression changed before they frantically tried to warn Lin Dong. Although Lin Dong’s Desolate Demon Eye was indeed very powerful, the gap between him and Luo Yi was too great. If they were to really fight, Lin Dong would most likely suffer.

However, when Lin Dong heard their warning, he gently shook his head instead. At this juncture, if he were to show any weakness, perhaps it might overwhelm the rationality of those who were still struggling with the greed in their hearts...

“I want to see how strong an eight Yuan Nirvana Stage expert is!”

With a frosty glint in his eyes, Lin Dong’s hand seals suddenly changed. Promptly, a strange blood trial actually seeped out from the demonic eye on his forehead while grey Qi started to bubble out. Faintly, a frightening primordial roar travelled through time and descended on this land.

“Desolate Demon Eye, Spirit of the Desolate Beast!”

# Chapter 681: Spirit of the Desolate Beast

---

Roar!

An overwhelming amount of grey Qi erupted endlessly from the demonic eye on Lin Dong's forehead. Immediately, the earth shattering grey Qi congealed into something similar to clouds and blocked the sun, causing the entire sky to turn gloomy.

As the grey Qi covered the entire sky, an ancient air filled with bleakness erupted and scattered out. Faintly, a roaring cry sounded out once again.

Right now, countless experts from all directions were rushing over to this area. After arriving, when they saw several individuals standing around different mountain peaks, they did not dare to stir trouble. Instead, they could only stare in astonishment at the mysterious scene that was unfurling in the sky.

The blood line on Lin Dong continued to extend while icy Qi continuously radiated outwards. It headed towards his eyes in an attempt to corrode them. However, each time it came into contact with his eyes, it would be blocked by a gentle white glow.

Although the Desolate Demon Eye was extremely powerful, the price one had to pay to acquire such strength was not trivial. If Lin Dong did not have the protection of the Mysterious Stone Talisman, perhaps even he would not dare to unleash the "Desolate Demon Eye" till such an extent.

Although it was possible for him to use Mental Energy to sense his surroundings should he turn blind, he did not want to end up becoming like that blind old man...

As those grey clouds were spreading in the sky, the blood glow within his demonic eye suddenly congealed. Turning into a blood light beam, it shot directly into the thick clouds.

“Boom!”

Following the explosive entrance of the blood light beam, the patch of grey clouds started to wriggle immediately. Gradually, they transformed into a gigantic vortex. A portal that was seemingly connected to the ancient times opened at the centre of the vortex. Through the portal, a feeling of a desolate wasteland started to seep through.

The moment the vortex gradually grew faint, a gigantic grey shadow seemingly flirted inside...

“Full of nonsense! However, I don’t care how strange your methods are! You are merely at five Yuan Nirvana stage!”

With a cloudy and gloomy face, Luo Yi stared at the thick grey clouds looming above Lin Dong, while a frostiness flickered within his eyes. Although he had played down Lin Dong’s actions, he felt genuinely uneasy. In fact, the patch of grey clouds caused his heart to feel extremely repressed.



“I’ll butcher this strange brat!”

Murderous intent flickered within Luo Yi’s eyes. Without a shred of hesitation, he grasped the serrated great blade in his hand before boundless Yuan Power explosively erupted out. An oppressive pressure started to fill the air, causing the expressions of quite a few surrounding individuals to faintly change. Eight Yuan Nirvana stage. It seems like Luo Yi truly deserved to be ranked sixth on the sect’s wanted list.

“Brat, even if you are a disciple of Dao Sect, I will take you life today!”

A ferocious expression surged on Luo Yi’s face. In the next moment, he suddenly took a deep breath. His eyes congealed before an overwhelming amount of blood Qi started to howl behind him. Faintly, they transformed into a ten feet tall blood red shadow.

That blood red shadow was holding a serrated blood blade and it was filled with blood Qi. It seemed as if the entire land was submerged in a sea of blood.

“Blood Blade Ancestor... this is Luo Yi’s signature killing move, Great Asura Blade!”

In this area, the expressions of the experts, who were observing this fight, changed due to Luo Yi’s move. Surprised shrieks rang out one after the other. It was obvious that they knew about this fearsome attack.

“Luo Yi is actually forced to use this move just to kill a brat at five Yuan Nirvana Stage...”

“That brat is really unlucky. Luo Yi previously used this move to completely destroy five seven Yuan Nirvana Stage experts ...”

“.....”

Whispering noises spread incessantly throughout the sky. Fluctuations appeared within the eyes of Ying Huanhuan, Jiang Kun and the rest. All of them stared at the Lin Dong, who was standing below the expansive grey clouds, while a worried expression fluttered within their eyes.

“Luo Yi’s attack cannot be blocked directly...” muttered Jiang Kun in a low voice. Hearing this, a few people nearby who had the same thought nodded their heads.

Ying Huanhuan’s willowy eyebrows turned slightly limp as she proceeded to bite her lip. Extending her jade hand, an emerald zither appeared in a flash. Before leaving the sect for this mission, the elder had appointed her as their leader. If anything was to happen to Lin Dong, she truly did not know how to answer to Chen Zhen and Wu Dao...

“Great Asura Blade, Asura Slash!”

The blood Qi that blotted the skies started to ripple. A ferocious

expression appeared on Luo Yi's face as he suddenly took a step forward. With both hands gripping the blade, he slashed down in anger, akin to chopping down a mountain.

Roar!

The instant that great blade cleaved down, the blood red shade behind started to wave the gigantic blood blade in its hand. With a blood glow that filled the sky, it brought forth a three hundred over metre long wave as well a heaven-shattering roar, as it chopped down towards Lin Dong.

The surrounding Yuan Power exploded. Before that gigantic blood blade glow had even reached the ground, a rapidly growing gigantic fissure had already started to appear on the ground.

Lin Dong raised his head. The incoming gigantic blood blade glow that was growing rapidly in his eyes caused the hairs on his body to stand up. Promptly, his pupils started to harden rapidly. Instantly, his hand seals rapidly changed, causing the grey clouds above him to rapidly split apart. Finally, within the vortex, an incomparable huge shadow made its appearance.

With the appearance of that gigantic creature, it instantly blotted out the skies. As its monstrous body covered the sky, it looked just like a primordial super demonic beast. An aura of desolation and barrenness flooded the horizons.

When that mysterious gigantic beast first appeared, it immediately caused countless people to suck in a deep breath. In

fact, it even caused the Devil Seal Mass's members to have a drastic change in their expressions.

“Is that the legendary Huang beast?” Ying Huanhuan and the rest stared in shock at the colossus creature. They had some understanding of the martial arts of Desolate Hall. However, this was still the first time they had ever seen such a frightening beast from the ancient times.

The Huang beast crouched in the skies, while its gigantic eye was tightly shut. A destructive fluctuation gradually started to radiate out from it. Furthermore, under the scattering of this fluctuation, to everyone's bewilderment, they began to realize that it's tightly shut eye was slowly opening up.

“Roar Roar!”

As that gigantic eye slowly opened up, the surrounding Yuan Power crazily exploded. In the next instant, the gigantic eye was finally fully opened up. Revealing its murky black pupil, it seemed like the most frightening object in the world.

Swoosh!

A black beam of light that seemingly absorbed all the light in the universe shout out explosively from the eye. The instant it shot out, the entire world seemed to have darkened. As that beam shot forward, it directly tore a hole through space. Under the shocked gazes of countless people, it collided violently with the incoming blood red blade glow!

Ding!

At the moment of the impact, the heavens turned silent. Resplendent energy shockwaves erupted explosively like lustrous fireworks. However, within its beauty was a fluctuation akin to that of a passing death...

As the frightening fluctuation surged forth, all the surrounding mountain peaks instantaneously crumbled into dust. A few people, who were standing near the epicenter, were so heavily impacted till they spurted a mouthful of blood. As their auras became dispirited, they frantically retreated with a terrified expression.

Lin Dong was also retreating backwards explosively. Even he felt palpitations in his heart when he saw the frightening winds caused by the expanding fluctuation. Instantly, with a clench of his fist, a green fluctuation rapidly transformed into a green scaled shield in front of him.

Ding!

The violent winds viciously slammed against his green scaled shield, causing Lin Dong's organs to violently churn. He retreated explosively as his entire arm started to turn numb. If his arm wasn't strong and resilient, his entire arm would have shattered just from a single impact from the incoming fluctuation.

The frightening stormwinds filled the entire skies for a few minutes before gradually dying down. This entire stretch of the

world had been reduced into complete disarray. The forest below had also been wrecked till it turned into a flat piece of land.

As everyone gradually regained their clarity and looked at the devastation around them, all of them could not help but take a deep breath of cold air. They turned and stared once again at the youthful figure standing in the sky. However, this time around, there was no taunt or ridicule present within their eyes.

A few gazes rested on Lin Dong for a while before shifting towards Luo Yi on the other side. Right now, the latter's hair was thrown into disorder and his outfit was ripped to shreds. His aura was in turmoil and a trace of shock remained on his face. It was obvious that the previous collision had left him gasping in astonishment. After all, he simply could not imagine how Lin Dong, who was only at five Yuan Nirvana stage, could actually put up such a valiant fight...

Are all the Dao Sect disciples so powerful?

The atmosphere in the sky started to grow quiet. The greed flickering in a few people's eyes had also unexpectedly decreased.

“Is there anyone else who wants to make a move?”

While everyone was silent, Lin Dong took the opportunity to send his frosty and chilly gaze sweeping across everyone akin to a wolf in a prairie. Suppressing the turbulent Qi within his body, he refused to reveal a trace of weakness on his face. At the same time, his gloomy voice filled with malevolence resounded across the

land.

As Lin Dong's voice scattered across the sky, there was a strange moment of silence instead. Although everyone here was a ruthless individual, under Lin Dong's bone chilling gaze, even they felt a little fearful.

Right now, Luo Yi's facial expression was extremely gloomy. However, this time around, he did dare to speak up. It was obvious that he was still scarred by the vicious attack unleashed by Lin Dong previously.

Lin Dong's gaze swept ruthlessly across the sky before he gradually retreated. However, just as he was about to turn around and retreat, a cackling laughing finally rang out.

“Haha, when did the Dao Sect produce such an outstanding disciple. Although your fiendish look can easily scare others, it will not work on me, Yao Ling...”

Lin Dong suddenly stopped and slowly raised his head. Looking up, he saw a black figure quietly appearing on the peak of a mountain not far away. When Lin Dong saw him, his pupils started to contract.

Yao Ling, the chief of the Devil Seal Mass, fourth on the sect's wanted list...

“In the end, he still showed up...”

At the moment, Lin Dong's heart slowly sunk.



# Chapter 682: Retreat

---

The black-clothed figure on the mountaintop slowly appeared in front of the crowd. His black robe covered his face while an icy cold ripple faintly spread stealthily.

“Yao Ling?”

Some members of the crowd were stunned and exclaimed in shock when this person appeared. This name possessed quite a strong reputation in Blood Rock Grounds. Since he was the fourth on the sects’ wanted list, this was enough to cause many fearsome individuals to feel wary of him.

Luo Yi and Xiao Tian’s expressions also changed at this moment. Their eyes were filled with cautiousness when they looked at this black clothed figure. Although they were only ranked a little lower than Yao Ling, they understood that in a real fight, the both of them together would likely be no match against Yao Ling.

“Ha, even this fellow has appeared. It seems like the Devil Seal Mass really wants the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed at any cost...” Luo Yi’s eyes were dark and cold as he laughed softly. He glanced at the distant Lin Dong with vicious eyes. In his heart, he was secretly gloating because of the latter’s predicament. However, he also felt somewhat unhappy. After all, he still felt a little displeased to see the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed fall into the hands of Yao Ling’s group in front of his eyes.

“Chief.”

Su Lei's group had faces filled with joy because of Yao Ling's appearance. They swiftly rushed over. Following which, they looked at Lin Dong's group in a sadistic manner.

“Yao Ling...”

Ying Huanhuan, Yuan Fang, Jiang Kun and the others' expressions gradually turned ugly when Yao Ling appeared. Although they knew that Yao Ling would definitely appear, their hearts still involuntarily sunk a little when they saw him in flesh.

They were clearly well informed about this fellow, who was ranked fourth on the sects' wanted list. Nine Yuan Nirvana Stage was sufficient to oppress everyone here.

Yao Ling was once a deacon of the Yuan Gate and his status surpassed disciples like them. With his strength, one could count the number of disciples in Dao Sect who could fight evenly with him on one hand...

Moreover, this fellow was not alone. His subordinates were also a group of extremely fearsome people with notorious reputations.

“The leader of Devil Seal Mass huh...”

Lin Dong's eyes also stared intently at the figure that was completely wrapped in a black robe. His eyes were incomparably grave. From the latter's body, he could sense a rich feeling of

danger.

Lin Dong might not be afraid of Luo Yi. However, at this moment, even he felt some uneasiness bubbling within his heart.

After all, given his current strength, there was simply too large of a gap when compared with nine Yuan Nirvana Stage...

“You are called Lin Dong, right? The champion of the Hundred Empire War. Haha, how unexpected. The champion of the Hundred Empire War this time around actually chose to join Dao Sect.”

Standing on top of the mountain, Yao Ling gently raised his head before he revealed his pale and shady face. A pair of indifferent eyes were locked onto Lin Dong from under the black robes as he laughed faintly.

Lin Dong focused his eyes. Clearly, he did not expect that Yao Ling would actually be able to recognise him immediately...

“Yao Ling, this Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed is discovered by our Dao Sect first. We have already transmitted the news back. Soon, experts from our Dao Sect will arrive. This is not something that you can touch!” Yuan Fang cried out in a deep voice.

“Haha, it doesn’t matter. All I need to do is finish all of you off before the experts from Dao Sect arrive.” Yao Ling smiled slightly and spoke in a casual manner.

“You should also stop using the Dao Sect to intimidate me. Others might be afraid of your Dao Sect but I, Yao Ling, don’t give a damn...”

“You!”

Yuan Fang became furious. However, she immediately suppressed her fury forcefully and laughed coldly, “You can gloat now. However, you will definitely regret it in the future.”

Lin Dong knitted his brows tightly. Earlier, he had taken much pains to use the Desolate Demon Eye to force Luo Yi back and intimidate the rest. However, it was all for nought now that Yao Ling appeared...

“Lin Dong, await my orders and prepare to retreat.”

Ying Huanhuan’s soft voice suddenly resounded beside Lin Dong’s ear while this thought lingered his heart.

Lin Dong’s eyes shrunk upon hearing this before he nodded quietly. Currently, it was unwise for them to stay on any further. Once Yao Ling appeared, they lost any advantage they previously had. Hence, they could only choose to retreat.

However, would Yao Ling allow them to withdraw peacefully? Lin Dong’s eyes flashed while he sighed quietly in his heart.

Yao Ling extended his hand while he stood on the distant mountaintop. He slowly pulled off the black robe that covered his face. After which, he revealed his pale white middle-aged face. His eyes were deep and his gaze was so sharp that they appeared like blades, cutting painfully into one's skin.

“Friends, this Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed is something that my Yuan Gate desires. Therefore, I hope that everyone can stand by idly today. My Yuan Gate will definitely reward everyone in the future.”

Yao Ling's eyes swept over this entire place first. After which, he cupped his hands together towards these people and laughed faintly.

Yao Ling had directly mentioned Yuan Gate when he spoke. As the strongest sect in Eastern Xuan Region, the weight of his words was extraordinary. Hence, the expressions of quite a number of people changed when his voice sounded out. However, no one dared to object.

This was because both the strength of Yao Ling and the might of Yuan Gate were things that they could not afford to offend.

A smile was revealed on Yao Ling's face when he saw this silent atmosphere. Immediately he turned his head and stared at Lin Dong's group. He extended his hand and said with a smile, “Hand that thing over. All of you should be aware of my character. I have never shown mercy in the past and I will not start doing it now. If it is really necessary, I do not mind turning this place into a bloody river.”

Ying Huanhuan and the rest's eyes shrunk slightly when they heard this while their expressions were in flux. Promptly, they took two steps forward, while a desperate expression appeared to flash across their faces. However, just as Yao Ling thought that they were about to give in, a chillness suddenly surged within Ying Huanhuan's eyes. Her icy cold cry resounded over the place, "Run!"

Boom!

The moment her voice sounded, Ying Huanhuan's hand suddenly landed on her emerald-like zither. After which, her zither strings vibrated swiftly. A bright green sonic wave swept out like a great ocean wave. This sonic wave did not appear to possess a strong offensive strength. However, it caused anyone who heard it to be momentarily stunned.

It was this short instant that the Dao Sect's disciples below scattered apart at the same time. After which, they became just like a locust as they rushed off in all directions.

This event took place so suddenly. No one expected a hundred Dao Sect's disciples would scatter so decisively.

By the time some people recovered their senses, most Dao Sect's disciples had already rushed into the forest and swiftly disappeared. Their speed involuntarily caused some people to be stunned.

“Go!”

Hovering in mid-air, Ying Huanhuan, Jiang Kun and the other core disciples also took off at the same time. However, they did not scatter. This was because they clearly understood that while ordinary disciples would be able to retreat easily, they would definitely be targeted by Yao Ling’s group.

“Today, I want to see where all of you can flee to!”

Yao Ling had also completely recovered at this moment. His eyes were dark and cold as he glared at Ying Huanhuan, Lin Dong and the rest who had rushed off. A ferocious smile immediately appeared on his face.

“Follow them. The Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed is with them.” Yao Ling waved his hand and laughed coldly.

“Yes!”

Su Lei and the rest also replied with a savage smile when they heard Yao Ling’s cold laughter. After which, their bodies rushed out. They directly carried a rushing wind sound before they chased after Lin Dong’s group.

Swoosh!

Yao Ling’s body also disappeared at this moment. His body turned into a bright light that rushed outwards.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

After the people from the Devil Seal Mass gave chase, the surrounding observers also swiftly moved. Although the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed was currently being targeted by Yao Ling, they were unwilling to give up so easily...

Under the whistling of the large scale number of people that covered the sky, the sound of rushing wind appeared one after another. All the natural Yuan Power appeared to boil at this moment.

...

A couple of humans rushed over the sky of the mountain range, while they were accompanied by a hurried rushing wind sound. Their eyes would occasionally sweep over the area behind them. All of them had grave expressions on their faces.

“We will not be able to shake them off if this continues...” Yuan Fang clenched her teeth and said.

Lin Dong also nodded slightly. He could sense that Yao Ling’s aura was getting increasingly close to them.

Jiang Kun and the rest was silent, while the expression in their eyes were a little gloomy. Being chased truly felt unpleasant.



Ying Huanhuan hugged her emerald-like zither. Her eyes were lowered and a glow flashed over it. Promptly, her body suddenly paused. She clenched her silver teeth and said, “I will stop them. All of you should go.”

Jiang Kun, Yuan Fang and the rest’s expressions changed when they heard this. They were just about to object when Ying Huanhuan glared at them. Promptly, her tone became much calmer: “Do anyone of you possesses the ability to stop Yao Ling’s group?”

Jiang Kun and the rest were at a loss for words. The gap between them and Yao Ling was too large. Even if they risked their lives to stop him, it was likely difficult for them to accomplish much.

“If you think that there is still time to continue chatting, you can continue to do so.”

Ying Huanhuan turned around and sat down on a stone. Her emerald zither was placed in front of her. After which, she extended her hand and gently swept past those dark black horse tail strings. Immediately, green threads poured down. They became like a waterfall as they slowly danced in the wind.

Jiang Kun and the others involuntarily clenched their fists when they saw the alluring young lady figure.

“Let’s go.”

Lin Dong's eyes stared deeply at the figure. However, contrary to expectations, he did not speak up at all. Instead, he turned around and left. Jiang Kun and the rest's expressions changed for a moment before they finally clenched their teeth, turned around and left.

“Lin Dong, bring the seed back...”

Ying Huanhuan's hands gently pressed her zither when she sensed the group leaving swiftly. A red glow gradually surged within her clear eyes, while a soft cry was also quietly being emitted.

# Chapter 683: Formless Bodhi Sound

---

A lush green colour spread on the top of the mountain. Finally, it was extended to the edge of one's sight. Looking from a far distance away, this place looked just like a green sea.

Ying Huanhuan sat quietly on the green stone. Her originally dark black ponytail was currently pouring down like a waterfall. After which, a gentle wind blew towards her straight narrow and delicate waist. Her black hair danced emitting a faint fragrance.

The young lady's flawless hand gently strummed the emerald like zither. After which, she slowly raised her pair of bright large eyes before she looked towards the sky. A hurried rushing wind sound that was accompanied by waves of fearsome aura swiftly emerged from that area.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

The rushing wind sound swiftly tore through the quiet sea of trees. After which, numerous figures swiftly rushed over from the distant sky. Finally, they slowly came to a halt some distance from the mountain peak.

“Haha, each of these Dao Sect disciples is more arrogant than the next.”

Yao Ling slowly revealed himself. He stared at Ying Huanhuan, who was sitting on the mountain peak and involuntarily laughed. Immediately, he shook his head and said, “If you think that I, Yao

Ling, am someone who will go easy on a lady, I'm afraid that you will be very disappointed."

"Haha, this girl looks quite juicy. Why don't we snatch her and bring her back." An expert from the Devil Seal Mass laughed in a strange manner. His eyes were sweeping over Ying Huanhuan's lovely body without fear.

There were quite a number of people who were following closely behind. They also emitted a strange laughter when they saw this scene.

"Su Lei, finish her off. The others will follow me and give chase. The Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed is not with her." Yao Ling glanced at Ying Huanhuan in an indifferent manner. After which, he waved his hand and spoke faintly.

However, his voice had just sounded when the young lady in white clothes and green pants laughed in a lovely manner. Her hands flew over her zither strings. Treads of unusual red glow surged out from her large dark black bright eyes.

"You have really overestimated yourselves. If you want to cross this area, wait until you can pass through my zither formation."

The lovely laughter had just sounded out when Ying Huanhuan's pretty face slowly turned icy cold. Waves after waves of extremely powerful ripples slowly surged out from within her body. That level was fast approaching that of an eight Yuan Nirvana Stage.

“Just this level?”

However, Yao Ling merely laughed coldly when he saw this scene.

Ying Huanhuan lowered her eyes. She ignored him before her delicate hands suddenly pressed onto the zither strings. Bright red fresh blood seeped out from her palm almost instantly. It was as if her emerald-like zither had been dyed blood red at this moment.

Bloody light surged on the zither after it was dyed blood red. An unusual ripple was also quietly emitted while this blood glow flickered.

“Attack. Something is not quite right with this girl!”

Yao Ling’s eyes shrunk slightly upon seeing this. An uneasiness suddenly surged out from his heart as he immediately cried out in a stern voice.

Swoosh!

His cry had just sounded when standing behind him, Su Lei quickly rushed out like an arrow. He clenched his large hand before wild and violent Yuan Power gathered. A fist smashed violently towards Ying Huanhuan.

“Formless Bodhi Sound!”

Ying Huanhuan raised her eyes slightly while she stared calmly at the incoming Su Lei. After which, a gentle voice was slowly emitted from her mouth.

The moment her voice sounded, her long fingers also flew over the zither, which had turned blood red.

Boom!

The entire place seemed to have turned silent for an instant. After which, a bloody light beam directly rushed out with an extremely frightening speed and collided heavily with Su Lei.

Bang!

The loud sound resounded over the place. Su Lei, whose strength had reached eight Yuan Nirvana Stage, was sent flying backwards in front of many stunned gazes.

“What a peculiar zither sound!”

Su Lei stabilized his body in a miserable manner. His face was bright red and his eyes were filled with fear. When he collided with the bloody light beam earlier, he realized that in that previous attack, it felt as if his own attack had been completely reflected back.

“Formless Bodhi Sound!”

Yao Ling’s eyes gradually turned grave at this moment. He stared firmly at the young lady on the mountaintop and spoke in a deep voice, “You have actually successfully learnt the Formless Bodhi Sound, one of the four great mysterious skill within Sky Hall of Dao Sect?”

Ying Huanhuan raised her head. Her lips were curled slightly as she laughed immediately, “It is unexpected that you have such a great understanding of my Dao Sect’s martial arts. You are indeed worthy of being a deacon of the Yuan Gate.”

“Little girl, you should stop using that razor sharp tongue in front of me. The Formless Bodhi Sound is indeed powerful, but you must be out of your mind if you think that you can stop us by yourself!” Yao Ling cried out coldly.

“Attack together with me. I want to see just how she will block us!”

Yao Ling’s cry had just sounded when he took charge and rushed over. His nine Yuan Nirvana Stage aura appeared to cause even the entire mountaintop to tremble.

Ying Huanhuan looked at Yao Ling, who had finally attacked before her eyes gradually turned grave. Immediately, she inhaled a deep breath of air. The back of her teeth bit her red lips and a trace of fresh blood seeped out from the corner of her mouth.

“Formless Bodhi Sound, All Beings Form.”

A soft voice was once again emitted from Ying Huanhuan’s mouth. Monstrous blood red light swept out at this moment. Finally, it actually agglomerated into a huge bloody Ancient Bodhi Tree.

The ancient tree shook gently and its leaves rustled. A melodious sound that seemed as though the world had just been born was slowly emitted.

A unique sonic wave swiftly spread and covered the entire area. After which, it suddenly halted in front of Yao Ling’s group, which had charged forward. The space began to slowly distort in front of them and it appeared to form an invisible mirror. In fact, their own images were reflected in the mirror.

Chi chi!

The mirror shook. After which, the human figures within slowly walked out to their bewilderment and appeared in front of them.

“The Formless Bodhi Sound is indeed frightening.”

Yao Ling’s eyes shrunk when he saw at the identical human figure in front of him. Immediately, his eyes looked towards the green mountain. A blood red Bodhi tree sat in front of that young lady. The blood trace at the corner of her lips was becoming increasingly prominent.



Swoosh swoosh!

Many figures rushed out explosively in the sky. The few of them did not even utter a single word. The atmosphere was so tensed that it caused one to be unable to breathe properly. These few people were Lin Dong, Jiang Kun and the others, who had separated from Ying Huanhuan earlier.

Swoosh!

A human figure that had rushed out paused suddenly. Those few of the at the front also sensed something. They immediately halted their bodies and looked at Jiang Kun, who had lagged behind.

“Are we simply going to leave her behind like this?” Jiang Kun clenched his fist tightly. His voice had turned much more hoarse.

Yuan Ling and Yuan Fang were silent. There was a painful expression flashing across their eyes.

“What do you propose then?” Lin Dong softly asked.

“Can you still call yourself a man? You are abandoning her at that place alone at such a moment. How could she possibly defeat Yao Ling’s group? How can we account to our seniors and juniors by simply leaving like this?” Jiang Kun raised his head. His expression was savage as he roared at Lin Dong.

“Therefore, we should remain and fight together with her, end up losing our lives and even deliver the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed to Yao Ling for him to bring it back to Yuan Gate, so that Yuan Gate can become even more powerful?” Lin Dong calmly glanced at Jiang Kun, who had lost control of himself and slowly asked.

Jiang Kun was also stunned when he saw Lin Dong’s calm demeanour. Immediately, he lowered his head painfully and grabbed it firmly with his hands.

“Jiang Kun, junior Lin Dong cannot be blamed for this matter.” Yuan Fang softly said.

“Let’s go, if anything happens to Huanhuan, I will be irreconcilable enemies with Yuan Gate!” Yuan Ling grabbed Jiang Kun’s arm. His eyes were also a little red as he spoke in a deep voice.

Jiang Kun was being pulled to his feet in a numb manner by Yuan Ling. After which, he followed the latter while being at a loss.

Lin Dong watched these few dispirited people while a ripple rose within his calm eyes. He immediately sighed softly and flipped his hand. An emerald green seed appeared. After which, he threw it directly at Yuan Fang.

“Lin Dong, you...”

Yuan Fang was stunned as she stared at Lin Dong, after having received the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed from the latter.

“He is right. We are really unable to account to the rest by returning in such a manner.”

Lin Dong shrugged his shoulders. He was clearly aware of the popularity Ying Huanhuan enjoyed within Dao Sect. If news of this matter was to spread after they returned, it was likely that the gazes from the others would cause one to feel terrible, even if they could understand the situation.

“I will return to look for her. All of you should leave with the seed.”

Lin Dong did not hesitate as he turned around and left immediately. His back appeared unusually suave and free.

“Lin Dong!”

Yuan Fang looked at the skinny back of the young man and suddenly cried out. Immediately, she rubbed her eyes and said, “Bring her back.”

Lin Dong did not turn his head around as he merely waved his hands. Immediately, he raised his head and exhaled a deep breath of air. This time around, he would really have to go all out.

# Chapter 684: Rescue

---

Berserk Yuan Power crazily swept across the endless forest. At the same time, a faint melodious sound, carrying a strange rhythm circled across this stretch of sky.

Roar Roar!

Yuan Power surged forth as Yao Ling's expression darkened. A palm containing vigorous Yuan Power blasted towards the figure in front of him like lightning. The facial features of this person was completely identical to his own and it even wore the same expression. It was as if it were a copy that had been made from the same mold.

Yao Ling's fist impacted heavily on the body of his clone. Fierce Yuan Power crazily erupted in a torrent, causing the clone to violently tremble. With a final crack, it exploded into nothingness and disappeared without a trace.

After destroying his clone, his dark gaze swept the area. This area of the sky was already in complete chaos. There was a clone in front of every single person that had chased after the disciples of Dao Sect and the strength of these clones depended on the person they were modeled after. Although the clones were not able reach the same level as the original, they were not far off. Furthermore, the martial arts they could use were actually identical to the original, making them extremely difficult to deal with.

Yao Ling gazed gloomily at a green mountain peak not far in the

distance. Atop the peak, stood an ancient gigantic red Bodhi tree that was gently shaking. The culprit that created all these clones was this ancient tree.

A young lady with fine black hair quietly sat at the base of the ancient Bodhi tree. Her slender jade-like hands were current plucking the strings of the blood red zither in front of her. Right now, her expression was quite pale and the bloodstains at the corners of her mouth were strikingly obvious. Anyone could tell in a single glance that her current condition was no good at all.

“Truly worthy of being the most powerful Sky Hall martial art excluding the four great mysterious scriptures. However, how much longer can you endure at your current level?” sneered Yao Ling coldly as he stared icily at the young girl.

“It is enough that I have stalled all of you.”

Ying Huanhuan raised her head as a smile appeared on her beautiful face. The traces of blood made her smile chillingly beautiful, a beauty that touched the core of one’s soul.

The corners of Yao Ling’s eyes twitched, as murderous flashed within his eyes. He stared at Ying Huanhuan and said, “You have indeed succeeded. You actually managed to stall everyone present with just your Seven Yuan Nirvana stage strength. When news of this gets out, you can be proud of such an achievement. However, you will not have the chance to experience that moment...”

“I’ve warned you before. I, Yao Ling, am not someone who will

show mercy to a girl!”

As his words faded, an ominous glow bubbled up from within Yao Ling’s eyes. With a single movement, he turned into a ray of light and grabbed out with his hand. The hand transformed into a majestic giant palm that viciously swatted down on Ying Huanhuan.

Boom!

As the gigantic palm rumbled down, even air itself exploded. Due to the pressure from the palm, a crack emerged on the mountain.

Yao Ling did not have the slightest bit of mercy when he unleashed his attack. It was obvious that he was furious after being made a fool of by Ying Huanhuan.

Ying Huanhuan raised her head and looked towards the frightening force that was about to descend on her, which was also suppressing her till she was unable to take even a single step. The Formless Bodhi Sound is effective against groups, however, it consumed a terrifying amount of Yuan Power. After using it previously, she had already used up all the Yuan Power in her body. Currently, she could no longer muster any defence at all.

“They...should have already have reached a safe place right?”

Ying Huanhuan smiled faintly. At this moment, there was surprisingly no traces of fear on her beautiful face. She clearly

understood how crucial this Ancient Immortal Yuan Seed was to the Dao Sect...

The gigantic Yuan Power palm contained a frightening power as its reflection rapidly grew larger in Ying Huanhuan's pupils. Following the descent of the gigantic Yuan Power palm, the gigantic blood red Ancient Bodhi Tree gradually started crack before turning in a mass of lights and disappearing.

“Die!”

With a ferocious expression, Yan Ling pressed his palm down. The gigantic Yuan Power palm transformed into a gigantic shadow, that completely enveloped Ying Huanhuan's petite body.

As the shadow pressed down on her, Ying Huanhuan too a deep breath and slowly closed her eyes.

“Swish!”

However, the instant she closed her eyes, the sound of air shattering suddenly resounded across the sky. A green ray of light shot towards her at frightening speed. Arriving right before the palm landed, it grabbed the stupefied Ying Huanhuan! Green scales exploded, forming a gigantic green scale shield in front of them.

Bang!

When the gigantic palm landed on the shield, the entire

mountain peak immediately shuddered violently. Fissure after fissure rapidly appeared and it seemed as if the entire mountain peak was about to crumble.

In the skies above, Yao Ling stared at the collapsing mountain peak as his expression darkened. He firmly stared at the mountain peak. At that spot, an extremely battered green shield gradually appear within his sight as the smoke and dust started to settle.

Crack.

Cracks rapidly appeared on the surface of the green scale shield. Finally, it turned into countless balls of green light before the scale shield dissipated. After it disappeared, the two figures hiding behind it came into view.

“The hero saves the beauty? Quite a touching scene.” Yao Ling casually remarked, the corners of his mouth lifting to form a mocking smile as he gazed coldly at youth, who was slowly standing up.

Lin Dong closed and opened his hand which had turned numb from the shock earlier, before looking towards the semi-conscious Ying Huanhuan in his arms. The corners of his mouth lifted helplessly. This lass was truly a reckless one...

“Those from the Yuan Gate are really trash...” Lin Dong spoke as he lifted his head and looked towards Yao Ling in the distance.



“Brat, can you afford to be a wise ass at this juncture?” Yao Ling grinned and chuckled. His smile was extremely sinister.

Lin Dong laughed before he glanced at the crowd which had gradually surrounded them. He knew that he could not stay here for long. However, no matter what method he used, he could not obstruct Yao Ling and the rest by himself.

Chi!

A grey line surfaced on Lin Dong’s forehead at an astonishing speed, before a demonic eye appeared once again...

“Desolate Demon Eye?”

Yao Ling frowned a little when he saw the demonic eye on Lin Dong’s forehead. It was obvious that he knew about this martial art. Other the famed four great mysterious scriptures, each of the four halls of the Dao Sect all possessed their own powerful martial arts. One of them was used by Ying Huanhuan before...’Formless Bodhi Sound’ and similarly, Lin Dong was now using one...”Desolate Demon Eye”....

Swish!

A grey beam of light containing an extremely powerful destructive force erupted from the demonic eye on Lin Dong’s forehead. Seeing the grey beam shoot out, those who had previously witnessed its might, retreated frantically. Even Yao

Ling stepped back and retreated, as he did not want to be infected by that thing.

“Yao Ling, I believe that after this, there will be many from the Dao Sect who will hunt you! I hope that you will still be able to smile as cheerfully then.” mocked Lin Dong as he sent a radiant grin towards Yao Ling. However, his smile contained a chilliness that permeated the air.

Yao Ling’s gaze turned gloomy. He naturally knew that he had definitely angered the Dao Sect today. Furthermore, the current him was just an exile from the Yuan Gate. If the Dao Sect were to find trouble with him and he was not able to offer the Ancient Immortal Yuan Seed to the Yuan Gate, he would inevitably sink into deep trouble.

“Relax. After slaughtering all of you and retrieving the Ancient Immortal Yuan Seed. I will not have to deal with such troublesome matters anymore.” replied Yao Ling.

“I’m afraid you won’t have such a chance.”

Lin Dong smiled before he clenched his palm. In a flash, his Heavenly Crocodile Bone Spear appeared. With a flip of his palm, a ball of dark red liquid appeared in a flash. This was the blood essence of the ‘Heavenly Desolate God Cow’ that he bought previously from the auction in the Ancient Battlefield. He had not had the chance to use it since then, however, it looked like it was now needed.

ChiChi!

The large ball of blood essence was directly sprinkled on the Heavenly Crocodile Bone Spear. As his hand rapidly formed a series of seals, the body of the spear started to vibrate. Immediately, an overflowing torrent of red light erupted from it, before a roar from ancient times resounded through the skies once again.

The bloody light that blotted the skies started to congeal before gradually transforming into an ancient Heavenly Crocodile under the shocked gazes of Yao Ling and the rest.

“Go!”

Lin Dong shouted as his finger pointed outwards. The Ancient Heavenly Crocodile roared at the skies, before violently charging towards Yao Ling and the rest, shaking the earth with every step.

Having successfully summoned the Ancient Heavenly Crocodile, Lin Dong kept his Heavenly Crocodile Bone Spear, before placing the young lady on his back. He immediately turned around and ran away without a shred of hesitation.

He clearly understood how powerful the Heavenly Crocodile spirit was. Although it was not weak, it was obviously no match for Yao Ling and the rest. Lin Dong only wished for some time to flee.

“That bastard!”

Seeing Lin Dong disappearing into the distance, Yao Ling's eyes turned chilly as he roared, "You can't run away brat!"

"You speak too much."

Lin Dong's body did not slow down as he grinned. Soon after, he heard a weak laughter in his ear. From the corner of his eye, he saw Ying Huanhuan's small pale face. It was clear that she had regained some of her senses.

"Let's go, I'm bringing you back." Lin Dong softly said as he pursed his lips.

# Chapter 685: Grudge

---

As time passed, nightfall gradually enshrouded the endless large mountains. Following the arrival of the night, the roars of various Demonic Beasts also resounded one after another within the mountain range.

A large rock covered a crevice along the wall of a cliff deep within the mountains. The crevice was dozens of feet large and was able to accommodate around a dozen people.

Lin Dong placed the young lady on his back onto the ground before his eyes swept cautiously across the interior of the crevice. Promptly, he turned to look at the now dark sky. After which, he quickly moved the enormous rock and slowly covered the crevice.

Ying Huanhuan quietly leaned against the stone wall. Her pale and small face caused her to look much weaker. The current her was unable to speak, and all she could do was stare at the busy figure hurrying all over the place, while a complicated emotion flashed across her eyes. A moment later, she softly said, “After how I treated you in the past, I never expected you to actually risk yourself to rescue me.”

Lin Dong gradually covered the crevice. When he was done, he patted his hands before turning to look at Ying Huanhuan, frowning as he said, “Do I look like such a petty person?”

Ying Huanhuan softly chuckled. Soon after, she replied, “Even though you have rescued me, I will not withdraw my final opinion

of you for the time being.”

“A shameless braggart, right? It seems like you truly do not believe that I will be able to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture?” Lin Dong laughed.

“It is not that I have no confidence in you. Rather, the chances of successfully understanding the Great Desolation Scripture is simply too low. Back then, my elder sister quietly sat in front of the Great Desolate Tablet for months, but she still failed in the end. Other than senior Zhou Tong, not a single person from the Dao Sect has managed to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture in the last hundred years...” Ying Huanhuan shook her head as she elaborated.

“There were outstanding and talented individuals in the Dao Sect in the past hundred years, but none of them were ultimately able to understand the Great Desolation Scripture...”

Lin Dong nodded quietly. He also knew about this. If it was so easy to understand the Great Desolation Scripture, the Desolate Hall would definitely not be the weakest of the four halls.

“There is no question that the Great Desolation Scripture is extremely powerful. If you are truly able to understand it, it will indeed be extremely beneficial for our Dao Sect. At the very least, our Dao Sect will gain some insurance in the next Great Sect Competition...” Ying Huanhuan toyed with a strand of black hair as she spoke.

“Great Sect Competition... what is that?”

Lin Dong was not familiar with this term. He had heard of it being before from the Yuan Gate’s Liu Tong back atop the Hundred Empire Mountain. However, he did not know the specifics.

“Every once in awhile, the super sects in Eastern Xuan Region will hold an extremely grand Great Sect Competition. Only the disciples within a sect can participate in this great competition. From a certain point of view, it is a trial.”

Ying Huanhuan’s eyes lowered a little. Lin Dong could see that she was slowly clenching her fist as this moment.

“Each time around, our Dao Sect will end up losing some outstanding disciples because of this competition...”

Lin Dong’s pupils shrunk a little. Could it be that the Great Sect Competition had the same format as the Hundred Empire War?”

“One of the reasons is because of the perilous nature of the place where the competition is held. Another reason is because of the fights between the various super sects. Of course, our Dao Sect losses from the Great Sect Competition is mostly because of the Yuan Gate...”

“Yuan Gate?” Lin Dong frowned slightly.

“We do not have a cordial relationship with Yuan Gate and those

fellows typically behave in a domineering manner. Furthermore, there is also the senior Zhou Tong incident from back then. Hence, both factions are just like fire and water and all the disciples of the Dao Sect despise the Yuan Gate disciples. Similarly, those Yuan Gate disciples also view our Dao Sect's disciple as a thorn in their side. Typically speaking, the upper echelons from both sides will do their best to suppress this. Nonetheless, our Dao Sect is still forced to give way most of the time. After all... the Yuan Gate is stronger than our Dao Sect." Ying Huanhuan's voice carried a little chillness as it spread within the crevice. Lin Dong could vaguely hear some fury within it.

"You mean to say that the Yuan Gate disciples will purposefully attack our Dao Sect disciples during the Great Sect Competition. Moreover, they will not hesitate to use lethal force?" Lin Dong narrowed his eyes and asked.

"Mm..."

Ying Huanhuan lowered her head. Her ink black hair covered her face as she softly said, "The Great Sect Competition is basically a type of contest. Overall, the Yuan Gate disciples are stronger than our Dao Sect disciples. Therefore, our Dao Sect has suffered substantial losses every Great Sect Competition, and many seniors have been killed by the Yuan Gate disciples."

"During the last Great Sect Competition, the previous big senior sister of our Sky Hall was killed by those Yuan Gate disciples... At that time, she was trying to protect the other disciples as they retreated..."



“At that time, she had clearly admitted defeat... However, those beasts did not stop. They were doing it on purpose...”

The young lady’s voice trembled a little. Her face was buried in her knees as her small and delicate body trembled.

Lin Dong was silent. During a fight between super sects, various dirty tricks would be used. However, it was unexpected that the Yuan Gate was actually this despicable... Lin Dong gazed at the body of the frail young lady and pursed his lips. His pitch-black eyes now had an additionally chillness within them.

“If nothing unexpected occurs during this Great Sect Competition, elder sister will most likely lead the group. I know that if faced with a similar situation, she will likely fight and perish together with the Yuan Gate disciples.”

Ying Huanhuan raised her head before her jade-like hands rubbed her face. Her eyes were a little red under the weak moonlight. She stared at the young man in front of her and said, “When that time comes, I too will not hesitate.”

Lin Dong watched as a trace of determination flashed across the young lady’s eyes. He nodded quietly. Having entered the Dao Sect not long ago, he was naturally not aware of the grudge between the Dao Sect and the Yuan Gate. However... who asked him to become a disciple of the Dao Sect?”

“If you are angry, then kill a couple more Yuan Gate disciples during the upcoming Great Sect Competition...”

Lin Dong laughed softly and he did not try to dissuade her. That was because even he felt an intense hatred towards the Yuan Gate bubbling within him...

“Mm.”

Ying Huanhuan nodded her head solemnly. Immediately, she ceased crying and said with a smile, “Before we talk about that, we should first try to return to the Dao Sect alive. Yao Ling will definitely not let us off so easily.”

“That fellow should have something with him that can sense the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed’s fluctuation.” Lin Dong looked at the dark sky and said.

“He won’t chase after Jiang Kun and the rest, will he?” Ying Huanhuan was startled as she hurriedly said. She was already aware that Lin Dong had handed the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed over to Yuan Fang’s group.

“Relax, I have already sealed that ripple when I handed the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed to elder sister Fang.” Lin Dong smiled faintly. Immediately, he clenched his hand as the enormous Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree appeared and landed heavily on the ground.

“Instead, Yao Ling will treat this object as the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed. Therefore, he will definitely come looking for us.”

Ying Huanhuan finally sighed in relief. Immediately, she glanced briefly at Lin Dong. Clearly, she did not expect the latter to be so cautious. He had actually arranged everything so well.

“You should rest first. You are severely worn out. It is likely that Yao Ling’s group will not find this place tonight.” Lin Dong said.

“Mm.”

Ying Huanhuan gently nodded. She was indeed exceptionally tired. Her body lacked Yuan Power, causing her to feel weak. Immediately, she leaned against the rock wall and slowly shut her eyes.

Lin Dong only turned his head after observing that Ying Huanhuan had shut her eyes. His eyes looked towards the night sky through the crevice. It was possible for him to sense the undulations in the surrounding area. Clearly, Yao Ling’s group was searching for them all over the mountain.

“Bastards from the Yuan Gate, all of you will repay this debt sooner or later...”

Lin Dong softly muttered to himself. After which, he took out a black robe from his Qiankun bag and covered the now fast asleep Ying Huanhuan. Only then did he sit down. However, his eyes did not show any signs of shutting. It was clearly impossible for him to shut his eyes and rest when they were in such a dangerous predicament.

Hence, Lin Dong kept his eyes open and maintained high alert throughout the night...

The long eyelashes of a young lady twitched when the first rays of the morning sun tore through the sky. She quickly opened her eyes. The first thing she saw were the bright eyes of the young man seated in front of her.

“Have you rested well?” Lin Dong watched as Ying Huanhuan woke up. The latter’s aura was clearly much better than yesterday.

“You did not sleep?” Ying Huanhuan was extremely observant. She had seen sliver of tiredness that had flashed across Lin Dong’s eyes. Clearly, he had been staying vigilant all night standing guard.

Lin Dong glanced at her, but did not say anything. All he did was to step forward and keep the black robe. Ying Huanhuan tilted her head and observed him. After which, she softly said, “Ever since you entered the Dao Sect, I can tell that you have been careful and cautious. Isn’t that... tiring?”

“Tiring?”

Lin Dong laughed. He stared the young lady in front of him and immediately said, “Ever since you were born, you lived in this sect that countless people are envious of. I on the other hand, came from a branch family of a low rank empire. Since young, I had an enemy that could eliminate my entire family with a finger. Although I hated him to the core at that time, I was unable to

express my emotions. All I could do was to train diligently until I had the strength to face him head on. Only at that time, would I barely be able to protect my family...”

“I have no one behind me or supporters. Therefore, I must be extremely cautious. Otherwise, how else could someone like me, who came from a low rank empire, become the champion of the Hundred Empire War?”

Ying Huanhuan was silent when she stared at that young man who wore a slight smile on his face. She simply could not imagine what he had been through...

“What happened to that enemy of yours?”

“I killed him atop the Hundred Empire Mountain...” Lin Dong shrugged his shoulder and spoke in an indifferent manner.

Ying Huanhuan gently nodded. Surprisingly, she was actually well-behaved and did not say anything else.

“Boom!”

The entire mountain suddenly shook violently at this moment. The large stone that was blocking the crevice swiftly collapsed. One could vaguely hear some loud cries and a commotion from outside.

They had finally been discovered...

“Later, you will leave first. Otherwise, you will only be a burden if you stay.” Lin Dong’s gaze turned towards the outside of the crevice, as he exhaled deeply and said.

Ying Huanhuan bit her lips as some stubbornness appeared in her eyes. However, this stubbornness gradually disappeared when she saw the back in front of her. Ultimately, she could only give in and nod gently.

“Alright.”

# Chapter 686: Bloody Fight

---

A dozen figures hovered in the deep blue horizon as wild Yuan Power continuously radiated from their bodies. Their gazes were currently filled with a rich malicious intent as they stared at the crevice on the cliff wall.

“Hiding for one night isn’t enough for you, Lin Dong?”

With his hands crossed behind his back, Yao Ling stared coldly at the pitch black crevice. A cold and gloomy voice carrying unconcealable murderous aura and anger rang out. After a night of searching, it was obvious that he was quite furious.

“Your nose can certainly compete with that of a dog’s.”

At this moment, a soft chuckle emerged out from within the crevice. Following which, the giant rock split open, causing rubble to fly as two figures flew out from within before landing on the mountain peak. The two figures were naturally Lin Dong and Ying Huanhuan.

After revealing himself, Lin Dong’s eyes quickly swept across the sky. Right now, there were less people around compared to yesterday. However, this lineup was still not to be underestimated. Other than Yao Ling, who was the toughest to deal with, the other members of Devil Seal Mass, Su Lei and Luo Yi, who he had previously fought with, were also present. As for the rest, based on their aura, all of them should be at the seven Yuan Nirvana stage...

One nine Yuan Nirvana stage, two eight Yuan Nirvana stage and over seven people at the seven Yuan Nirvana stage... Even though Lin Dong had already prepared to face such a formidable lineup, he still involuntarily clenched the fist in his sleeve.

Ying Huanhuan stood behind Lin Dong and looked towards the sky while a shocked expression flashed within her eyes. She knew that Lin Dong's actual strength far exceeded that which he showed on the surface. Nonetheless, he was only at the five Yuan Nirvana stage. Purely based on that, it would be extremely difficult for him just to deal with Yao Ling alone. Furthermore, there were other villains like Su Lei and Luo Yi, who were highly ranked in the sect's wanted list.

“Brat, this time you will not have the chance to escape...” said Yao Ling gloomily as he stared sinisterly at the youth standing atop the mountain peak.

“If you obediently hand over the Ancient Immortal Yuan Seed, we can let you lovers die together. Otherwise, we will torture both of you till you beg for your own deaths!”

After saying this statement, Yao Ling's expression turned ferocious. The murderous aura he radiated was akin to the edge of a blade, causing the temperature of the surrounding area to decrease.

Lin Dong's expression remain calm as he tilted his head slightly and looked towards the young lady behind him, before he softly said, “Go.”



After she heard him, Ying Huanhuan could not help but gently bite her lip. A tinge of hesitation flashed clearly across her eyes. Looking at the current situation, if she was to leave Lin Dong behind, it would inevitably not bode well for him.

“How about I stay behind and help you? I have learnt the Formless Bodhi Sound and should...” replied Ying Huanhuan after hesitating for while.

“Go.”

However, before she could even say finish her words, Lin Dong turned his head around looked at her and said casually without a shred of fear in his voice.

Looking at the thin young man in front of her, Ying Huanhuan could not help but clench her jade-like hands. She could hear a trace of anger within Lin Dong’s words. This was the first time she had ever seen this deeply prudent and cautious youth angry since she met him...

“Be careful.”

Ying Huanhuan clenched her jade-like hands before she finally she took in a deep breath. After she glanced at the man in front of her with a complicated expression, she turned around and left without a shred of hesitation.

“Thinking of leaving? Su Lei, stop her!” When Yao Ling saw this scene, he sneered instead before he commanded.

“Yes!”

Hearing Yao Ling’s exclamation, Su Lei, who was standing nearby, gave a hearty laugh before he replied. With a stomp of his foot, his body turned into a flash as he chased after Ying Huanhuan.

“Swoosh!”

However, the instant he took off, a figure swiftly appeared in front of him like a phantom. With a grasp of his hand, a gigantic pitch black ancient tree appeared in a flash in his hands. Carrying the tree by its roots, the pitch black tree carried an extremely heavy force as it violently hacked down on Su Lei.

“You’re courting death!”

It was obvious that Su Lei was no pushover. Upon witnessing Lin Dong’s obstruction, he chuckled instead. With a grasp of his hand, a silver lightning blade appeared with a flash. With a tilt of his blade, it brought along the roar of thunder as it heavily slashed at the ancient tree.

Dang!

When the two objects collided, a clear metallic sound together

with a frightening force unfurled in the sky.

When his lightning blade clashed with the ancient tree, Su Lei's expression suddenly changed as alarm flashed past his eyes. That was because he had realized that when his lightning blade touched that ancient tree, the Yuan Power in his body started to become sluggish.

“There's something off about that thing!”

Su Lei was a man with ample experience. With a thought, he knew that this was likely caused by Lin Dong's weird black tree. Thus, his body immediately moved as he quickly tried to retreat.

However, it was obvious that Lin Dong had no intentions of dragging this fight on. As the current situation was very unfavorable towards him, there was no reason for him to give up on an opportunity like this.

Hence, the instant the Yuan Power within Su Lei's body turned sluggish, a grey line on Lin Dong's forehead started to rapidly condense. Finally his “Desolate Demon Eye” appeared once again. A grey beam of light containing an extremely destructive force directly exploded out from within and violent shot towards Su Lei's heart.

The speed of the grey beam of light was extremely fast. When Su Lei saw Lin Dong's killing move, he was so frightened that cold sweat emerged on his body. He quickly tried to activate the Yuan Power within his body and created a Yuan Power shield in front of

him.

Chi!

The grey beam of light smashed ruthlessly against the surface of the Yuan Power shield. Its extremely destructive power revealed itself at this moment. Several cracks appeared on the seemingly sturdy Yuan Power shield, before it directly ruptured with a loud bang as the grey beam directly penetrated through it.

Although the Yuan Power shield did not manage to block the grey beam, it managed to slow it down. Meanwhile, Su Lei used this opportunity to hastily retreat. However, it was obvious that his speed was not equal to that of the grey beam. Hence, after he took two steps back, that grey beam had already struck his shoulder with lightning speed.

Peng!

A savage force crazily struck against Su Lei's shoulders .The frightening power shook Su Lei and caused him to fly back like a cannonball. At the same time, fresh blood gushed out from his shoulder.

Su Lei hideously retreated a dozen steps as he clutched his shoulder, which was spewing fresh blood. Right now, he was somewhat shocked. Immediately, his face was covered by a malevolent expression. He was somewhat unable to imagine that he had actually gotten injured after fighting Lin Dong for the first time...

“ You little bastard, I will slaughter you!”

Roared Su Lei as a scarlet red murderous aura filled his eyes.

Chi!

Just as Su Lei’s roar resounded out, Lin Dong had already dashed towards him at lighting speed. His pitch-black pupils were filled with an intense cold. Raising the black ancient tree in his hand like a gigantic club, he violent swung it at Su Lei’s body without restraint, ripping through the air while doing so.

Dong!

A low and deep sound echoed before Su Lei, who had just stabilized himself, flew away once again. In the end, he violently smashed into a mountain cliff, his entire body deeply embedded into it.

“If you want to kill me, you should at least be prepared to leave something behind right?” After slapping away Su Lei, Lin Dong tilted his head and faced the now gloomy Yao Ling and the rest as his lips cracked open into a grin. A terrible aura overflowed from that smile.

Yao Ling shot a glance at Su Lei, who was struggling to free himself from the cliff. He was indeed rather amazed right now. He was extremely clear about Su Lei’s strength. However, Lin Dong

managed to thrash him with a single attack. Although it was somewhat unexpected, Lin Dong's was actually as ruthless as them, villains whose hands were stained with the blood of countless lives.

“Your true strength is indeed much more powerful than what you show on the surface... however... do you really believe that you can escape today?” mocked Yao Ling as he shot an indifferent smile at Lin Dong, before slowly walking forward. Following his steps, an extremely strong fluctuation started to radiate out of his body and fill the air.

Under this fluctuation, even Lin Dong's breath slowed for a moment, causing his expression to gradually turn serious. Nine Yuan Nirvana stage, this strength was indeed much stronger than his own...

“No matter how you struggle before me, there will only be one fate for you.” Yao Ling slowly raised his hand towards Lin Dong and clenched it before softly chuckling, “You will not escape from me.”

“Boss, after you get hold of that brat, let me properly entertain him. I plan to break every bone one by one.”

Covered in fresh blood, Su Lei climbed out from the mountain cliff. He cut an extremely sorry figure and even his aura was quite dispirited. It was obvious that the injuries caused by Lin Dong's rapid attack were quite severe. As a result, his expression turned sinister and it looked as if he wanted to completely devour Lin Dong.

“After obtaining the Ancient Immortal Yuan Seed, I’ll leave him to you.”

Yao Ling smiled in an indifferent manner. Gently twisting his neck from side to side, he slowly stepped forward. From this action, anyone could tell that he wanted to personally take action.

Lin Dong’s pupils contracted slightly as he watched Yao Ling slowly walk towards him. Taking a deep breath, a vicious aura flickered within his eyes. He proceeded to extend his palm as five scarlet red Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits appeared in his palm.

“This young master has faced countless life and death situations over the past few years. Therefore... my ruthlessness, is something that you will not understand.”

Lin Dong raised his head and revealed a seemingly monstrous and evil grin at Yao Ling and the rest. In the next instant, he opened his mouth. Finally, under the chilling gazes of Yao Ling and the rest, he proceeded to shove all five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits into his mouth.

# Chapter 687: Swallowing the Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits

---

Glup.

Five bright red Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits emitted a gulp sound as they moved down Lin Dong's throat and were swallowed into his stomach.

“Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruit?”

When Yao Ling saw this scene, there was not a tinge of shock in his eyes. Instead, he shook his head somewhat pitifully as he said, “Ignorant fool. Looks like you have never seen an Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruit before. Do you know how fierce and violent the energy contained within a fruit is? Swallowing five at the same time... forget about you, it is likely that even I would not be able to digest all of them...”

“You might think that your action is fearsome but it is merely just a foolish and rash act. What a stupid brat.”

Yao Ling's face had a cold smile as he stared at Lin Dong. Given the current situation, it was likely that he did not even need to take action. In fact, Lin Dong would likely be tormented by that wild and violent energy until he ended up suffering a fate worse than death.

Su Lei, Luo Yi and the rest beside him were also looking at Lin



Dong in a mocking manner. It was as if they were looking forward to see just how miserable the latter would be after this.

“Is that so?”

However, Lin Dong, who had swallowed all five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits in front of their gloating eyes, slowly raised his head. A mocking expression flashed across his eyes, which had a faint green glow flowing within it.

“This energy is indeed violent. However, it is not enough to do anything to me, Lin Dong. Therefore, all of you may be disappointed...”

Lin Dong pressed his hands together. Following which, he placed his fingers together before numerous dazzling palm movements occurred. Soon after, a low and deep cry was emitted from his throat.

“Buzz buzz!”

Waves after waves of shockingly frightening energy fluctuation suddenly swept out from Lin Dong’s body the moment his cry sounded. Even Lin Dong’s skin turned red under this sweeping energy.

“I look forward to watching you die!” The cold smile in Yao Ling’s eyes became richer when he saw this.

“Suppress!”

The seal formed by Lin Dong’s hands changed in a lightning like fashion. A low and deep voice also resounded within his heart.

His voice was just like thunder that rumbled within his body. After which, the “Ancient Universe Formation” that was suspended over his Dantian started to tremble. Traces of light scattered from the ancient formation. It was just like an enormous net that directly covered the incomparably wild and violent crimson energy within Lin Dong’s body.

Bang bang!

The floodwater like crimson energy collided ruthlessly onto the large net. However, the latter did not even move a little as it firmly trapped it, causing the energy to be unable to escape or wreck havoc.

“Quieten down!”

Another warm light erupted. It transformed into a stone talisman that was suspended above the majestic energy. Numerous light poured down. Immediately, the violence that was within the majestic energy was also swiftly washed away.

“Swallow!”

Another low and deep cry sounded before a black ancient symbol

appeared in a flash. monstrous Devouring Power erupted like a black hole.

Crash!

The majestic bright red energy began pour into the black hole continuously. After which, it swallowed all the violence that was within it. Only then, did it transform into a vigorous energy that followed Lin Dong's inner channels and began circulating across his body.

With the help of the Ancient Universe Formation, the Mysterious Stone Talisman and the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, Lin Dong had basically perfectly suppressed all the savage energy within the five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits!

Of course, successfully suppressing it did not mean he could completely absorb them. Currently, Lin Dong was indeed unable to perform this step. What he wanted to do was not to use those five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits to raise his strength. Instead, he merely wanted a temporarily boost in strength.

With this boost, he would possess fighting strength that was comparable to Yao Ling's group!

However, it was extremely easy for this frightening energy that suddenly erupted, to exceed the limit that one's body could endure. Once Lin Dong physical body was unable to endure the assault from such an enormous energy, it would become just like a balloon and explode with a "bang".

The vast and mighty energy was like a torrent as it surged towards all of Lin Dong's limbs. Waves after waves of frightening energy also swiftly rose. Lin Dong could sense a piercing pain being emitted from within his veins...

“Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill!”

Lin Dong inhaled a deep breath of air as he sensed the activity within his meridians. An unusual green light suddenly surged out from deep within his eyes.

The green light spread towards every part of Lin Dong's body. While the green light spread, some green scales actually quietly appeared on the inner walls within Lin Dong's body.

These scales were just like a defensive layer that protected Lin Dong meridians. After these scales appeared, the painful bursting sensation from his meridians was immediately halved.

Creak.

Lin Dong's hands slowly clenched tightly. An excited arc appeared onto Lin Dong's face as he sensed the unprecedented formidable strength surging within his body.

With the help of the three divine items within his body along with the superb strength of the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill, the frightening strength generated by five Ancient Immortal

Yuan Fruits was now completely under his control!

Although this would only last temporarily, Lin Dong would possess an unusually powerful strength during this period of time!

“Everyone, are you ready?”

Lin Dong raised his eyes. Green light lingered within them as he stared at Yao Ling group, parted his mouth and smiled.

“This bastard...”

Yao Ling’s group watched Lin Dong with gloomy expressions. The fluctuation around Lin Dong’s body had soared several times. Meanwhile, there was also a rich disbelief under this gloominess. They were truly unable to believe that Lin Dong was actually able to suppress the energy from five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits.

Yao Ling’s eyes were dark and cold and some fear actually rose within his heart. The various feats done by Lin Dong caused him to feel uneasy. If this abnormally perverse fellow was allowed to keep growing, it was likely that he would become a major source of trouble in the future...

Yao Ling looked at the young face of Lin Dong, which was filled with a fearsome expression. For some unknown reason, he suddenly remembered that other Dao Sect disciple. That person was a truly vicious person who once charged up to Yuan Gate alone and killed three great Elders...

“He must not be allowed to live!”

When he thought of this point, Yao Ling’s heart was suddenly filled with chillness. His eyes flashed before the killing intent within his eyes flared. After which, his body moved and disappeared in a peculiar fashion.

Lin Dong stepped on the empty air. A greyish glow surged within the Demonic Eye between his eyebrows. He looked at Yao Ling, who had disappeared, before the corner of his mouth immediately parted. Both his arms suddenly shook before green light surged. His hands swiftly shook before finally transforming two icy cold fearsome-looking green dragon arms. Waves after waves of frightening energy were currently being channeled through both of his arms.

Lin Dong’s dragon hand gripped the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree. In the next instant, he took a step forward and directly brandished the ancient tree. It violently smashed at the area in front of him.

Squeak!

The ancient tree tore through the air and emitted a sharp ear-piercing sound. That strength was almost lifelike...

Bang!

A fist that was wrapped around by a bright golden light also penetrated through the air and appeared in an unusual manner at the spot where the ancient tree was violently smashing towards. Finally, it carried an incomparably ferocious ripple before it clashed head on with the ancient tree.

A muffled thunder like sound spread apart in the sky. Wild and violent hurricane like energy ripple swept apart in a crazy manner before the surrounding mountains immediately cracked. Large rocks continuously rolled downwards.

Chi!

Two human figures pulled back from the energy fluctuating point. It looked as if the two were of equal strength!

With the help of the five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits, the current Lin Dong was actually able to fight head on with Yao Ling!

“Worthy of being a nine Yuan Nirvana Stage expert.”

Lin Dong steadied his body. He raised his head and smiled towards Yao Ling. During the head on collision, he finally understood the strength of a nine Yuan Nirvana Stage expert. If it was not because of the five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits’ energy supporting him, it was likely that Lin Dong would not be able to fight head on with Yao Ling.

“It is a little too early to celebrate now. Brat, I will allow you to

truly witness the strength of a nine Yuan Nirvana Stage expert!”

Yao Ling smiled in a dense manner before he clenched his fist. Vast and mighty Yuan Power gathered and directly formed a golden long spear. The spear was emitting an extremely fierce and brutal fluctuation.

“Chi chi!”

Yao Ling rushed out with a lightning like speed. The long spear within his hand transformed into numerous spear shadows that covered Lin Dong in a storm like manner.

Swoosh!

However, just when his spear shadow was about to reach Lin Dong’s body, the latter suddenly moved and disappeared.

“Ah!”

Yao Ling heard a sharp miserable screech from behind him when Lin Dong’s figure had just disappeared. He hurriedly turned his head, only to see a seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert from the Devil Seal Mass being smashed by Lin Dong’s ancient tree. Thanks to his frightening strength, he had actually directly smashed both of his hands into a blood pulp.

Swoosh!



After having swung the ancient tree explosively towards one of them, Lin Dong raised his head and revealed a ferocious smile towards Yao Ling. After which, he rushed towards another seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert.

Lin Dong did not plan to be entangled with Yao Ling from the beginning. After his strength surged explosively, the current him could kill all these seven Yuan Nirvana Stage experts. Since this was the case, he would naturally need to clear the place. He wanted to kill all these people until not even their souls remain!

A horrified expression surfaced in the eyes of the other seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert when he saw Lin Dong charging over towards him. However, he was also a ruthless individual and he did not retreat. Instead, he held a large blade in his hand. With a stern cry, a sharp blade glow violently hacked towards Lin Dong.

Boom!

The black large tree danced and directly shattered the blade glow. After which, it was accompanied by an enormous shadow as it violently smashed towards the seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert's head. Immediately, his brains were blown apart.

A bloody rain danced over the sky. Luo Yi, Su Lei and the rest looked at the young man, who was bathing in the bloody rain, with a shaken expression. At this moment, even they felt a chillness surging within their hearts...

“Little bastard. Your father will tear you into tens of thousands of pieces today!”

Yao Ling watched two of his subordinates being finished off by Lin Dong within the blink of an eye, before his eyes immediately became bloody red. After which, a roar that was filled with fury and churning murderous intent resounded in the sky.

This ruthless person, who was ranked fourth on the sect wanted list had finally completely erupted in fury at this moment because of Lin Dong!

# Chapter 688: Killing Su Lei

---

Bang!

A mighty and wild Yuan Power swept out from Yao Ling's body in all directions at this moment. His eyes were unusually ferocious as he stared at the figure in the distance. The long spear in his hand shook suddenly. A buzzing sound appeared before a hundred feet large spear glow directly penetrated through the empty air and flew explosively towards Lin Dong with a lightning like speed.

The speed of the spear was extremely rapid and it covered all of Lin Dong's escape paths in the blink of an eye, forcing him to once again halt his attack towards those weaker members of Devil Seal Mass. He forcefully turned his body around and swung the black tree in his hand in a vicious manner. A shocking strength spluttered out. Even the invisible air was blasted apart by his strength, that seemed to possess an actual form.

Boom!

The two collided heavily. A shocking energy ripple spread apart wildly while being accompanied by a loud sound. Lin Dong's body trembled as he hurriedly retreated by over a dozen steps. The black tree in his hand danced before he stabilized his body. Following which, a grave expression flashed across his eyes. There was still a huge gap between him and Yao Ling. Even after he received a temporary boost in strength from swallowing five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits, there was still a small gap when compared with Yao Ling.

“Su Lei, Luo Yi, attack together with me and kill this fellow. The others should gather together and lock down this place!” Yao Ling stared at Lin Dong with a dark and cold gaze before crying out explosively.

He had also calmed down after erupting in fury. Currently, Lin Dong’s strength had clearly soared and a seven Yuan Nirvana Stage practitioner was unable to pose any threat towards him. In that case, it was better for him to take the initiative and get those subordinates, who were unable to provide much help, to withdraw.

He believed that with his ability as well as Su Lei and Luo Yi, who had both reached eight Yuan Nirvana Stage, it was likely that Lin Dong would have difficulty escaping regardless of how many tactics the latter had.

“Yes.”

Luo Yi and Su Lei nodded upon hearing this. Their eyes flickered as they stared at Lin Dong with a fierce glint flickering in their eyes. Of course, there was currently some fear on top of this fearsome glint. The ruthless manner in which Lin Dong destroyed two seven Yuan Nirvana Stage experts caused their hearts to quiver a little.

Vast and mighty Yuan Power fluctuated and slowly surged out from the bodies of the Luo Yi duo. The latter’s bodies moved and coincidentally formed a triangular formation together with Yao Ling, locking Lin Dong within it.

“Attack!:

A low and deep cry was suddenly emitted from Yao Ling’s mouth. He took the lead and rushed forward as the long spear in his hand penetrated through the air. It carried a wild and violent ripple that could shred the Nirvana Golden Body of an eight Yuan Nirvana Stage expert as it ruthlessly targeted all of Lin Dong’s fatal spots.

Luo Yi and Su Lei also attacked when Yao Ling struck. Immediately, Yuan Power whistled in the sky. A chilling murderous aura completely engulfed Lin Dong.

Lin Dong’s eyes flickered. The enormous pressure that permeated towards him also caused his expression to turn extremely grave. When facing the combined attacks of a nine Yuan Nirvana Stage along with two eight Yuan Nirvana Stage experts, any slight opening that he exposed would definitely lead to certain death!

“Desolate Demon Eye!”

A grey line was swiftly formed between Lin Dong’s eyebrows. After which, it transformed into a grey demonic eye. The moment his demonic eye appeared, the grey light that contained an extremely frightening destructive force directly shot out explosively and collided head on with the attack from the Yao Ling trio.

Boom boom boom!

Wild and violent energy fluctuation swept apart upon contact. However, as it was one against three, the might of the Desolate Demon Eye was clearly scattered significantly. Hence, it was unable to accomplish the same impact as before.

“Swoosh!”

However, Lin Dong was clearly not so naive to believe that the attacks from the Yao Ling trio could be blocked so easily. After the grey light rushed out, his body also suddenly pulled back explosively. His footsteps flashed and he appeared in front of Su Lei.

Yao Ling was the strongest amongst the three, while Luo Yi and Su Lei were of equal strength. However, the latter was wounded by Lin Dong earlier and his aura was a little sluggish. Hence, he was considered to be the easiest person to deal with amongst the three of them.

“Humph!”

Su Lei was also not a fool. The moment he saw Lin Dong’s action, he was aware that the latter wanted to break through the formation from his side. Immediately, he let out a cold snort before majestic Yuan Power wildly gathered on his palms. There was a wild and violent force vaguely being emitted.

“Shattering Yuan Palm!”

Fierce and brutal energy gathered wildly. After which, a palm slammed viciously towards Lin Dong amidst Su Lei's low and deep cry. Thunder rumbled wherever the palm attack past.

However, Lin Dong did not dodge in the face of this fierce and brutal palm attack from Su Lei. Green light surged out from within his body before they quickly agglomerated into numerous green dragon scales on the surface of his body.

Lin Dong did not show any signs of attacking after his dragon scales appeared. He took a step forward before his entire body slammed violently against Su Lei.

Bang bang!

During the time that the green light surged, the shadow of a dragon seemed to be following behind Lin Dong. That collision seemed to possess a tremendous force that could even split mountains!

“Green Dragon Bump!”

A low and deep cry was suddenly transmitted into Su Lei's ears as his eyes shrank abruptly. In the next moment, his formidable palm attack slammed directly onto Lin Dong's body, which was covered with green dragon scales.

Bang!

An energy ripple that was visible to the naked eye erupted and spread instantly after the collision occurred. The surrounding space became distorted because of that force.

Su Lei's expression suddenly changed when his palm slammed onto Lin Dong's body. At this moment, he finally sensed just how wild and violent the strength that was contained under the green scales was.

Under that kind of force, the strength of Su Lei's palm attack was quickly negated. Finally, it completely collapsed and disappeared in front of his extremely ugly expression.

Grug!

After his palm attack was dealt with, the strength of Lin Dong's bump came pouring forth without restraint. Immediately, Su Lei's face turned pale almost instantly. A mouthful of fresh blood was spat out as his body flew backwards in a miserable manner.

However, Lin Dong did not have the luxury of time to celebrate just because he wounded Su Lei. This was because, he could sense that during the split second when he attacked Su Lei, Yao Ling and Luo Yi had already joined forces and attacked him. An unusually fearsome attack had targeted all the fatal spots on his back.

Clearly, the two of them were also waiting for an opportunity like this to launch an attack. Only when one attacked, would one end up exposing an opening, just like now!



Lin Dong was unable to kill Su Lei in a single strike. However, with the combined attacks of Yao Ling duo, all they needed was to target a single opening from Lin Dong in order to completely devastate him!

“Brat, you’re finished!”

Lin Dong’s eyes glanced behind him. He could already see the ferocious expressions of Yao Ling duo behind. Their fierce attack was about to reach him.

“Huff!”

A mouthful of white vapor was exhaled deeply from Lin Dong’s mouth. He glanced at the withdrawing Su Lei, whose aura was sluggish. This was clearly the best opportunity to kill the latter.

Lin Dong’s eyes flickered rapidly. In the next instant, a bright green light suddenly erupted from within his body. After which, the green light gathered and formed a large green bell around his body. There were some green dragon tattoos on the surface of the bell.

“Unmoving Green Dragon Bell!”

The large green bell was formed with lightning like speed under Lin Dong’s low voice. The fearsome combined attack from the Yao Ling duo also arrived the moment it was formed.

Drill!

A deafening sound erupted upon contact. That wild and violent strength that was filled with murderous intent also arrived together with it...

Bang!

Crack lines spread across the large green bell rapidly. Finally, it emitted a loud bang and was forcefully blasted apart.

Countless green light shot out. An enormous strength came overflowing from all directions. Lin Dong also borrowed this momentum to retreat. In a flash, he appeared in front of Su Lei, amidst the shocked and furious gazes of the Yao Ling's duo.

“It's over...”

Lin Dong's eyes stared at Su Lei's pale face, while an indifferent arc was lifted on his face.

“I want to see how you are going to kill me!”

Even though his aura was currently sluggish, Su Lei was also no pushover. He was aware that all he had to do was to delay Lin Dong for a moment. After which, the Yao Ling duo's combined attack would be able to kill the latter. Hence, he maneuvered the Yuan

Power within his body in a crazy fashion. Bright golden light erupted from within his body. Clearly, he had pushed his Nirvana Golden Body to its limit.

With such a defence, it was likely that even Lin Dong would not be able to kill him with a single blow.

However, Su Lei saw a ridicule flashing across Lin Dong's eyes when he prepared his defence. In the next instant, he saw Lin Dong extending his hand towards him. On his palm, a golden glow flashed, before a palm-sized large golden wheel appeared.

Su Lei's eyes shrunk immediately when that golden wheel suddenly appeared. A feeling of death quietly bubbled in his heart...

“Nooo...”

A hoarse cry had yet to be fully emitted from within Su Lei's throat when it suddenly halted. The golden light wheel shot out from Lin Dong's hand. After which, it quickly slashed Su Lei's throat with a speed that could not be sensed. A bright red blood trail appeared.

## Chapter 689: Demonic Yuan Cursed Body

---

When the golden light flashed past, Su Lei's maximum output Nirvana Golden Body seemed to have totally lost all effect. Under the fine golden light, his seemingly sturdy and powerful Golden Body was as weak and frail as tofu.

Fresh blood spurted out and reflected Su Lei's pupils, which were now filled with fear and disbelief. He simply could not imagine how Lin Dong was able to break his Nirvana Golden Body with such ease. After all, his body had undergone the tempering of eight Nirvana Tribulations!

However, Lin Dong did not care about the Su Lei's dread filled eyes, which were gradually being filled with a greyish colour. With a clench of his fist, the blurry golden light disappeared into the center of his palm.

Swoosh!

The life within Su Lei's eyes rapidly faded, while the vigorous Yuan Power gushing around his body completely crumbled. Promptly, his body started to fall from the sky.

Lin Dong watched Su Lei's descending corpse. His eyes flashed as he moved forward and grabbed it. Following which, Devouring Force stealthily erupted from the centre of his palm.

Chi Chi!

In the face of this Devouring Force, strand after strand of weak golden light flew out from Su Lei's corpse. These strands of golden light swiftly gushed into Lin Dong's body through the center of his palm.

Bang!

After the last strand of golden light was devoured by Lin Dong, his palm slapped down on Su Lei's chest, directly pushing him into the sea of trees below.

As the corpse sunk into the sea of trees below, this notorious villain of the Blood Rock Grounds was finally killed by Lin Dong at this location.

Lin Dong stared as the corpse disappeared into the sea of trees, before he gently tightened his fists. Generally speaking, after a Nirvana stage expert underwent the seventh Nirvana Tribulation, a strand of Yuan Spirit Qi would be born within the Yuan Power in his body. Although this bit of Yuan Spirit Qi was insufficient to create a Yuan Spirit, it would still introduce an element of uncertainty. Lin Dong naturally wanted to get rid of any problems in the future. That was why he directly took action and used Devouring Force to completely devour the strands of Yuan Spirit Qi within Su Lei's body.

On the other hand, although the 'Dragon Yuan Wheel' within Lin Dong's body was extremely powerful, it was formed from Yuan Spirit Qi. Hence, it would weaken every time he used it. Since Lin

Dong was currently unable to generate Yuan Spirit Qi within his body, he could only rob from others...

“One down.”

After finishing off Su Lei, Lin Dong slowly turned around. He proceeded to stare at Yao Ling and the rest, who were staring in shock at Su Lei's corpse, before he shot a grin filled with iciness towards the two of them.

“You...actually killed Su Lei?”

Yao Ling's face twitched violently, a trace of shock lingering in his eyes as they gradually turned scarlet red. Due to Lin Dong's speed, the two of them had not discovered the golden wheel which pierced Su Lei's throat.

Luo Yi's expression had now turned extremely solemn. On top of that serious expression was a tinge of unease. His strength was on par with Su Lei. Since Lin Dong was able to kill Su Lei, this indicated that Lin Dong would be able to kill him as well...

“This guy...”

Luo Yi's face trembled. When he looked at that young man, who had a smile on his youthful face, with dragon-like arms holding a gigantic black tree, he secretly felt like retreating. For some unknown reason, he felt unease curling around his heart.

“He can only blame himself...”

Lin Dong smiled at the now scarlet eyed Yao Ling as he casually remarked. He was no benevolent individual. If these people did not provoke him, he would not bother them. However, since things had progressed to such a stage, he was not going to be foolish enough to show benevolence to them. Should a chance present itself, he would definitely deliver a lethal blow...

“Huu.”

After he heard Lin Dong’s words, the maliciousness in Yao Ling’s eyes intensified as he stared right back at Lin Dong. Taking in a deep breath of air, he calmed himself. However, under that tranquility, Lin Dong could sense a tyrannical murderous aura that was akin to a volcano that was about to erupt.

“Brat, it’s my fault for underestimating you from the start. Else this would not have happened...” Yao Ling’s voice was extremely gloomy but he was not angry. Instead, it was filled with bitter resentment and venom.

Lin Dong’s eyes narrowed a little as he slowly tightened his grip on the black ancient tree in his hand and gradually became more vigilant. Even the current him could feel a fluctuation from Yao Ling’s body that caused his heart to tremble.

“However, it is all over now!”

With an indifferent expression, Yao Ling slowly walked forward. Behind him, Luo Yi stared at Yao Ling's back as his expression started to change a little. The next moment, he unexpectedly stopped moving forward and instead turned around and quickly retreated.

At the same time, the expressions on the other Devil Seal Mass members turned solemn, and they rapidly retreated far away from Yao Ling.

Yao Ling did not care about those who were retreating. His incomparably dark and sinister gaze was locked onto Lin Dong. A merciless grin appeared on his face as he placed his palms together, before rapidly forming strange seals one after another at lightning speed.

Buzz!

Following Yao Ling's hand seals, the Yuan Power surrounded his body started to surge. A suffocating and stifling fluctuation gradually spread out from Yao Ling.

"Lin Dong, next, I'll let you experience the elite martial arts of my Yuan Gate!"

The cruel grin of Yao Ling grew wider. In the next instant, a deep rumbling sound suddenly erupted from his mouth, "Demonic Yuan Cursed Body!"



Boom!

Ruthless yet majestic Yuan Power suddenly surged out from Yao Ling's body the instant he roared. Following the surge of Yuan Power, Yao Ling's body started to expand. All the muscles within his body squirmed while his veins were like small snakes as they extended across the surface of his body.

Chi Chi!

A piercing sound akin to flesh being ripped apart rang out, while a somewhat pained expression appeared on Yao Ling's face. However, this was unable to mask his cruel expression. It was as if he could already visualize the scene where Lin Dong was being ripped into shreds...

Following the expansion of his body, black patterns started to appear on Yao Ling's body. The patterns seemed to be similar to ancient runes and it looked as if they had grown out of his flesh. When seen from far, they looked extremely strange and mysterious.

Within a span of a few breaths, Yao Ling's body had expanded to twice its original size, making him look like a small-sized giant. Black runes covered his body, and coupled with his scarlet red eyes, it made Yao Ling look like a barbarian from ancient times that was brimming with ruthlessness and cruelty.

Bang!

With a face filled with rune-like characters, Yao Ling shot a evil grin at Lin Dong before he ferociously taking a step forward. Instantly, his body mysteriously disappeared. His speed was in a complete contrast with the size of his body.

The moment Yao Ling disappeared, Lin Dong's pupils abruptly contracted. In the next instant, he forcefully twisted his body and violent smashed down on the space behind him with the Ancient Immortal Yuan Tree and his dragon arms.

Bang!

Space fractured as a fist fully covered in black symbols directly ruptured space and slammed against the black ancient tree. Frightening amounts of energy crazily poured out from the resulting impact.

The resulting energy engulfed and swept over Lin Dong, causing him to catapult backwards. The hand with which he held onto the Ancient Immortal Yuan Tree started to tremble continuously. Meanwhile, the dragon scales on his arms sparkled with green light as they tried to dissipate that terrifying force.

After unleashing his so-called 'Demonic Yuan Cursed Body', it was evident that Yao Ling's strength had increased by about thirty percent. His resulting strength caused even Lin Dong to feel fearful.

"Cursed Yuan Seal!"

After knocking Lin Dong away with a single punch, the evil grin on Yao Ling's face grew even wider. Forming a mysterious sealing technique with his hands, it took the shape of a fist imprint, which he sent blasting forward.

Swoosh!

An overwhelming amount of Yuan Power frantically gathered and materialized into a life-like fist imprint. Whistling across the sky, it descended upon Lin Dong.

Buzz!

Lin Dong's expression turned extremely solemn as he gazed at the incoming fist imprint that contained a frightening fluctuation. Torrential grey light howled out of Lin Dong's forehead as grey clouds gathered together and the gigantic Huang Beast was summoned once again.

Rustle!

The gigantic tail of the Huang Beast ferociously whipped downwards, bringing with it a dreadful grey light that blotted the sky, before it violently slammed against the gigantic fist imprint.

Bang!

Berserk undulations swept outwards, causing Lin Dong to retreat explosively. He landed on the top of the 'Huang Beast's' head and

slowly sat down. As he bit his fingertip, fresh blood started flowing out. In the end, he pressed his bleeding finger on the gigantic closed eye of the 'Huang Beast'.

“Since you want to go all out, I’ll accompany you till the end!”

Fresh red blood spread out on the giant eye like a net, an extremely mysterious and strange sight. Lin Dong gazed down upon Yao Ling, whose body was currently enveloped by ruthless undulations. Within his slow and unhurried words, was an abundance of ferocity. Promptly, his hand seals changed.

“ Spirit of the Desolate Beast, Blood Sacrifice!”

# Chapter 690: Heavily Wounded

---

A scarlet blood net spread out from the enormous eye of the “Huang Beast” with an extremely shocking speed. With the spreading of the blood net, a dark and deep red colour rushed over the enormous body of the “Huang” Beast like a light ripple.

“Roar!”

The blood net spread and the monstrous Huang Beast suddenly roared at the sky. Its roar resounded over the entire place as a wave of desolate aura, that appeared to have originated from the ancient times, slowly spread across its body.

Right now, the Huang Beast had finally become the genuine frightening mysterious beast from ancient times. Not only did it possess a similar form, it also possessed a similar soul...

Lin Dong appeared on the forehead of the Huang Beast before his palm pressed on the icy cool head of the Huang Beast. Traces of blood flowed through his palm and poured into the body of the Huang Beast below at a rate visible to the naked eye.

As blood flowed, Lin Dong’s face began to turn pale. This blood offering not only required a great amount of Yuan Power, but it would also exhaust the essence blood of a person. As such, Lin Dong would likely end up exhausting himself. At the very least, he would need to recuperate for a period of time in order to recover.

Of course, this blood offering might possess quite a hefty price,

but Lin Dong did not have any other choice. This battle was quite an uneven one. If it was not because he had swallowed five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits and temporarily boosted his strength, it was likely that regardless of how many tactics he had, it would be impossible for him to fight against Yao Ling, who had advanced to nine Yuan Nirvana Stage. Moreover, Yao Ling had also used his signature skill. If Lin Dong was not a little more ruthless, it was likely that he would no longer have the chance to be so ruthless in the future...

“Huff huff!”

The large dark red beast was suspended in the sky. Its enormous tail swung gently. Immediately, it formed numerous wild and violent hurricanes in the sky.

At a short distance away, Luo Yi and some of the other members from Devil Seal Mass had already pulled back. Their eyes were incomparably solemn as they stared at the face off in the sky.

Although they were extremely surprised that Lin Dong was actually able to endure for so long, they were also clearly aware that the current Lin Dong did indeed possess quite a formidable fighting strength. If they were the ones fighting him, it was likely that they would not be able to obtain the upper hand...

“However, regardless of how frightening this brat is, it is time for things to end.” An expert from the Devil Seal Mass clenched his teeth and spoke in a sinister manner.

The others nodded their heads in the face of these words. They were clearly aware of Yao Ling's strength. Over the years, even some experts who were also at nine Yuan Nirvana Stage had to be extremely cautious when Yao Ling used his "Demonic Yuan Cursed Body". Moreover, the current Lin Dong was merely borrowing some external strength in order to barely reach this stage.

While being watched by everyone, Yao Ling, whose body had swelled by several times in the sky, was staring at the area in front of him with a shady and indifferent expression. Monstrous and brutal aura rolled and twined around his body, causing him to appear like a bloodthirsty demon.

In front of him, Lin Dong, who had completed the blood offering, also slowly stood up on the head of the Huang Beast. His young face, which was clearly pale, also had some icy chillness lingering over it. Both of his eyes were as sharp as blades as he stared at Yao Ling. A hostility rose from deep within his eyes.

Bang!

The two of them stared at each other. However, not a single useless word was uttered. The air was suddenly torn apart in the next instant. Yao Ling was the first one who was unable to suppress the surging killing intent within his heart. His body, which was covered by a black curse symbol, pierced through the air like a sharp arrow. In a flash, he appeared above Lin Dong.

Boom!

Yao Ling's eyes were dark and cold as his fist struck out. Immediately, blood red light gathered under his fist with a lightning-like speed. Finally, they directly transformed into a bloody light fist imprint before it smashed towards Lin Dong like a small mountain.

At Yao Ling's current state, a single fist from him was enough to severely wound an eight Yuan Nirvana Stage expert like Luo Yi. However, Lin Dong merely raised his head in the face of his fearsome attack, while his pupils reflected the unusually wild and brutal fierce palm wind.

“Swoosh!”

An enormous black shadow tore through the sky. It was directly accompanied by a frightening strength that could shatter a mountain as it violently swung against the blood glowing fist.

“Boom!”

The entire sky trembled due to this collision. After which, the energy ripple scattered. An enormous tail flew backward while Yao Ling also took a slight step back.

Swoosh!

Yao Ling had just taken a step back when his body leaned forward. He rushed out like a huge bird pouncing onto its prey. Both of his fists were swung out. Immediately, the blood light that



permeated the sky moved. A countless number of blood glowing fist rushed out from Yao Ling's hand. However, these fists that contained a shocking strength did not attack Lin Dong immediately. Instead, they condensated in the sky.

“Yuan King Fist.”

The fearsome glow within Yao Ling's eyes turned increasingly rich. After which, a low and deep cry was suddenly emitted from his mouth. At the same time, his final fist was also accompanied by a monstrous aura that was violently being swung forward.

Buzz buzz!

A deafening buzzing sound was emitted by all the fists in the sky. Finally, the countless number of fists began to gather together. Within a short instant, the fists that permeated the sky shrunk into the size of a palm.

A realistic-looking fist was agglomerated and formed within the red light. It was as though one could see a human figure standing with his hands behind his back on the fist seal. That human figure was extremely blurry but he possessed a frightening aura that was able to overturn the sky and land with just the raise of his hand. Evidently, Yao Ling had unleashed a powerful Soul Martial Arts.

“Bang!”

A cruel expression was lifted in Yao Ling's eyes when he saw the

blood-red fist that had agglomerated. After which, his hand seals changed before the blood red fist seal disappeared.

Lin Dong's eyes were grave as he stared at the fist that had disappeared. His Mental Energy suddenly spread apart. A moment later, he abruptly shrunk his eyes. The Huang Beast soul that was connected to his mind, also suddenly turned its huge head around. A blood-red fist had strangely appeared in the space behind before it came smashing down.

The huge tail of the Huang Beast once again swung forth violently when it saw the fist, that contained an extremely powerful fluctuation. However, this time around that huge tail was directly penetrated by the blood-red fist when the two made contact.

“Naive fellow!” The corner of Yao Ling's mouth immediately parted into a mocking expression when he saw this scene.

“Ha!”

Lin Dong, who was standing on the head of the Huang Beast, remained calm when he saw this scene. He inhaled a deep breath of air before his hand seals, under his sleeves, suddenly changed.

When the fist landed, that Huang Beast's huge eye, which was covered by a blood net, suddenly opened!

The surrounding Yuan Power immediately began to churn when

the eye opened. It was just like a pot of boiling oil. Even the light from the surroundings turned much dimmer.

The Huang Beast Demon Eye was not grey in colour this time around. Instead, it had turned into a blood red colour. Within that blood-red glow, it looked just like a sea filled with blood and it was filled with menace.

The blood red demon eye opened and a blood light that appeared to penetrate through the world shot out explosively!

The blood light whizzed. It appeared to have transformed into a claw as it flashed past the sky. At a glance, it was actually a shrunken Huang Beast.

The blood light and the fist flashed across the sky. After which, they violently collided.

Boom!

The entire place trembled. Monstrous blood light began spreading across the sky like a hundred thousand feet large tsunami. A loud rumbling sound that carried a frightening wind came pouring down in an insane fashion. Meanwhile, the surrounding mountains suffered a lethal blow and nearly turned into a flat piece of land.

Boom!

Lin Dong and the Huang Beast were also forcefully sent flying backward by a couple of hundred meters by this storm. They even crashed into and shattered a mountain along the way. Only then, did they stabilize their bodies in a miserable manner.

Lin Dong raised his head, narrowed his eyes and looked in front of him. If that previous attack was to hit him, it was likely that he would definitely end up seriously injured even though he had learned the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill.

“That fellow...”

Lin Dong’s eyes swept around him cautiously. His eyes abruptly turned focused in the next moment as he reflexively turned around. Green light gathered on his palm and transformed into a thick green scale shield.

Bang!

A huge fist that was covered with black curse symbols penetrated through the air and ruthlessly struck onto his green scale shield. A punch blasted the shield apart before that impact also struck Lin Dong’s body.

The force exploded on Lin Dong’s body and a redness surged over his face. His body flew back explosively by dozens of steps. After which, he forcefully swallowed a sweetness that had risen from his throat.

Yao Ling revealed himself after having struck Lin Dong with a palm and forced the latter back. He smiled coldly while looking at Lin Dong. Immediately, his feet stepped on the back of the Huang Beast as he once again charged forward explosively. It seemed like he was not intending to give Lin Dong any chance to catch his breath.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Lin Dong's eyes were icy cold as he looked at Yao Ling, who had rushed over explosively. His feet suddenly stomped. Immediately, one could see the blood red scales on the back of the Huang Beast turn vertical, while a shockingly cold glint was being emitted from them. Immediately, they left the beast and encircled Yao Ling like a storm.

Yao Ling was also shocked by this sudden event. The area that the scales covered was very wide. Even with his speed, he could not dodge them in time. Immediately, he withdrew both of his hands. A blood light spluttered out and protected his body.

Chi chi!

Although some of the blood red scales were reflected when they flashed past Yao Ling's body, there were still some scales that penetrated through his defence, cutting and leaving numerous blood trails on his body.

After Yao Ling's completely escaped from the range of that attack, he glanced at the bloody wounds on his body before his

expression immediately turned gloomy.

However, the moment his eyes became gloomy, a human figure arrived swiftly in a ghost-like manner. Green light surged over the ferocious green dragon arms. After which, a fist was violently delivered towards Yao Ling's chest.

Bang!

That wild and violent strength scattered and actually sent Yao Ling flying directly.

“You bastard!”

Waves of intense pain were being transmitted from Yao Ling's chest, while fury also surged within his eyes. A ferociousness flashed passed his face when he stared at Lin Dong, who had once again attacked. However, he did not dodge. A fist was instead forcefully thrown towards Lin Dong.

A mad wind swept over the back of the Huang Beast. Lin Dong was shaken and forced to take a couple of steps back. A light flickered rapidly on the scales of the green dragon arm. It resolved the frightening strength that was being transmitted over.

“Fighting head on with me? You truly do not fear death!”

Yao Ling's body shook slightly as he scattered the strength on his fist. After which, he chuckled maliciously at Lin Dong.

Swoosh!

Lin Dong's eyes were indifferent as he glanced at him. He did not say anything unnecessary as he rushed forward once again.

The ferociousness on Yao Ling's face became even more intense when he saw this scene. If Lin Dong used the Huang Beast to pester him, he might have to spend quite some time to kill him. However, by taking the initiative to charge over, in his opinion, it was equivalent to seeking death.

Two human figures were accompanied by a brutal aura as they fought with each other on the back of the Huang Beast. In the next instant, a frightening force erupted. Punches and kicks were thrown back and forth. The two of them had actually directly entered into a fearsome close quarters physical combat.

Boom boom boom!

Luo Yi's group were a little stunned as they looked at the two human figures that were brawling with each other. They could hear the low and deep sound of a fist making contact with flesh being transmitted over. Immediately, they parted their mouth involuntarily. They were aware that both parties threw extremely powerful punches and it definitely felt terrible when they landed on one's body.

Fresh blood would occasionally splurt from the crisscrossing human figures. However, one could not differentiate just who it

belonged to. Nonetheless, everyone was aware that the two of them had clearly fought until they were completely unable to control themselves.

That close-quarter physical combat caused Luo Yi and the rest's hearts to pound in fear as they watched. At the same time, a chillness was also present deep within their hearts...

Bang!

Another violent collision between two fists occurred. The two strength eroded each other and the scales on Lin Dong's green dragon arm cracked a little. The originally bright green light had also turned dim. Traces of blood continuously seeped out from the scales.

Lin Dong was currently in a bad state and his entire body was covered in blood. His originally savage and mighty green dragon arm had also become unusually dilapidated.

Although he was in a terrible condition, the fearsome aura within Lin Dong's eyes turned increasingly rich.

On the opposite side, Yao Ling's body was similarly covered with blood. However, he was in a slightly better state when compared with Lin Dong. After unleashing his "Demonic Yuan Cursed Body", his physical body was actually quite powerful.

"Brat, since you can't hang on anymore, let me end you once and



for all!”

Yao Ling looked Lin Dong, who appeared to have reached his limits. A cruel expression once again surfaced on his face. He stared at Lin Dong and parted his mouth into a smile. After which, a fearsome fist wind directly smashed towards Lin Dong’s chest.

Bang!

Lin Dong also threw a punch forward when he executed his fist. His target was Yao Ling’s chest.

The ridicule on the corner of Yao Ling’s mouth became even denser. After such an intense battle, Lin Dong fighting ability had clearly declined tremendously. As such, his attacks currently posed little threat towards him. Hence, Yao Ling, who had remained cautious earlier, relaxed his guard slightly when he faced Lin Dong’s punch.

Swoosh!

This change was so slight that it could not be detected. However, Lin Dong’s eyes suddenly erupted into an unusually sharp glint. His palm wind changed before his palm turned into a fist. Golden light erupted on his palm before a palm size golden ring appeared.

The golden ring was not large and there were eight sharp teeth protruding from its edges. They were curled and emitted a kind of sharpness that caused one’s heart to feel a chill. There was also a

golden dragon imprint vaguely present on the gold ring.

The golden ring appeared in a split second. At that moment, Yao Ling's fist had already ruthlessly landed on Lin Dong's chest.

Lin Dong's body trembled violently. However, the intense pain that was being transmitted from his chest caused a bone-chilling arc to be slowly lifted on his face.

“You are finished...”

Lin Dong muttered. A death god-like voice was suddenly transmitted into Yao Ling's ear before the latter's eyes shrunk abruptly. Immediately, he sensed an icy cold aura emitted from his chest before all the pores on his body instantly stood up.

Chi!

Yao Ling did not have the time to set up any defence. The momentary relaxation by Yao Ling caused him to lose any opportunity and he could only sense an icy cold object being inserted into his chest. After which, it shot out from his back while carrying an intense pain.

Yao Ling eyes shrunk into the size of a pinhole as fresh blood spurted out. He looked at the young face covered with fresh blood, that contained a dense chilling smile. This caused Yao Ling to feel as though he was in an igloo.

He was doing it on purpose

He had given up on a little advantage and chose close quarters combat. All he was waiting for was, such an opportunity like this that would appear in a flash...

He was just like a tiger quietly hiding within the mountain forest, waiting for its prey to make a fatal mistake...

Yao Ling could sense that Lin Dong had already reached his limit. If things continued, the latter would definitely be unable to endure on. He could have chosen to rely on his mighty Yuan Power that surpassed the other party by multiple levels, to tire him to death.

Unfortunately, it was impossible for time to reverse by a couple of minutes...

“Bastard!”

Yao Ling’s face was ferocious. His foot swung on Lin Dong’s shoulder. While sending the latter flying, he also held his chest and staggered backward. Immediately, his face quickly turned ashen.

Luo Yi and the rest in the distance, who had been observing the battle, had an abrupt change in their expressions. They hurriedly rushed over. Some experts from Devil Seal Mass quickly supported Yao Ling. Their eyes shrunk when they saw the bloody hole on the latter’s chest.

“Kill that fellow. He has already reached his limit!” Yao Ling held his chest. His expression was unusually pale as he roared.

A killing glint flashed immediately in the eyes of Luo Yi and the few other Devil Seal Mass experts when they heard this. After which, they turned around. Their eyes were fearsome as they stared at Lin Dong, who was standing a little unsteadily.

“Kill him!”

The few of them looked at each other. After which, they ceased hesitating and rushed out immediately. Sharp killing attacks poured onto Lin Dong like a storm.

Lin Dong watched Luo Yi's group rushing over. His eyes were a little blurry. The consequences of forcefully swallowing five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits had finally hit him. After all, the bloody battle with Yao Ling had exhausted all his strength...

The current him was unable to block even a seven Yuan Nirvana Stage expert.

“A nine Yuan Nirvana Stage expert is indeed very strong...”

Lin Dong softly muttered in his heart. Immediately, he sensed a wind blowing over and it sent his body flying violently. Immediately, all the organs within his body shook intensely. A mouthful of fresh blood was finally spat out involuntarily.

As he flew backward, Lin Dong looked at Luo Yi's group, which were charging towards him with fearsome expressions on their faces. Finally, he shook his head helplessly. A giddiness surged out from deep within his mind.

“Am I going to lose my life here...” Lin Dong muttered.

However, just as Lin Dong muttered, he suddenly discovered that his body, which was flying backward, had suddenly collided with a soft object. He gently opened his eyes only to see a pretty face with redden large eyes appeared within his blurry vision.

It was Ying Huanhuan.

“Elder sister, Elder Mu, kill those bastards!”

While he was a blurry state, Lin Dong appeared to have heard a young lady's faint crying voice. However, a killing intent permeated across the clear voice.

# Chapter 691: Rest

---

His consciousness was in constant darkness. While he was semi-conscious, Lin Dong faintly heard some soft and gentle sounds ringing beside his ear. These sounds were melodious and very touching. It gave one the urge to open one's eyes to see the appearance of the voice's owner...

However, in the end, Lin Dong did not open his eyes. Deep weariness swelled and rushed out from the depths of his mind like a tide, causing his eyes to remain shut.

This weariness lasted for quite a long period of time. Finally, after a long struggle, his eyes forcefully pushed apart his eyelids and opened a small crack.

A gentle ray of sunlight shot down on him. This caused the crack between Lin Dong's eyelids to grow increasingly large before the sunlight finally banished the darkness...

After opening his eyes, the first thing that appeared in Lin Dong's vision was a quiet room filled with the scent of sandalwood. Vermillion red-coloured light reflected off his surroundings and bloomed within his eyes. It had a calm yet imposing atmosphere.

Lin Dong stared at the strange and unfamiliar environment around him. An extremely brief moment of absentmindedness flashed past his eyes. In the next instant, he suddenly stood up. Just as he was about to leap forth, his body turned soft. A powerless sensation started to spread from his limbs and his body,

leaving Lin Dong with no strength...

The sensation of weakness within his body caused Lin Dong's expression to change. However, he gradually calmed down. Slightly wrinkling his eyebrows, it was apparent that he seemed to have recalled something.

“Ying Huanhuan should have made it in the end...” muttered Lin Dong to himself. Thinking back to the last moment he could recall, he remembered hearing her familiar voice. From the looks of it, it seems like in the end, the Dao Sect members managed to reach there in time.

“I’m actually hurt this badly...”

Lin Dong lowered his head and looked at his pale white palms. Unable to resist, he started wrinkling his eyebrows. He could feel the waves of pain being transmitted from within his body. Even the revolution of his Yuan Power was faced with some obstruction. It was obvious that the injuries that he had received this time were extremely serious.

Of course, the frowning Lin Dong failed to consider what kind of adversary he had faced. He was only at five Yuan Nirvana Stage. Coupled with the fact that he was a four Seal Heaven Symbol Master, as well as the various tricks up his sleeves, it was still quite a stretch to go toe to toe with an eight Yuan Nirvana Stage expert. Moreover, Yao Ling was an expert who had reached the nine Yuan Nirvana Stage. If he had not relied on the explosive energy within the five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits, Lin Dong would never match up to him. Furthermore, he even managed to wound Yao

Ling severely.

Placed amongst the various super sects, a nine Yuan Nirvana Stage expert would already be capable of being a top class disciple. In fact, one would even be able to garner a pretty strong reputation within the entire Eastern Xuan Region. Nonetheless, Lin Dong was actually able to accomplish such a feat while being chased by Yao Ling and the rest, who were trying to kill him. If news of this incident was disseminated, there would be a high possibility that an uproar would occur.

Lin Dong slowly walked down from his bed. At this moment, there was absolutely no Yuan Power within his body. It would likely require quite a few days of nursing in order to gradually recover his Yuan Power.

Creak

Walking across the room, Lin Dong pushed open the door. Warm sunlight vigorously poured down, enveloping Lin Dong's entire body. Under the gentle warmth, Lin Dong could feel that the throbbing pain within his body had significantly subsided.

There was a spacious corridor outside the room. Before this corridor, there was a secluded courtyard. Within the courtyard, there were a few people calmly sitting on the floor. Hearing the sound of the door being opened, they hurriedly turned around. Immediately following that, a pleasantly surprised expression started to emerge on their faces.



“You finally decided to wake up, Lin Dong...”

Lin Dong looked at Mo Ling and the few others who were gathering around him and surprised expressions. He could sense their strong feelings of concern as well as the joy within their eyes. Feeling slightly warmed in his heart, he smiled and nodded while saying: “How long was I out for?”

“Ten days...” replied Mo Ling while indicating with his fingers.

Lin Dong was slightly startled. Although he had somewhat expected it, he had never imagined himself being in such a deep slumber after getting injured. It was likely due to the backlash from forcefully devouring five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits.

“You are really famous now. News about you has been transmitted across the whole Dao Sect. It is said that even though you were besieged by Devil Seal Mass and many other experts, you still managed to injure Yao Ling, who was ranked fourth on the sect’s wanted list. That fellow is a nine Yuan Nirvana stage expert and he has quite a strong reputation within Eastern Xuan Region...” praised Liu Bai while clicking his tongue. The way he stared at Lin Dong was unexpectedly filled with unconcealable admiration.

“Furthermore, the most important fact is that Yao Ling used to be a deacon of Yuan Gate. You don’t how much pride you have gained for us, disciples of Dao Sect...”

Lin Dong looked at Liu Bai and the rest who were excited and

flushed expressions on their faces. He could not help but feel somewhat speechless. He had almost lost his life this time around and he was nowhere as suave as they mentioned...

“Lin Dong, you’re awake?”

Just when Lin Dong was getting a headache from their frenzied discussions, a melodious and lovely voice filled with unconcealable surprise rang out suddenly from within the courtyard. At once, everyone turned towards to the location of the noise, which led them to stare at a corner of the courtyard covered in the shade of plants. At that spot, stood a young lady in the prime of youth.

The young lady stood under the shade. Her slender and soft body was wrapped up in her clothing accentuating her alluring curves. Light shone through the leaves and illuminated her exquisite and charming little face, showing her bright and beautiful big eyes, which are now brimming with delight.

The young lady’s features were certainly extremely beautiful. As her jet black ponytail hung down, it incited an arc filled vigor and vitality at the tip.

When Mo Ling and the rest saw the young lady, a sparkle flashed past their eyes, before they promptly turned and stared mischievously at Lin Dong.

“When you were in a coma, junior sister Ying Huanhuan was taking care of you most of the time. She would often come running to our Desolate Hall, which actually caused quite a few disciples of

Desolate Hall to envy you...” said Mo Ling, who was now wearing a strange smile.

After hearing his words, Lin Dong clearly gawked for a moment. He was clearly aware of how popular Ying Huanhuan was amongst the Dao Sect disciples. Furthermore, she had quite a reputable background as well. Never would he had imagined that a young lady that was akin to a princess in the Dao Sect, would actually go out of the way to take care of him...

“Hey, did you turn into a retard after sleeping?”

Just as Lin Dong was still absentminded, the young lady had already arrived in from of him. Extending her perfect and slender white hand that would make many men drool, she waved it in front of him, while a melodious voice akin to a musical instrument rang out.

Recovering his composure, Lin Dong proceed to stare at the delicate face in front of him before giving a smile and replied: “ At the final moment, thanks for making it on time. If not, perhaps I would not be able to return this time...”

“Hmph, you just love to flaunt and talk big. It was obvious that you can’t handle it yet you still had to act so fierce.” replied Ying Huanhuan as she curled her lip.

Lin Dong started choking for a while because of her reply. Promptly, he felt slightly helpless. This little great aunt was really not easy to satisfy. In that kind of situation, there was no way to

ensure everyone's safety. To save one of their lives was already a pretty decent scenario...

“Of course, I will not deny that you were indeed very dashing at that moment. If you did it a few more times, perhaps I will fall for you,” said Ying Huanhuan as she smiled sweetly after seeing Lin Dong's depressed expression

Lin Dong chose not to reply. To him, experiencing such an incident once was already more than enough. He did not want to experience it again...

“What happened to those fellows in the end?” asked Lin Dong as if he suddenly thought of something.

“They're all dead. There won't be the Devil Seal Mass in the future. As for those people who crossed blows with you, so long as they took personal action, they would have been finished off...” said Ying Huanhuan in an indifferent attitude while slightly lifting her eyelashes.

Lin Dong nodded his head in silence. “It looks like this time around, the Dao Sect got fairly furious. They were unexpectedly ruthless...”. However, this was the only way to establish one's dominance. Otherwise, how could the disciples of Dao Sect travel outside in the future if anyone could easily humiliate them?

“This time, all the elders were very excited to see the Ancient Immortal Yuan Seed being brought back and you contributed the lion's share of the work. After you've recovered, fa... lord sect

master would like to personally see you.” said Ying Huanhuan with a smile.

“Oh?”

Only at this juncture, did Lin Dong’s expression slightly change. Even with the strength of mind, after hearing this, he faintly cramped for a second. Regardless, that person was the head of Dao Sect. He was also one of the top practitioners within the vast area of the Eastern Xuan Region. A single thought by him alone could make countless empires vanish in a puff of smoke.

Mo Ling and the rest who were standing nearby all had faces full of envy. For one to be able to meet with the lord sect master, who was incredibly hard to even catch a glimpse of, was no simple feat...

“Relax. You’re now a hero in our Dao Sect.” comforted the young lady with a smile after discovering Lin Dong’s stunned reaction. She quickly proceeded to retrieve a basket from her Qiankun Bag, which was filled to the brim with various medicines and pills that were used to treat injuries.

“These medicines are very effective for treating wounds. I actually went to the pill room for at least half a day to collect all of them. This is an ointment to be applied externally. This is to be swallowed...”

The young lady used her fine jade like fingers to point at the bottles and jars within the basket while carefully explaining their

contents. After she finished her explanation, she felt something amiss about the surrounding atmosphere. Raising her head, she saw Mo Ling and the rest with a weird expression on their faces.

There was no one within the entire Dao Sect who did not know how weird and mischievous Ying Huanhuan was. Who knew that this lively and vibrant young lady actually had such a gentle and tender side to her?

“What are you guys looking at! Have you never seen before a beautiful woman before!”

After being stared weirdly at by Mo Ling and the rest, a crimson shade flashed past her snowy white cheeks. Immediately, she glared at them. Seeing this, Mo Ling and the rest rapidly shrunk their necks before quickly turning away.

“Hmph, it can be said that you are more or less half my saviour. I don’t want others to say that I, Ying Huanhuan am ungrateful. Please take it.”

Ying Huanhuan’s big eyes turned around and faced Lin Dong while maintaining her awe-inspiring image. She proceeded to viciously shove the basket into Lin Dong’s hand before immediately turning around and leaving. Her free and easy actions were quite domineering. However, no one noticed that the moment that young girl turned around, her tender and delicate earlobes had already turned red.

Looking at the beautiful figure of the rapidly departing young

lady, Lin Dong could not help but touch his nose. “It seems like the gentleness and softness she displayed earlier was merely a short-lived moment.”

“Hehe, younger senior sister Huanhuan is not bad. This is the first time I saw her take such good care of someone...” teased Liu Bai with a grin, as he raised his eyebrows towards Lin Dong.

“Stop speaking nonsense. She only did this because she was grateful to me for saving her life,” replied Lin Dong irritatedly.

“However, she did take good care of you during this period of time. Besides, I have to tell you a piece of bad news. You should be quite clear of junior sister Ying Huanhuan’s charm. Hence, since she had taken such good care of you, there will definitely be some people who would be displeased...”

Mo Ling patted Lin Dong’s shoulders while a helpless expression appeared on his face: “According to what I know, even Qing Ye has expressed discontentment over this matter. He is from Earth Hall and is the most talented person after elder senior sister Ying Xiaoxiao amongst the Dao Sect younger generation members. Therefore, you will have to be careful in the future.”

Unable to resist, Lin Dong’s face started to turn black. At this moment he wished to curse out loud. What the hell does this have to do with me? He simply could not understand how he would actually wound up provoking someone even while in a stupor?

“Femme fatale.” consoled Mo Ling.

“There is nothing between us!”

Replied Lin Dong. However, after he said those words, he saw Mo Ling and the rest continuously casting their gazes at the basket in his hand. At this moment, he felt wave after wave of stifling feeling in his chest.



## Chapter 692: Ying Xiaoxiao, Qing Ye

---

Lin Dong sat quietly on a bed within a quiet room. Both of his eyes were tightly shut. His hands formed a training seal as a Devouring Force quietly scattered from within his body. Under this Devouring Force, the air around him began to form waves after waves of ripples. Waves of mighty Yuan Power came surging out before they finally poured into his body.

With the continuous pouring in of Yuan Power, Lin Dong aura also began to recover a little at a time...

This training lasted for three hours. Lin Dong's unmoving body finally shook gently. After which, he slowly opened his tightly shut eyes. A cluster of white vapor that carried a terrible smell was spat out from his throat.

After that cluster of white vapor was exhaled, the final trace of dimness on Lin Dong's face had disappeared. His dark black eyes had once again recovered the brightness and luster of the past.

Lin Dong had clearly also sensed the changes within his body as a joy flashed across his face. Ever since he awakened, he had been quietly recuperating for nearly five days. Only then, did he completely heal the backlash caused by swallowing five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits...

Moreover, with the complete recovery of his injuries and strength, Lin Dong also discovered something that caused him to be pleasantly surprised. After this serious injury, his Yuan Power

and Mental Energy actually made quite a shocking improvement. He even began to vaguely feel a sign of being about to breakthrough...

“Is this because of the five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits?”

Lin Dong pondered on this fact. The Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits possess the mysterious effect of increasing one's strength. If Lin Dong followed the rules and refined them before he swallowed them, it would not be impossible for his strength to break through to six Yuan Nirvana Stage. However, the situation back clearly did not give him the time to quietly train and refine them. Hence, he could only act ruthlessly and forcefully swallow all five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits in exchange for a temporary boost in his strength...

The price was that a large portion of the energy from the five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits was exhausted during the intense battle. The amount that Lin Dong eventually absorbed only amounted to ten to twenty percent.

Nonetheless, these ten to twenty percent still benefited Lin Dong tremendously. In addition to the bloody battle this time around, it allowed Lin Dong's strength to advance once again. Although he was unable to make a breakthrough, he was likely not far from doing so

Lin Dong swung his arm that was once again filled with mighty strength. He parted his mouth into a smile before pushing open the door and exiting the room.

After leaving the room, the first thing that Lin Dong saw was two familiar old figures standing a short distance in front. Immediately he was startled. He hurriedly walked forward and laughed, “Greetings to the two teacher uncle.”

The two people in front of him were naturally Chen Zhen and Wu Dao from Desolate Hall. They looked at Lin Dong’s complexion and nodded with a smile.

“Have you fully recovered?”

Wu Dao stared at the young man in front of him with a pleased expression. After inquiring a little, he continued with a smile, “This time around, you have done quite well and it has boosted the prestige of our Desolate Hall. If we can cultivate the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed, it would be extremely beneficial for our entire Dao Sect.”

“We coincidentally ran into it, that’s all. The matter this time around is also thanks to senior Jiang Kun and the rest.” Lin Dong smiled and said.

“Haha, staying behind and fighting the Devil Seal Mass alone. This act might be impressive but it is a little too reckless. You should be more careful in the future.” Chen Zhen shook his head and said.

“Disciple has learned a lesson.”

Lin Dong could hear a concerned tone from Chen Zhen's voice. Therefore, he did not provide any explanation. Instead, he only smiled and nodded.

Chen Zhen nodded slowly. He fondled his beard as his eyes looked at the young man in front of him. The satisfied expression in his eyes was becoming increasingly rich.

“Let's go, the sect master wants to meet you.”

Standing beside him, Wu Dao smiled before speaking.

Lin Dong nodded his head. Seeing this, Wu Dao and Chen Zhen exchanged glances and did not say anything more. They turned around and rushed off. The former immediately followed closely behind.

The three of them directly rushed out from the Desolate Hall mountains. After which, they headed towards the inner region of the sect. The Dao Sect was extremely vast. Mountains surrounded it and there would occasionally be some disciples flying past the sky. It appeared just like a “capital” that was extremely large and possessed a frightening strength.

“That is the Dao Peak. The sect master resides there. Normally the major matters of the sect are all decided in that place.” Wu Dao wore a respectful expression as he looked at the mountain before softly speaking to Lin Dong beside him.

Lin Dong nodded slightly as his gaze swept over this mountain. This time around, he did not dare to use his Mental Energy to scan the place. Based on his senses, he could tell that this mountain was extremely dangerous. It was so dangerous that it was able to cause him to vanish instantly...

Before he landed on the mountain, Lin Dong's eyes swept across his surroundings. After which, he saw two grey clothed old men seated on a rock that protruded from the precipitous mountain cliff.

The two old men did not possess any Yuan Power fluctuation around their bodies. Looking from a distance away, they appeared just like two old men. However, even Chen Zhen and Yu Dao swiftly reduced their speed when they saw the two of them.

The two grey clothed old men raised their heads before their turbid eyes looked at the Chen Zhen duo. Finally, their gazes slowly paused on Lin Dong.

Lin Dong felt all his pores suddenly standing the moment he was being observed. Even the circulating Yuan Power within his body slowed at this moment. That feeling was as if he was being thoroughly scanned by those two grey clothed old men from inside out.

Fortunately, the two gray clothed old men only scanned his body for a moment. Immediately, Lin Dong saw these two stiff elderly faces revealing a somewhat ugly but warm smile.

“He is Lin Dong, right? Not a bad little fellow. Proceed on. The sect master is waiting for him.”

Chen Zhen and Wu Dao nodded. After which, they finally led Lin Dong and swiftly rushed up the mountain.

“Those two are Elders of the Dao Sect and they are very powerful. If they advance another step, they might even be able to step into the Mysterious Death Stage...” Wu Dao softly spoke to Lin Dong while they were hurrying to the mountain top.

“Mysterious Death Stage...”

Lin Dong clicked his tongue quietly. This level would likely allow one to be placed amongst the elite even in the entire Eastern Xuan Region. The Dao Sect was indeed worthy of being a super sect. Its foundation was so frightening.

The three of them blotted up to the mountaintop. Fog lingered over the place and a spacious white jade platform appeared in their sight. After which, the three of them landed on the platform.

When Lin Dong landed on the platform and raised his head, he discovered that there were actually three figures standing a short distance in front.

There were two ladies and a man amongst the three of them. One of them looked quite familiar. A light coloured dress wrapped

around her slim and delicate lovely figure. She was Ying Huanhuan.

The lady on her left had a tall figure. Her long black hair was being randomly restrained gently and it adhered to her narrow waist as it hung downwards. She had a beautiful face and her brow was similar to Ying Huanhuan. However, the latter was lively and vibrant while she appeared gentle and calm.

Moreover, Lin Dong could also sense a faint pressure from her body. Immediately, his lips were lifted a little. In the entire Dao Sect, which other lady besides the big senior sister of Sky Hall, Ying Xiaoxiao, whom he had heard of but never met, could possess such strength?

On the right side Ying Huanhuan was a young man in green clothes. The man appeared quite handsome. Although he was not as handsome as Little Marten, he could also be considered a dashing and refined man. It was likely that he would attract quite a bit of attention in a crowd.

“Hey, have you fully recovered from your injuries? Your little life is quite hardy.” A smile appeared on Ying Huanhuan’s face when she saw Lin Dong. She immediately stepped forward and laughed in a lovely voice.

When he heard Ying Huanhuan’s playful yet caring words, Lin Dong felt somewhat helpless. However, the joy within the smile on the young lady’s face originated from her heart. This caused Lin Dong to smilingly say, “It is all thanks to your medicine.”

When she heard those words, Ying Huanhuan appeared to have recalled something as her face turned red. Her eyes glanced at Lin Dong before she immediately turned away and said: “Only because you saved me.”

After uttering those words, she held the wrist of the beautiful lady beside her and laughingly said, “This is my elder sister, Ying Xiaoxiao. I will throw you out now if you tell me that you have never heard of her.”

“Greetings to senior Xiaoxiao.”

Lin Dong did not dare to slight the most outstanding younger generation member in Dao Sect. He immediately cupped his hands together. Based on his status, he should also address Ying Xiaoxiao as senior.

“This girl has been too spoilt. Sometimes, she will go overboard when she speaks. Please do not take it to heart.” Ying Xiaoxiao’s eyes stared at Lin Dong in front of her. Her cool face revealed a smile as she spoke softly.

Lin Dong glanced at Ying Huanhuan by the side, who was curling her mouth. Immediately, he smiled quietly and nodded.

“This time around, it is all thanks to you. However, you are really full of surprises. By the time I reached, Yao Ling had already received a fatal wound...” Ying Xiaoxiao’s eyes rippled slightly as she stared at Lin Dong. Her heart was not as calm as she appeared



on the surface. Currently, she had also stepped into nine Yuan Nirvana Stage. Hence, she naturally understood how formidable a nine Yuan Nirvana stage expert was. Although Lin Dong was heavily wounded and barely conscious when she reached, Yao Ling... had similarly suffered a fatal wound.

She was truly unable to imagine how Lin Dong, given his strength, was able to injure Yao Ling, who was a nine Yuan Nirvana Stage expert, to such an extent in front of so many experts with malicious intent.

“I was merely lucky.”

Lin Dong spoke smilingly. He added another sentence in his heart. Additionally, I was a little more ruthless than him...

Ying Xiaoxiao was noncommittal towards Lin Dong's words. If good luck could injure a nine Yuan Nirvana Stage expert till such an extent, Yao Ling's reputation during these years would truly be a joke.

That green clothed young man by the side also stepped forward at this moment. A charming smile surfaced on his handsome face. Although his smile was wide, Lin Dong could still sense a slightly guarded expression within the man's eyes.

“I have long since heard of junior Lin Dong's reputation. Now that I have met you, I can see that the rumors are indeed true.”

The green clothed man smilingly extended a hand towards Lin Dong. Due to his angle, his body appeared to be looking down a little at Lin Dong. After which, he said with a smile: “Earth Hall, Qing Ye... a close childhood friend of Huanhuan.”

# Chapter 693: Dao Sect Master

---

Earth Hall, Qing Ye.

The words of the green clothed man caused Lin Dong to be momentarily stunned. Soon after, he laughed quietly to himself. He finally understood the reason behind the guarded look within the eyes of the man, who was regarded as the second most talented younger generation member in the Dao Sect after Ying Xiaoxiao...

Looks like this person also fancied Ying Huanhuan. However, it seems like he had misunderstood something.

Lin Dong was not surprised that Ying Huanhuan had so many suitors. Compared to the cool and calm Ying Xiaoxiao, the usually lovable and lively Ying Huanhuan was filled with youth and vitality. At the very least, many disciples did not dare to speak loudly in front of Ying Xiaoxiao. However, they were able to relax in front of Ying Huanhuan.

The latter's character was also quite decent. Although her status was rather high, she did not discriminate the Dao Sect disciples based on status. As long as it was not someone that she disliked, she could get along well with them most of the time. As such, it was difficult for others not to remember her.

“What nonsense are you saying?”

Beside him, Ying Huanhuan narrowed her light eyebrows just as Lin Dong was about to reply. She looked at Qing Ye with

dissatisfaction before saying, “If you dare to utter nonsense again, I will throw you out from here.”

Qing Ye merely smiled slightly in response to Ying Huanhuan’s retort as he spread his hands outwards at Lin Dong. However, this silent and clever attitude of his had intentionally displayed the relatively cordial relationship between Ying Huanhuan and him.

Lin Dong rubbed his nose and smiled. Qing Ye was quite a scheming person. His playful response would easily cause a person to feel uncertain in one’s heart. In fact, if he truly fancied Ying Huanhuan, it was likely that he would feel frustrated because of such actions.

“It seems like the Great Desolate Tablet will be opened in another half a month, right?” Qing Ye looked at Lin Dong and said with a smile.

When the words ‘Great Desolate Tablet’ was mentioned, even Ying Xiaobao’s eyes fluctuated a little. Back then, she had sat quietly in front of the Great Desolate Tablet for a many months. However, she was ultimately unable to understand the Great Desolate Scripture that was contained within it...

Lin Dong looked towards Qing Ye and nodded.

“Haha, currently, other than Desolate Hall, there are already disciples from the three other Dao Sect Halls who have successfully learnt the mysterious scriptures of their respective halls. This time around, junior Lin Dong has the greatest chance within the

Desolate Hall...”

“I have long heard of the difficulty of the Great Desolate Scripture. Hopefully, junior brother Lin Dong will be able to successfully achieve enlightenment this time around. I really want to see if my Earth Hall’s ‘Earth Emperor Scripture’ is weaker than the ‘Great Desolate Scripture’.”

Lin Dong knitted his brows slightly as he looked at Qing Ye smiling face. He could sense a trace of deeply hidden pride from the former’s words. Of course, if Qing Ye had really learnt the ‘Earth Emperor Scripture’ of the Earth Hall, he would possess the qualifications to utter these words. However, why did his words sound so loaded? Was it because of Ying Huanhuan...

“Senior Qing Ye flatters me. As for the Great Desolate Scripture, it will be lucky if I obtain it and fate if I do not. Some things cannot be forced, and all I can do is try my best.” Lin Dong did not have much interest in speaking nonsense with Qing Ye. He immediately shook his head and spoke faintly.

“Hey, can you please show some confidence. I favour your chances after all.” Ying Huanhuan extended her hand. She patted Lin Dong’s shoulder in an encouraging manner as her lovely laughter sounded out.

Lin Dong did not know whether to laugh or to cry as he gazed at the young and lively pretty face before him. “When I display some confidence, you say that I am a arrogant braggart. When I speak humbly now, you are telling me this instead?”

Ying Huanhuan's face involuntarily reddened when she heard this. She immediately said, "I did not know you that well in the past. Now, I have realized that you have tremendous potential. Therefore, there should be a small chance that you can successfully understand the Great Desolate Scripture."

Ying Huanhuan's voice paused for a moment when she spoke to this point, before she continued, "Of course, it's no big deal even if you fail. Even elder sister failed to understand the Great Desolate Scripture. Therefore, it is nothing to be embarrassed about."

From the looks of it, even though she had some understanding of Lin Dong, she still did not have much confidence that the latter could successfully understand the Great Desolate Scripture. After all, that thing was simply too abnormal and harsh.

However, Ying Huanhuan's head was lightly hit by Ying Xiaoxiao just as her words were fading. She immediately turned her head and her small face stared at the latter with resentment. Ying Xiaoxiao could not help but laugh, "It is fine to comfort others. However, you actually dare to use me as a negative example."

Lin Dong could not help but chuckle as he watched this scene. After which, he glanced at Qing Ye from the corner of his eyes. The smile on the latter's face had reduced a little because of Ying Huanhuan's comforting words. However, he still maintained a free and easy demeanor. Nonetheless, the guarded look in his eyes when he looked at Lin Dong had clearly become a little stronger.

“Junior brother Lin Dong, please go in first. Sect master is waiting for you.” Ying Xiaoxiao patted the young lady beside her before looking towards Lin Dong.

Lin Dong nodded his head when he heard her words. He raised his head and looked at the majestic hall in front of him. Taking in a deep breath of air, his expression immediately turned solemn as he walked forward. Finally, he pushed open the door and walked in under the watching gazes of the Ying Huanhuan trio.

“He is quite decent indeed. The Desolate Hall has found a real talent this time around. Lin Dong will likely be a dark horse in the upcoming Hall Competition.” Ying Xiaoxiao stared at Lin Dong’s disappearing back, and suddenly remarked in a soft voice.

“Mm, Lin Dong is very capable. He merely has the strength of the five Yuan Nirvana stage, yet he was able to seriously injure Yao Ling. No wonder this fellow has such a cocky face the first time I met him. He has the substance to back it up.” Ying Huanhuan nodded continuously. From the looks of it, her various opinions of Lin Dong had disappeared after the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed incident.

“I heard from Elder Zhang Lao that he swallowed the five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits that were plucked from the Immortal Yuan Ancient Tree and used them to boost his strength, in order to fight with Yao Ling’s group. Otherwise...” Beside them, Qing Ye immediately spoke with a smile. He curled his mouth in a noncommittal manner when he heard the evaluation of Lin Dong by the two ladies.

“Swallowing five Immortal Yuan Ancient Fruits...”

Ying Xiaoxiao's eyes hardened slightly. She looked towards Qing Ye and asked, “Do you dare?”

Ye Qing was stunned. He was just about to lift his chest and display the pride on his face. However, he was eventually unable to thicken his skin and say anything. All he could do was to shrug his shoulders unnaturally, “I don't really dare. However, when it comes to a life and death situation, it is possible to give it a try.”

“He emerged from the Hundred Empire War. The both of you should have heard about the cruelty of that place. Lin Dong is from a mere low rank empire. In order to fight his way through the Hundred Empire War with such a background, the effort he had put in is something that none of you can imagine...”

Ying Xiaoxiao gazed at the door of the hall that was slowly being shut. She softly said, “Fortunately, he is a disciple of our Dao Sect...”

Surprise flashed across Ying Huanhuan's eyes when she heard her usually haughty elder sister actually give Lin Dong such an evaluation.

“Regardless of how talented he is, he is still a newcomer. It is likely not going to be easy if he wants to use his ability to raise the ranking of Desolate Hall in the upcoming Hall Competition.” Qing Ye laughed faintly.



Ying Xiaoxiao did not make any comments regarding this. She pulled Ying Huanhuan as she turned around and left. Qing Ye watched the backs of these two ladies. He curled his lips and turned his head to look at the shut door. A dark and gloomy expression flashed across his eyes.

The large hall was not extremely magnificent. Lin Dong saw a rocky path that led all the way to the end when he entered it. The waters on both sides of the path were clear and deep, while a faint vapor lingered over its surface. Occasionally, the surface of the water would fluctuate, as though something had passed by.

Lin Dong followed the path and walked in. Finally, his footsteps slowly came to a halt. His vision widened as the pool transformed into a lake. An emerald green lotus leaf was suspended above the center of the lake. A figure was seated on the lotus leaf like an old monk. A tranquil atmosphere was present that made this space seem stable and compact.

Lin Dong's expression turned extremely solemn the moment he saw the human figure on the green lotus. He could sense the Mysterious Stone Talisman, Ancient Universe Formation and the Devouring Ancestral Symbol in his body hiding deeply on their own accord. This situation had occurred once back when he met Qing Zhi in the ancient space. This was the second time...

“Disciple Lin Dong greets sect master.” Lin Dong bowed respectfully at the human figure on the lotus leaf and greeted him in a deep voice.

The human figure on the green lotus finally slowly opened his

tightly shut eyes when Lin Dong's voice sounded. His eyes appeared to contain the sun and the moon within it. The moment his eyes opened, Lin Dong could feel that his mind had become momentarily dazzled.

The figure stood up from the lotus leaf. After which, he walked across the surface of the lake and headed over. A moment later, he arrived in front of Lin Dong. Instantly, Lin Dong was able to see the full appearance of the Dao Sect master.

The figure was wearing cloth shoes and simple fitting white clothes. He appeared to be around thirty or forty on the surface and his face was as warm as jade. One could tell that he definitely possessed quite a handsome appearance when he was young.

There was a warm smile on his large face and his smile was just like a sea of stars. It was as though any flustered heart would gradually calm down under that smile.

Cloth shoes, white clothes and completely unfathomable.

This was the first impression that Lin Dong had of the Dao Sect master. Lin Dong was still able to sense something when he saw Chen Zhen and Wu Dao. However, that probing was completely useless when he met this person.

He was just like the ocean; vast and endless. If one was to probe deeper, it was likely that one would end up getting lost within the vastness.

“Little fellow, you have performed a deed of great merit for our Dao Sect.”

The Dao Sect master smilingly looked at the young man in front of him. His voice paused for a moment before continuing, “Additionally, I have to thank you for rescuing Huanhuan.”

Lin Dong’s heart was slightly shaken. He appeared to have sensed something from the highest ranking person within Dao Sect. Immediately, he parted his mouth involuntarily. Although he knew that Ying Huanhuan definitely possessed quite an extraordinary background, he did not expect...

“It is not right to let a girl to face such a situation. Actually... I was also a little impulsive.”

Lin Dong slowly suppressed the shock within his heart. In the face of the Dao Sect master, who could even see through space, Lin Dong did not dare to act smart. Instead, he spoke in an extremely honest manner.

Given his usual cautious character, he would typically not voluntarily dive straight into such a risky situation. Heated blood had indeed surged within him at that time. Additionally, ever since he had been rescued by Ling Qingzhu in the Great Yan Empire, he really did not want such an event to occur again...

Why was it that he was always rescued by women.

Lin Dong's words clearly caused the Dao Sect master to be slightly startled. He immediately laughed softly and slowly nodded. His eyes stared at Lin Dong and said, "No wonder you were able to obtain the inheritance of the Green Dragon King, Qing Zhi..."

Lin Dong was startled. Clearly, he did not expect that the Dao Sect master would actually be aware of this ancient name, Qing Zhi.

"Haha, are you shocked? Little fellow, I am aware that you possess quite a number of secrets, such as the Heaven Dragon Aura within your body, or the Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill..."

"Or the Devouring Ancestral Symbol."

When the final phrase fell onto Lin Dong's ears, the latter's pupils abruptly shrunk.

# Chapter 694: Soul Locking Array

---

## Devouring Ancestral Symbol

When those three words entered his ear, Lin Dong felt a chilling sensation start to gush out from within his heart, before it finally spread to every part of his body. In the next instant, his body reflexively tensed up like a dangerous beast that was being threatened...

Ever since he had obtained the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, Lin Dong was usually very cautious and would not use it unless it was a critical moment. It was because he knew how enticing the Devouring Ancestral Symbol was. Its allure was enough to cause even some elite practitioners to manifest a greedy desire in their hearts.

He did not know how the sect master before his eyes had discovered he possessed the Devouring Ancestral Symbol. However, this did not stop the multitude of thoughts and ideas that now churned within his mind.

However, while he was secretly feeling anxious, he still felt slightly relieved. At least... his greatest secret, the Mysterious Stone Talisman had not been discovered.

Although he still did not know the exact properties of the Mysterious Stone Talisman, through intuition alone, he had a vague feeling that it was very important. In fact, from a certain perspective, it was perhaps even more powerful than the

## Devouring Ancestral Symbol...

Dao Sect master, Ying Xuanzi. One of the Eastern Xuan Region's strongest practitioners. This was the information that he received from Wu Dao. Even though he had exercised plenty of discretion, he had never imagined that his secrets would be discovered by such a character...

Such an expert was truly terrifying.

“Little one. You are exactly as Ying Huanhuan has described. Overly cautious and prudent.”

While Lin Dong felt a chill spread across his entire body, the Dao Sect master, Ying Xuanzi faintly smiled instead. With eyes that seemingly contained a sea of wisdom within them, it was as if he had read Lin Dong's mind.

In response, Lin Dong could only remain silent. There were some issues whereby he had no choice but to remain cautious.

“The Devouring Ancestral Symbol is indeed precious. However, not everyone desires it in this world.” Dao Sect master Ying Xuanzi continued in a slow and gentle voice, causing Lin Dong's originally tense heart to quietly relax a notch.

Lin Dong raised his head and looked at the warmly smiling Ying Xuanzi, as some of the deep weariness within his eyes quietly disappeared. He had seen all kinds of people over the years, and

could hence faintly sense the boundless grace of the man before him.

This was the true bearing a master of a super sect should possess.

“I know about some of your past experiences. Perhaps it is necessary for you to be cautious in the past. After all, you were all alone. Therefore, you always had to tread carefully and exercise discretion.”

“However... you only need to remember one thing now. As long as you are a disciple of the Dao Sect, the sect will always support you.”

“The current you is no longer alone.”

After hearing that last statement, Lin Dong could not resist as his expression turned weird for a while. What did it mean that you are not alone... Although this statement made Lin Dong choke for a while, he nevertheless felt a rare sour feeling in his nose for some time, while his eyes even turned a little moist. After a while, he raised his head and looked at this peak practitioner, who was famed across the Eastern Xuan Region. This time, his eyes did not have much reverence, and he said with a smile, “ Truly worthy of lord sect master. After your statement, I almost had the urge to go through hell and high water for the Dao Sect...”

“You’ve already done such things,” replied Ying Xuanzi with a smile.

“The reason why I was able to discover the Devouring Ancestral Symbol in your body was because I was paying close attention to you when you were at the bottom of the Pill River. At that time, you had used the power of your Devouring Ancestral Symbol...”

“No wonder.”

Only at this moment, did Lin Dong finally understand why. Promptly, he secretly feeling helpless. He truly had no way out when faced with the scrutiny of such a powerful practitioner. Looks like he needed to be even more cautious in future.

“The Devouring Ancestral Symbol is indeed a powerful object. However, you should refrain from using it in future. Wait till the moment when you are able to call forth its full strength before revealing it to the outside world.” warned Ying Xuanzi.

“Yes, this disciple understands.” replied Lin Dong respectfully as he nodded his head.

Ying Xuanzi gave a faint smile before turning around and looking towards the lake in front of him. With a wave of his sleeve, the lake was directly split into two. Following the formation of the fissure in the lake, a gigantic white array came into view and floated upwards. Light rays began to extend from it and enveloped the entire lake, while wave after wave of shocking energy fluctuations started erupting from the light array.

At the center most position of the light array was a black sapling that was around half a meter in size. A fluorescence light scattered



from it and it looked just like one of the stars in the night sky. It was extremely beautiful.

“Is that the... Ancient Immortal Yuan Tree?”

Lin Dong gazed at the black sapling at the centre of the large array and gawked for a while before he suddenly asked.

“Yes, this sapling was the result of the Ancient Immortal Yuan Seed that you guys brought back...” replied Yuan Xuanzi.

“So fast?” exclaimed Lin Dong in shock. Hasn’t it only been just over ten days? Yet, the seedling had already grown to such a stage?

“The Ancient Immortal Yuan Tree is just that mysterious. In addition, this ‘Soul Locking Array’ has absorbed all the energy from this domain. Furthermore, the bottom of this lake is connected to the four pill rivers in the Dao Sect and they have been used to nourish this ancient tree.” replied Ying Xuanzi.

An astonished expression appeared on Lin Dong’s face. They had actually connected the four Pill Rivers just to nourish this Ancient Immortal Yuan Tree. Such a huge investment. Surely, only a super sect could afford to raise such a thing. In the hands of another faction, even if they managed to obtain the seed, they would likely be unqualified to groom it.

“When the Ancient Immortal Yuan Tree has thoroughly matured, the training progress of our Dao Sect’s disciples will be

raised to another level. This is extremely important for improving the overall strength of our sect,” said Ying Xuanzi as he looked at the black sapling at the centre of the large array.

Lin Dong nodded his head. He had devoured five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits. Hence, he naturally knew the mysterious effects of this fruit. If they were truly able to raise and produce more of it, it would indeed be a momentous occasion for the Dao Sect.

“It seems that you’re about to make a breakthrough?” asked Ying Xuanzi as he smiled and suddenly changed the topic.

Lin Dong nodded his head again, unsurprised by this. Since Ying Xuanzi could discover the Devouring Ancestral Symbol in his body, how could he possibly hide such a thing...

“Since you have made a big contribution, there will be a need to reward you. This sealing array will be thoroughly sealed off in a couple of days to focus on nourishing the Ancient Immortal Yuan Seed. Before this happens, you can enter the array and cultivate. I think it will be enough to help you with your breakthrough. Besides this, I will personally protect you while you are at it.” Ying Xuanzi said while pointing at the great array at the bottom of the lake.

“In addition, the opening of the Great Desolation Tablet is in half a month. This is an extremely important event for the entire Dao Sect. You should be aware just how tyrannical the Great Desolation Mysterious Scripture is. In the past hundred years, only Zhou Tong had been able to successfully learn it ...”

From the corner of his eyes, Lin Dong saw an unexpected minor disturbance in the peaceful eyes of Ying Xuanzi for the first time when he mentioned Zhou Tong.

“Senior Zhou Tong...” Lin Dong hesitated for a while before he could not resist but ask.

“He is my disciple...” Ying Xuanzi replied in a soft voice.

Lin Dong was faintly startled before proceeding to nod his head. He had never expected that senior Zhou Tong was actually Ying Xuanzi’s disciple. Looks like that matter was truly quite complicated...

“Although you have only joined the Dao Sect for only a short time, you are regarded as the Desolate Hall disciple that has the greatest chance of comprehending the Great Desolate Mysterious Scripture. Of course, don’t feel stressed over this matter. Just focus and try your best. That is enough.” Ying Xuanzi said as he changed the topic. The fluctuations within his eyes settled down extremely quickly.

“Yes.”

Lin Dong nodded his head and did not dare to ask any more questions regarding Zhou Tong.

“Go in.”

Ying Xuanzi shifted his attention towards the bottom of the lake. With a wave of his sleeve, the black sapling was shifted away, revealing a small light array below. Within that light array, was a faint and seemingly majestic fluctuation of energy.

Upon seeing this, Lin Dong did not procrastinate. His body flashed as he dashed towards the bottom of the lake. In a flash, he appeared above the small array, before slowing descending onto it.

Seated on the small array, Lin Dong glanced at his surroundings. From this angle, he could see innumerable threads of energy spreading out in all directions, with him at the center. Looking up, he could faintly see the outline of the mysterious array.

One could tell that this was an array that required quite a large investment. Just by sitting here, Lin Dong could already feel wave after wave of vigorous energy continuously flowing into his body.

“This is really a good place for cultivation...”

Lin Dong could not help but mutter. However, it was a pity that such a good place was being used to raise the Ancient Immortal Yuan Tree. After enjoying it for a while, this place would be thoroughly sealed...

“Let’s begin...”

At the edge of the lake, Ying Xuanzi’s reminder rang out. He

proceeded to change his hand seal, causing the lake to start whistling, while bright strands of light and the gigantic and complex array gradually started to rotate.

Roar Roar!

When the array began to rotate, wave after wave of vigorous energy akin to a tide started to crazily rush in from all directions. In the end, they viciously exploded towards Lin Dong, who was currently seated in the middle of the array.

Huff!

As he gazed at the tangled and boundless amounts of energy that were rumbling and rushing towards him, Lin Dong took a deep breath. He suppressed the faint excitement in his heart and slowly closed his eyes, before Devouring Power suddenly exploded out of him.

Since Ying Xuanzi had already discovered the Devouring Ancestral Symbol in his body, Lin Dong did not need to hide it anymore. Furthermore, he had Ying Xuanzi protecting him. Therefore, even in the entire Eastern Xuan Region, there was hardly anyone who could disrupt him...

Devouring Power burst out, and transformed into a gradually rotating black hole behind Lin Dong's body. It completely devoured the boundless energy that was flooding over...

Under this frantic devouring, the Yuan Power and Mental Energy within Lin Dong's body started to gradually surge towards the critical breakthrough point.

# Chapter 695: Dual Tribulations Once Again

---

The surface of the lake surged and rumbled within the quiet great hall. Wave after wave of exceptionally frightening energy fluctuations spread out continuously from the bottom of the lake, causing a fuzzy distortion within the space of the great hall.

At the bottom of the lake, a person quietly seated in the middle of the great array. His Devouring Power had taken the form of a black hole behind him and was slowly rotating. It was akin to a bottomless pit as it devoured the seemingly endless incoming energy like a whale...

Ying Xuanzi was standing at the edge of the lake with his hands behind his back. He occasionally cast his gaze at Lin Dong, who was at the center of the great array, and would nod slightly from time to time.

“As expected of the Devouring Ancestral Symbol. This rate of absorption far exceeds that of an ordinary individual...”

An aged voice suddenly rang out from behind Ying Xuanzi. Instead of turning around, he merely smiled, “The Devouring Ancestral Symbol is undoubtedly a heavenly treasure. However, if it was given to someone else, it would still be extremely difficult to reach this stage given the status of a low rank empire member.”

“Haha, what sect master means is that even though Lin Dong has a godly treasure, he still knew the importance of discretion. For someone at his age, that is quite impressive.”

An old man wearing a blue robe had unknowingly appeared at behind Ying Xuanzi. His eyes were similarly resting on Lin Dong, who was at the bottom of the lake, as he spoke.

“However, that brat’s good fortune will surely incite jealousy. He actually found the Devouring Ancestral Symbol, the most mysterious of the Ancestral Symbols, in a low rank empire...”

Ying Xuanzi lightly nodded his head in approval before he said, “It is reputed that there are eight Ancestral Symbols in the world and they are all incomparably formidable. Even if an elite practitioner encounters them, they can only subdue one Ancestral Symbol. Only the owner of the Devouring Ancestral Symbol can rely on Devouring Power to fuse the power of the other Ancestral Symbols within his body.”

“Haha, this rumour may not be true. However, in this world, other than those Ancestral Symbols that have yet to appear, the remaining Ancestral Symbol owners are all renowned and famed practitioners. I am afraid there aren’t many people who can successfully steal their Ancestral Symbols. “ replied the blue robed old man.

“I remember that the Palace of Darkness master of the Northern Xuan Region possesses one of the eight Ancestral Symbols, the Darkness Ancestral Symbol... it is their sect’s inheritance. With it, the Palace of Darkness has stood strong in the Northern Xuan Region for thousands of years.



Ying Xuanzi faintly nodded his head before proceeding to ask, “In future, our Dao Sect will also give birth to an elite practitioner that possesses an Ancestral Symbol.”

“Sect master believes that this little one can comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture?” asked the blue robed old man in a soft voice.

“This kid has an extremely tough character. He is ruthless and decisive, yet he knows his own limits and is neither heartless nor wicked. Although no one has successfully understood the Great Desolation Scripture in the past hundred years, the feats performed by this little one have dazzled many. Haha, I think that he might have a chance...” replied Ying Xuanzi.

“Of course, we will have to wait until the Great Desolate Tablet opens to find out. Currently, the top disciples of the other three halls have all successfully understood the other three great mysterious scriptures. If the Desolate Hall is still unable to find someone who can comprehend the Great Desolation Mysterious Scripture this year, it will perhaps fall into trouble.”

Although Lin Dong was not bad and would be able to achieve another breakthrough thanks to the Soul Locking Array, the top disciples from the three other halls were all extremely powerful. Coupled with the power of the three other great mysterious scriptures, it might be difficult for Lin Dong to obtain the upper hand. After all, he would not have five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits to boost his combat capabilities during the competition...

Upon hearing Ying Xuanzi's words, the blue robed old man

faintly nodded his head and hesitated for a moment before speaking, “ The highest ranker in the hall test will become the leader of all the Dao Sect disciples for the upcoming Great Sect Competition. From the looks of it, Ying Xiaoxiao has the highest chance. Furthermore, she is a steady individual and her reputation amongst the four halls is high, making her the most suitable candidate.”

“The Great Sect Competition...”

When these three words were mentioned, a dark glint flashed past Ying Xuanzi’s eyes. In every Great Sect Competition, numerous conflicts would erupt between the disciples from their Dao Sect and those from the Yuan Gate. Furthermore, when both parties were merciless when they fought. However, over the years, the Yuan Gate disciples were typically stronger, therefore, the Dao Sect would often lose some of their disciples. In the most recent competition, even the Sky Hall’s most outstanding disciple had been surrounded and killed by the Yuan Gate disciples.

“Yuan Gate...you’ve gone too far...” Ying Xuanzi slowly said. His eyes stared far into the distance as a chilling aura gradually filled the air.

The blue robed old man grew silent before finally giving a soft sigh. The competition between the super sects was always brutal. Although the Dao Sect was also a super sect, they were obviously weaker than the Yuan Gate. Hence, there were often forced to give way.

Each of the three great sect masters of the Yuan Gate were as

powerful as Ying Xuanzi. Furthermore, there were also a few old monsters that had sealed themselves off from the world. Their foundation was absolutely gigantic and overbearing.

The year when Zhou Tong died, the Dao Sect had almost declared all-out war on the Yuan Gate. However, this notion was thoroughly crushed and oppressed by Ying Xuanzi in the end. This obviously caused many disciples to feel outraged. However, the blue robed old man knew that Ying Xuanzi had secretly struggled with that decision for a long time. After all, Zhou Tong was the disciple that he had been proudest of...

“I hope this little one will be able to comprehend the Great Desolation Mysterious Scripture. If so, we will possess another person who will be able to hold his own in the upcoming Great Sect Competition. It is said that there are quite a few powerful Yuan Gate disciples this time around. Amongst them, is a younger generation member called Liu Hao, and people call him the ‘Little Yuan King’. This younger generation member had exchanged blows with an expert at the Mysterious Life stage and was able to successfully escape, such a feat speaks for itself...”

“There are a quite a few capable individuals that have appeared in the other super sects as well. For example, Ling Qingzhu from the Nine Heavens Supreme Purity Palace. She is extremely powerful and does not lose to Liu Hao at all...”

The blue robed old man went on as a worried light revealed itself in his eyes. When comparing their younger generation members, it was obvious that the Yuan Gate was superior. Obviously, their reputation as the Eastern Xuan Region’s top super sect was well-

deserved.

Ying Xuanzi faintly nodded his head. He naturally knew about these details. However, there was nothing that he could do, therefore, he could only sigh at this moment. He turned his head towards the young man resting at the bottom of the lake and thought, “Amongst the younger generation members of the Dao Sect, though Xiaoxiao is quite powerful, one person cannot hold up the sky alone. If Lin Dong can comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture and boost his strength, he will be able to help to shoulder her burden...”

However, if it were only that easy to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture...

...

Lin Dong's training lasted for ten whole days. With the seemingly infinite amounts of energy from the 'Soul Locking Array', the Yuan Power within his body grew at a frightening speed.

Furthermore, while his Yuan Power grew increasingly powerful, Lin Dong could also sense that the Mental Energy within his Niwan Palace was also climbing at a gratifying speed thanks to this mystical array. It was obvious that Lin Dong's Yuan Power and Mental Energy had benefitted tremendously.

For Lin Dong, these benefits came at the time when the conditions were ripe. In the previous bloody fight, even though he

had used five Ancient Immortal Yuan Fruits, some of their essence and energy had seeped into his body during that intense battle. Hence, with the assistance of the ‘Soul Locking Array’, he was now able to improve rapidly.

Therefore, this quiet training lasted for almost half a month before Lin Dong’s skin started to turn red, as wave after wave of berserk energy started to radiate continuously from his body.

“Is he about to undergo a Nirvana Tribulation...”

At the edge of the lake, Ying Xuanzi immediately discovered the unusual changes around Lin Dong and gave a faint smile. It seemed like Lin Dong had benefitted greatly from this training session.

“Bang Bang!”

Wave after wave of berserk fluctuations continuously radiated from Lin Dong’s body. From a distance away, his scarlet red body looked like red hot coal. Obviously, this was the omen of a Nirvana Tribulation.

However, just as the Nirvana Tribulation was about to erupt, vigorous Mental Energy suddenly started to howl out from Lin Dong’s Niwan Palace. Immediately, storm clouds started to converge in the sky above the great hall.

“Wind and Lightning Tribulation? Dual Tribulation? This kid is truly ambitious.”

Ying Xuanzi felt slightly flabbergasted as he raised his head, before smiling and waving his sleeve. This caused the ceiling of the great hall to unexpectedly crack apart slowly, revealing the boundless sky outside. At this moment, storm clouds had already gathered as silver snakes flashed within. This was the Wind and Lightning Tribulation.

Ying Xuanzi gazed at the surging clouds, before he turned to look at a now scarlet red Lin Dong, who was currently undergoing a Nirvana Tribulation. He did not intend to help Lin Dong. Instead, he observed this scene with interest. After all, he knew that be it the Nirvana Tribulation or the Wind and Lightning Tribulation, both required one to rely on one's own strength. This was an absolutely necessary step that one has to undergo. Only by undergoing such a trial would one's strength truly soar.

Wave after wave of red hot and berserk energy erupted like flood waters from Lin Dong's body. At the same time, scarlet red flames unexpectedly erupted from within Lin Dong's body with a pop sound before crazily wrapping around him as they frantically burned.

Chi Chi!

Under the roasting of those scarlet red flames, Lin Dong's skin started to glow with a green light as green scales started to appear one after another. Furthermore, under the roasting of the Nirvana Flames, which were condensed from the Nirvana Qi from his body, Lin Dong could feel the 'Heavenly Dragon Qi' Qing Zhi had given him show signs of loosening. Strands of mysterious energies

started to radiate out, before assimilating into Lin Dong's muscles and bones...

“Green Heaven Materialized Dragon Skill huh...”

Ying Xuanzi gazed at the green scales on Lin Dong's body that were sparkling with green light before he smiled faintly and murmured, “ It is said that when one completely masters this martial art, the practitioner will have a powerful body that can compete with that of a high class dragon race. This little one is truly fortunate...”

“Roar!”

After Ying Xuanzi's spoke, thunder suddenly boomed in the skies as the storm clouds heaved and surged. An extremely thick lightning snake directly cracked open the horizon and blasted towards Lin Dong.

This lightning snake's speed was extremely fast. In a flash, it flew into the great hall before it ferociously slammed down on Lin Dong's head.

Swoosh!

However, just as the lightning snake was about to strike Lin Dong, a circular black hole started to extend from the crown of his head. Like a bottomless pit, it swallowed the berserk lightning snake in a single gulp.

Chi! Chi!

When the lightning snake entered the black hole, Lin Dong's body started to tremble violently. Strand after strand of lightning started to jump and leap on the surface of his body. Together with the burning Nirvana flames, it looked both dazzlingly and beautiful.

After the lightning snake rushed into the black hole, Lin Dong's face started to twitch for a while, before revealing a trace of pain, which was rapidly retrained moments later.

“Boom boom!”

After the first lightning bolt descended, the storm clouds in the billowing storm clouds grew increasingly violent. Soon after, thick lightning bolts started to pour down one after the other in torrents like a thunderstorm with extremely loud rumbling noises.

Ying Xuanzi crossed his hands behind his back as he raised his head and observed the disorderly dance of lightning snakes within the great hall. Those berserk lightning snakes were completely devoured by the black hole above Lin Dong. After undergoing a transformation within it, the resulting energy was sent into Lin Dong's body.

With his sharp eyes, Ying Xuanzi could tell that this process was very smooth. From the looks of it, Lin Dong was quite proficient in utilizing the Devouring Ancestral Symbol. In fact, it seems like the



so-called dual tribulation would hardly pose a threat to Lin Dong...

The descent of crazy lightning snakes from the sky lasted for more than ten minutes before gradually weakening. After the final lightning snake descended, the pervasive storm clouds finally began to scatter. Sunlight started to seep through the gaps and passed through the ceiling of the great hall before landing on Lin Dong's body.

“Chi!”

Under the illumination of the sunlight, Lin Dong's scarlet red body started to recover bit by bit. In a flash, his tightly closed eyelids suddenly opened as a piercing brilliance shot out from his pupils. Instantly, the water around him exploded, causing huge waves to form.

Huff!

Lin Dong deeply exhaled a ball of white qi with a berserk flavor. With a twist of his body, he directly leapt out from the great array and landed beside Ying Xuanzi, before speaking in a respectful manner, “Many thanks to sect master.”

“You did this with your own abilities. The only thing I did was provide a venue for you...” replied Ying Xuanzi with a casual smile.

Lin Dong also smiled in return. Just as he was about to speak, his complexion suddenly changed faintly. He could sense a sudden

transmission of an extremely mysterious and majestic fluctuation from an area in the sky. That direction... the Desolate Hall...

Ying Xuanzi also turned around, looking towards the same direction as he gently smiled.

“The Great Desolate Tablet has finally opened. Look’s like the Dao Sect is going to be lively again...”

# Chapter 696: Great Desolate Tablet

---

There was an extremely large mountain deep within Desolate Hall. The mountain was withered yellow in color and there was not the slightest greenery on top. From a far distance away, it looked like a barren land filled with a desolate aura.

In the sky above this mountain peak, an enormous Pill River whistled past. At this moment, this Pill River, which would usually not stop flowing, revealed a strange phenomenon. Not only did the whistling speed slowed down, but an incomparably vast and mighty Nirvana Qi was continuously pouring down from the Pill River. That manner was as though a huge hole had been formed in the Pill River.

Nirvana Qi whizzed down like floodwater before it finally poured onto the large mountaintop.

Buzz buzz.

That mountain actually began to tremble when the Pill River poured down. Rock fragments continued to fall and numerous large crack lines began to form on the mountain.

Swoosh swoosh!

When this drastic change occurred on the mountaintop, countless rushing wind sounds were also emitted from the sky all around. After a couple of minutes, the surrounding sky, large trees and mountain were immediately occupied by a densely packed sea

of people. The originally quiet mountain forest turned incomparably lively at this moment.

Various noises gathered together and spread in a deafening manner. Even the clouds in the sky were scattered.

These people not only consisted of the disciples from Desolate Hall. Even the disciples from the three other halls had all rushed over. This was because they were clearly aware that what was going to happen next could perhaps alter the ranking of the four halls.

Other than the Hall Competition, it was extremely rare to see the disciples from all four halls gathering together. Even when the disciples from Sky Hall learned the “Sky Emperor Scripture”, it did not cause such a commotion. From this, one could tell the degree of respect the Great Desolation Scripture had in the hearts of the Dao Sect’s disciples...

Swoosh!

Numerous rays of light rushed over from the distant sky. Finally, when they were about to reach this mountaintop that had undergone a drastic change, they revealed themselves. The two of them in front were Chen Zhen and Wu Dao.

There were six people following behind them. All six of them were quite old. Their auras were all powerful and mighty and were not the least bit weaker than Chen Zhen.

Amongst the six, three of them were not strangers. They were the deputy hall chiefs of the three other halls whom Lin Dong had met when he first entered Dao Sect. Clearly, the remaining three, who had even more powerful auras than them, were naturally the chief of the three other halls!

This time around, the opening of the Great Desolate Tablet had actually attracted all the three other hall chiefs over...

“Even the chief of Sky, Earth and Flood Halls have come...”

Jiang Hao, one of the senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall, stood in the midair and looked at the few figures in front. He involuntarily smacked his mouth and laughed.

“What is there to be surprised about. Other than these hall chiefs, I believe that perhaps even some extremely senior elders are observing this place secretly. Studying the Great Desolation Scripture is a major event for our Dao Sect.” Pang Tong said.

“If we can successfully comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture this time around, our Desolate Hall will likely be able to improve its ranking in the upcoming Hall Competition.” Fang Yun stared at the shaking mountain and was ready to get into the action.

Pang Tong turned silent when he heard this and he did not utter even a single word. Being the most experienced senior direct disciple in Desolate Hall, he clearly understood the difficulty of comprehending the Great Desolation Scripture. In the past

hundred years, everyone was left disappointed after the Great Desolate Tablet opened up. Who knows if today will be the exception?

“Hey, where is that fellow, Lin Dong? If he ends up missing such a major event, would he not end up knocking himself to death from regret?” Fang Yun’s eyes swept around before asking in a surprised manner.

“He went to meet the sect master half a month ago. They brought back the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed and performed a deed of great merit. The sect master should have given him a reward. However, you can be rest assured that given his character, it is impossible for him to miss this chance to study the Great Desolate Scripture.” Pang Tong said.

“That fellow Lin Dong... I heard that he even wounded Yao Ling, who was ranked fourth on the sects’ wanted list. What an abnormal fellow...” Jiang Hao laughed bitterly.

“Junior Lin Dong is also a disciple of our Desolate Hall. The stronger he becomes, the better it is for our Desolate Hall. You should not feel unhappy just because you lost to him.” Pang Tong knitted his brows and lectured. Being the most experienced senior direct disciple, his prestige in the Desolate Hall was clearly quite high.

“How is that possible. I am not such a petty person. If he can comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture this time around, I will be happy as well. Otherwise, our Desolate Hall will end up losing face again during the upcoming Hall Competition.” Jiang

Hao spoke helplessly.

Pang Tong nodded with satisfaction when he heard this. He was just about to speak when a great number of rushing wind sound were suddenly transmitted from a distance away. After which, dozens of figures rushed over and landed a short distance away from them.

The surrounding Dao Sect's disciples immediately erupted into an uproar when this group appeared. Those many gazes that shot over also became a lot more respectful.

“That is big senior sister Xiaoxiao and her group... There is also senior Qing Ye from Earth Hall and senior Mu Li from Flood Hall. Tsk tsk, it is rumored that the three of them have all comprehended the mysterious scriptures of their respective halls. They can be considered as the most outstanding trio amongst the Dao Sect younger generation members...”

“That's right. It is especially the case for big senior sister Xiaoxiao. It is rumored that she has reached nine Yuan Nirvana Stage. Along with the strength of the “Sky Emperor Scripture”, it is likely that she would be hard pressed to find a worthy opponent unless one is an expert who has stepped into the Mysterious Life Stage.”

“You have forgotten about Lin Dong from Desolate Hall. Previously, he fought with Yao Ling, a former deacon of Yuan Gate and even managed to injure him. That Yao Ling is an expert who had stepped into the nine Yuan Nirvana Stage a long time ago.”

“Yes, I have also heard about this. If this is true, that Lin Dong is simply too perverse. Coincidentally, he is also a disciple of Desolate Hall. This time around, he should also possess the qualifications to study the Great Desolation Scripture. I wonder if he will succeed...”

“No one knows. Although his performance has been extremely stellar ever since he joined Dao Sect, the Great Desolation Scripture is something that even big senior sister Xiaoxiao was unable to learn...”

This group of human figures that broke through the air and arrived was naturally Ying Xiaoxiao, Ying Huanhuan and the rest. Following beside them were Qing Ye from Earth Hall, Mu Li from the Flood Hall and some other extremely famous senior direct disciples from the other three halls. This lineup was considered to be the most magnificent one amongst the current younger generation members in Dao Sect. Therefore, all the gazes in the mountains gathered towards them when they appeared.

Ying Xiaoxiao and Ying Huanhuan, who were standing in front, were naturally the focal point of all their attention. However, comparatively speaking, most of the gazes from the younger disciples were gathered on the young lady with a black ponytail, who appeared extremely pure and lively.

This did not mean that Ying Xiaoxiao lacked charm. However, her prestige amongst the younger disciples was simply too high. Furthermore, her usual cool demeanor also caused some disciples to treat her with exceptional respect. Hence, they naturally did not



dare to look at her in the same way as they looked at Ying Huanhuan.

Although Ying Huanhuan was merely wearing a simple white blouse and pants today, her figure appeared exceptionally lithe and delicate. Her clothes outlined a figure that was filled with liveliness and attracted a great attention. Together with her ponytail that jumped gently when she turned her head and the gentle blink of her bright charming large eyes, her appearance was so innocent that it was a complete mess.

Ying Huanhuan's large eyes scanned her surroundings. However, she did not find that familiar figure. Her eyebrows were bunched up as she said, "That fellow Lin Dong is actually not around? Is he going to give this opportunity a miss?"

"It is not strange for him to do so. Although junior Lin Dong brother is extremely talented, he has merely just joined Desolate Hall." Standing beside her, Qing Ye laughed faintly.

"The reason that fellow joined Desolate Hall is because he is after the Great Desolation Scripture. How is it possible for him to give up on this opportunity? Moreover, he is already a senior direct disciple of Desolate Hall and he possesses the qualifications to study the Great Desolation Scripture," Ying Huanhuan rolled her eyes at Qing Ye and said.

Qing Ye felt extremely displeased in his heart when he saw Ying Huanhuan talking about Lin Dong as if she was extremely familiar with him. However, he did not reveal anything as he did not want to be seen as a petty person. Immediately, he could only turn his

head in a somewhat unnatural manner and softly speak to someone else besides him.

Ying Xiaoxiao quietly shook her head when she saw this scene but did not say anything else. She merely threw her gaze towards the shaking mountain. Following the spread of the crack line, a greyish-yellow colored gigantic tablet was slowly breaking out of the mountain at that spot. A desolate aura that originated from the ancient times quietly fluctuated within this place.

Ying Xiaoxiao's eyes were somewhat complicated as she watched the mountain. Her character was quite haughty. Back then, she arrogantly tried to learn the Great Desolation Scripture. However, she ultimately failed after sitting there for months. This caused her to suffer quite a heavy blow...

“Great Desolate Tablet...”

Every pair of eyes in this place turned towards the enormous ten thousand feet large tablet that had broken out of the mountain. That large tablet was just like a mountain that was towering above the mountain peak. Its towering and majestic manner caused it to look just like a divine artifact from the ancient times.

“Elder sister, do you think that anyone from Desolate Hall will succeed this time around?” Ying Huanhuan's large eyes were a little shaken as she looked at that enormous object that had broken out from the mountain. After which, she tugged Ying Xiaoxiao wrist and softly asked.

“Jiang Hao and the other three hardly stand a chance.”

Ying Xiaoxiao glanced at Ying Huanhuan. She paused for a moment before she continued, “If it is Lin Dong... he may stand a decent chance.”

“Oh...” Ying Huanhuan nodded quietly. Her long eyelashes blinked gently. The expression on her small face was a little complicated.

“Why?” Ying Xiaoxiao asked uncertainly.

“If that fellow really comprehends it... wouldn’t that meant that I will have to do whatever he says...” Ying Huanhuan hesitated for a moment before she spoke haltingly with a reddened face.

Even Ying Xiaoxiao felt neither able to laugh nor cry when she heard these words. She glared at Ying Huanhuan. “You deserve it.”

Rumble!

The mountain, which was shaking violently, finally came to a gradual stop. Everyone raised their heads and looked at the top of the mountain, where an enormous stone tablet, whose top had almost touched the Pill River, had appeared. All of them were as tiny as ants before that stone tablet.

This was the Great Desolate Tablet.

The most powerful scripture of the four great mysterious scriptures, the Great Desolation Scripture, was hidden within. However, since a hundred years ago, the question on whether anyone could understand it has been left unanswered.

# Chapter 697: Ripple

---

The collapse of the mountain finally slowly came to a stop at this moment. A thousand feet tall stone tablet now stood atop the mountain peak. The ancient yellowish hue on the tablet was due to centuries of sedimentation. An unusual and ancient ripple was emitted from the stone tablet, causing a desolate aura to fill the area.

A desolate aura enveloped the land. It was as though the colour of the sky had turned yellowish. In that moment, many felt as though they had been shuttled to an ancient land...

Everyone's expression grew solemn as the desolate aura pervaded the air, while the commotion slowly died down. Numerous intensely interested and respectful pairs of eyes stared at the enormous stone

"It has finally opened again." Wu Dao looked at the incomparably large stone tablet. Emotion flashed across his eyes as he muttered.

"Ever since our Dao Sect discovered this stone tablet back then, we decided to establish our sect in this place. The Desolate Hall was also born as a result. Thousands of years have passed. However, only a rare few individuals have managed to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture..." Chen Zhen softly sighed.

"Old fellow, you really speak unceremoniously. The Great Desolation Scripture is no ordinary martial arts. If it were so easy

for an ordinary disciple to successfully learn it, the strength of our Dao Sect would likely have long since exceeded the Yuan Gate.” A burly middle-aged man standing beside Chen Zhen laughed and chided.

This person was wearing black robes, and his demeanor was quite extraordinary. Both of his eyes swept around like hidden lightning, causing even space itself to become slightly distorted. He was the current master of the Sky Hall, Qi Lei.

Chen Zhen also smiled when he heard this. After which, he glanced at the sky and said, “It is about time...”

“It seems that Lin Dong has yet to arrive.” Wu Hao’s eyes swept around before speaking with a frown.

“Relax, how is it possible for that little fellow to miss such an event...”

Chen Zhen smiled as he shook his head. He turned around and looked at Jiang Hao and the three others senior direct disciples of the Desolate Hall. With a deep voice, he said, “All of you should prepare yourselves. Remember, don’t force yourselves. This martial art relies on one’s luck and affinity and it cannot be forced.”

“Understood!”

Jiang Hao and the other three replied respectfully, while

excitement coloured their faces. After which, they exchanged a knowing glance as their bodies rushed out, before landing in front of the stone tablet at the mountaintop, under the countless gazes from the surrounding mountains.

There were a couple of green rocks protruding from the cliff at that spot. The green rocks were as smooth as mirrors. They sat on them and raised their heads to gaze upon the thousand feet tall tablet. At this moment, the feeling of being an ant suddenly arose in their hearts.

Jiang Hao and the other three had grave expressions as they sat on the green rocks. Although they hid it well, there was still a trace of panic deep within their eyes. It was due to the enormous pressure that the enormous stone tablet gave.

After Jiang Hao landed in front of the stone tablet, some noise once again arose from the surrounding area. Soon after, some people seemed to have discovered that something was missing. Immediately, their eyes began to sweep all over the mountains in an attempt to find that figure...

“That fellow is really a bigshot. Everyone is always waiting for him...”

Ying Huanhuan naturally understood who these people were looking for. Lin Dong might have just joined the Dao Sect but his reputation had soared rapidly. Not only did he obtain an impressive result at the bottom of the Pill River, which had surpassed even senior Zhou Tong, but he had even successfully learnt the Desolate Demon Eye that senior Zhou Tong was unable

to learn. Furthermore, he was also chiefly responsible for bringing back the Immortal Yuan Ancient Seed...

These various achievements were sufficient to allow Lin Dong to become a dazzling new star within the Dao Sect. This time around, everyone undoubtedly believed that he was the one who had the highest chances of understanding the Great Desolation Scripture.

“His previous achievements are simply far too outstanding...” Ying Xiaoxiao softly said.

“Oh?” Ying Huanhuan was startled when she heard this. Her big eyes suspiciously watched Ying Xiaoxiao. Clearly, she did not quite understand the meaning behind her words.

“Lin Dong is quite a prideful person. This was something that one could see ever since he joined the Desolate Hall. He was using senior Zhou Tong as a benchmark.

Ying Xiaoxiao’s eyes looked at the enormous stone tablet before she slowly said, “As a fellow disciple of the Desolate Hall, he is unwilling to see his path being overshadowed by that figure. Therefore, he wants to surpass senior Zhou Tong.”

“His potential can be ranked amongst the top three within the current Dao Sect. It is likely that his future achievements will be quite substantial. However, the monstrosity of genius senior Zhou Tong is sufficient to cause many geniuses to feel inferior. Using him as a benchmark is not a good idea. Should he fail, he would likely find it difficult to overcome that shadow.”



“There are some people who will not be hurt even if they fall...”

Ying Xiaoxiao laughed bitterly when she spoke until this point. She softly said, “Lin Dong is aiming too high. I’m afraid that should he meet a setback, he will end up suffering quite a big blow.”

When Ying Huanhuan heard Ying Xiaoxiao words, her brows slightly knitted together, before she spoke, “Elder sister is worried that Lin Dong will not recover from should he fail to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture?”

“It would not be to the extent of not recovering from this setback. What he has been through, perhaps far exceeds what I have experienced. However, I’m afraid that this setback will affect his resilience. After all, it has been a smooth sailing trip for him on this journey of challenging senior Zhou Tong.”

Ying Xiaoxiao shook her head and said, “However, the ones before were merely small tests. The current one... is the true gordian knot.”

Ying Huanhuan’s bright eyes blinked gently. She thought for a moment before raising her small face. Sunlight shone onto her exquisite face, and she hesitated for a while longer before speaking, “Elder sister, although I do not know what Lin Dong has experienced, I think that elder sister has underestimated that fellow’s resilience. Moreover, I have never seen that fellow fear anything. Even when he stayed behind alone to block Yao Ling and

the Devil Seal Mass, I did not see any fear in his eyes...”

“Moreover, I think that even though senior Zhou Tong enjoys a reputation that is greater than father within the hearts of our Dao Sect disciples, it is likely that Lin Dong does not feel too much respect. He only views senior Zhou Tong as someone whom he will surpass on his journey...”

The sunlight from the sky was sprinkled down while she spoke, shining on the pure and exquisite small face of the young lady. A light arc extended along her white chin, causing her to appear extremely beautiful.

The young lady at this moment also appeared to have recalled what Lin Dong had told her in the mountain crevice. She was simply unable to imagine how Lin Dong had already understood how to hide his hatred like a snake in the abyss and quietly evolve, when he was merely just a boy, who was even younger than she currently was. After enduring for so many years, he ultimately relied on his own strength to kill his enemy, who had once been able to easily destroy his small family...

Ying Huanhuan was truly unable to imagine how someone like that who possessed such frightening resilience, would end up being unable to recover from this so-called failure.

Ying Xiaoxiao was also stunned by Ying Huanhuan’s words. She immediately turned her head and stared at the young lady beside her. A moment later, the corners of her mouth lifted into a half smile. “From the looks of it, you seemed to think very highly of him?”

“I am merely speaking the truth. Elder sister, you should not speak nonsense!” Ying Huanhuan’s face turn red as she mumbled.

Ying Xiaoxiao declined to comment. She continued, “Since you think so highly of him, let’s see what happens. This time around, he faces quite a huge amount of pressure. Should he fail to understand the scripture, it would be unavoidable for there to be some gossip. Whether he can avoid it will depend entirely on his ability.”

Ying Xiaoxiao’s eyes suddenly moved after her voice sounded. She turned towards the distant sky and smiled, “He has arrived...”

Swoosh!

Just after Ying Xiaoxiao’s voice sounded, a hurried rushing wind sound was suddenly heard in the distance. Immediately, the gazes on the mountains swiftly turned towards that direction. The atmosphere also turned fiery hot.

“Lin Dong has finally arrived... I was under the impression that he had given up.”

“Heh, I wonder if he is able to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture. His previous achievements are merely child’s play when compared to senior Zhou Tong. The current one will truly test his ability.”

“That’s right.”

Numerous private conversations spread like waves amongst the human sea. The rushing wind sound became increasingly loud while the voices spread. A few seconds later, a figure dashed through the air and appeared in the sky.

“My two teacher uncles, this disciple is late.”

When Lin Dong appeared in the sky, he was initially a little stunned by the densely packed sea of people in the mountains. Only after that did he raise his head and looked at Chen Zhen and Wu Dao. His voice contained an apologetic tone.

“Mm, it is fine since you made it here.” Chen Zhen smilingly nodded. His eyes contained a glint as they swept over Lin Dong, before they suddenly focused. With his eyes, he was naturally able to tell that Lin Dong’s strength had advanced quite greatly during the past half a month.

“You...”

Chen Zhen exchanged glances with Wu Dao. They could see joy and surprise in each other’s eyes.

“Since you have arrived, you should head over. Remember do not force it. Although the Great Desolation Scripture is powerful, the most important thing is still one’s self.” Wu Dao waved his hand and laughed.

“This disciple will remember your advice.”

Lin Dong grinned and nodded. After which, he turned his head to look at the incomparably large Desolate Tablet. He inhaled a deep breath of air and suppressed the surging excitement within his heart. Ever since he had joined the Dao Sect, the thing that he coveted the most was naturally the Great Desolation Scripture, the strongest of the Dao Sect’s four great mysterious scriptures. This opportunity had finally arrived.

Lin Dong focused on the Great Desolate Tablet, while his body moved and floated out. In the end, it slowly landed on a green rock.

Lin Dong finally sensed the vast and mighty Desolate Qi when he stood in front of the Great Desolate Tablet. When he stood at this place, it was as though he had returned to the vast ancient land of the past.

Buzz!

While Lin Dong immersed himself within this grand vastness, a slight ripple suddenly scattered from within his body. Immediately, his pupils abruptly shrunk.

# Chapter 698: Desolate

---

That ripple was minute and was extremely sudden. However since the ripple had originated from within Lin Dong's body, he was instantly able to detect it. This also caused his pupils to show signs of tightly contracting.

It was because this ripple was emitted by the Mysterious Stone Talisman.

Furthermore, this ripple was somewhat strange. To be precise, it was a clearly an obvious response to something. This was the first time something like this had ever occurred since the Mysterious Stone Talisman had come into Lin Dong's possession.

“Why does the Mysterious Stone Talisman respond to the Great Desolate Tablet?”

Lin Dong frown as he muttered to himself. He lifted his gaze and let it rest on the vast and majestic tablet. The surface of the tablet had gradually turned yellowish due to the passage of time. Furthermore, the surface was not completely bright and clean, and there were quite a few potholes, while a few minute cracks spread out on its surface like an insect. However this was not a big problem for the gigantic tablet.

Lin Dong's gaze carefully swept pass every inch the stone tablet. After several minutes, his eyes suddenly focussed as he looked towards a particular spot on the stone tablet. On the rough surface of the stone tablet were some faint small black dots that was

extremely hard to be discovered by eye.

When Lin Dong's eyes landed on those black dots, he suddenly felt the Mysterious Stone Talisman within him started to shake as it emitted wave after wave of fluctuation.

A glint of bewilderment flashed within deep within Lin Dong's eyes as his gaze swept all around. He discovered that the number of small black dots on the surface of the stone tablet was not small. However due to the enormous size of the stone tablet, coupled with the passing of time, leaving another six small black dots seemed to be nothing but ordinary! If not for the Mysterious Stone Talisman within his body, even Lin Dong would have ignored these little black dots that seemed totally ordinary.

Lin Dong stared at the little black dots and hesitated for a moment. Finally, he took a step forward, raised a finger and touched one of the little black dots.

Lin Dong, Jiang Hao and the other three were extremely close to the stone tablet. Previously, Jiang Hao and the rest were paying extreme attention as they stared at the stone tablet and had also reached out and touched the surface with their hands. Therefore, the people around were not too surprised at Lin Dong's action.

And just as the surrounding gazes moved away from him, Lin Dong's finger lightly descended on the little black dot on the surface of the tablet...

At the moment of contact, Lin Dong's complexion rapidly

changed.

At the point of contact, a trace of fluctuation was transmitted into Lin Dong's body. That fluctuation was ice-cold without any hint of vitality. Gradually, it brought along a mysterious evil influence that could seemingly erase the myriad of living organisms from the world...

Lin Dong's finger had only brushed past the little black dot for an instant before drawing back. After pulling his finger back, his face whitened as he stared in shock at the little black dots.

That fluctuation was extremely bone-chilling and mysterious without any trace of vitality within it. Although Lin Dong knew that when one managed to reach the mysterious Death stage, one's body would produce extremely destructive Death Qi, the sensation from those black dots were inherently different.

Furthermore the most important matter was that this was not the first time that Lin Dong had seen such a sinister and evil thing...

This kind of bone-chillingly evil feeling would blot the skies. And every living thing within the world would seemingly be killed and destroy wherever it passed...

Lin Dong pursed his lips and thought about his time in the ancient sect. The previous owner of the Devouring Ancestral Symbol had seemingly perished due to some unknown sinister and dark thing. Lin Dong had felt the same kind of fluctuation from the



surface of the Great Desolate Tablet today. What did this mean?

“What exactly is this thing?”

Lin Dong muttered to himself in a low voice. Even something as strong as that ancient sect or someone as strong as that black-eyed old man who had the Devouring Ancestral Symbol had difficulty in resisting that unknown black thing. What exacting was it?

While Lin Dong was pondering about this before the stone tablet, Jiang Hao and the other three had already prepared to proceed on as they sat on a green rocks in from the stone tablet with solemn expressions.

“Lin Dong.”

Wu Dao gave a shout, which finally managed to wake Lin Dong from his absent-minded state. After taking a deep look at the stone tablet in front of him, he retreated to the green rock and proceeded to sit down.

Upon seeing the five take their seats, Wu Dao gave a faint nod before waving his sleeve. Desolate Force that blotted the skies surged out of his body before turning into a beam and descending onto the surface of the Great Desolate Tablet.

Buzz Buzz!

Following the descent of the gigantic beam of Desolate Force, the

tablet immediately started to send out minute vibrations. Ray after ray of dusky yellow light started to shoot out from the body of the tablet, before completely enveloping Lin Dong and the other four. The instant Lin Dong was enveloped by the light, his body suddenly trembled as he felt an irresistible attractive force erupting from the surface of the tablet. In the next instant, his consciousness started to grow blurry as his vision rapidly turned to darkness...

Innumerable gazes gathered on the five human figures that are enveloped by pillars of light. From the looks of it, it seemed that the process towards the comprehension of the Great Desolate Tablet had already begun.

“Big sis, what exactly will one encounter when comprehending the Great Desolation Scripture?” Yin Huanhuan was wide-eyed as she gazed at the five unmoving figures within the pillars of light. She could not help but ask Ying Huanhuan as she seemed to be the only one here who had experienced it.

After her question appeared, Qing Ye and the rest turned their heads and stared at Ying Xiaoxiao. It was obvious that they were interested in this question.

Ying Xiaoxiao frowned a little. She looked absent minded at the gigantic stone tablet, before replying in a soft voice, “The Great Desolate Tablet is extremely powerful...”

“Yes, I know. Our Dao Sect elders had combined their efforts many times but were unable to move the Great Desolate Tablet or control when it opens. They can only assist it with the power of

the pill river every once in awhile.” Ying Huanhuan continuously nodded her head in agreement.

“When comprehending the Great Desolate Tablet, one would be sucked into the space within the tablet, In there is a boundless and desolate land. It has no end and no signs of life, only desolation, let alone any inkling of the Great Desolation Scripture...”

“It should be some type of test right? Did senior sister Xiaoxiao manage to understand anything?” Qing Ye asked thoughtfully.

Ying Xiaoxiao shot a look at him. This made Qing Ye understand as he resentfully laughed for a while. If Ying Xiaoxiao had managed to pass, she would not have failed in the comprehension...

“After I entered, I did not walk at all and just sat there for a very long time.” replied Ying Xiaoxiao in a soft voice.

“Coping with ever changing chaos by being as steady as a rock.”praised Mu Li from the Flood Hall. He was not trying to flatter anyone. Compared to walking around in confusion and wasting energy, it would be much better to calm one’s heart and start to ponder on how to overcome such a trial.

“However it was regretful that I was still unable to overcome that trial. Perhaps I’m unable to comprehend the true essence of desolation...” exclaimed Ying Xiaoxiao with a voice brimming with regret.

“If it were so easy to overcome it, the Great Desolate Tablet would not have attracted that much attention.”

Mu Li gave a smile before turning his gaze towards the five figures in front of the stone tablet and said, “ I wonder if the five of them will be able attain anything this time...”

“I’m also looking forward to it.”

Ying Xiaoxiao said while slowly nodding her head. Her eyes shifted slightly as she shot an extra glance at the youthful figure on the furthest left, Lin Dong...

“What is this damned place...”

The sky was filled with a dusky grey color without any cracks. It was as if poison had yet to completely separate from the sky when this space was born.

Under the dusky skies was a boundless and desolate land as far as one’s eyes could see. The ground was present in a dusky yellow colour with an occasional appearance of dried grass. However there was no life here. Just a few cracks that spread out on the ground and extended past one’s line of sight into the distance.

Currently, there was a human figure on the boundless land without any ends looking helplessly at this scene as he sighed at the heavens.

The human figure was naturally the Lin Dong that had entered the Great Desolate Tablet. He stared at this seemingly ancient and endless land with a unconcealable bitter smile on his face.

“This should be the Great Desolate Tablet’s trial...”

Lin Dong raised his head as he scanned his surroundings. After a single look, he saw that the extreme limits of his sight was still the same repetitive desolate land.

His tiny and insignificant body stood up in this boundless land. This kind of desolation could seemingly turn people into soil to be buried here forever. It made one feel as if one was unable to breath.

“Hu”

Lin Dong exhaled a deeply as his eyes gradually hardened. Since he had already arrived, he should see exactly what the Great Desolate Tablet wanted to do...

“Let’s go!”

Lin Dong said while grinning. This was his choice, which was completely different from Ying Xiaoxiao’s. He did not like the idea of painfully sitting down quietly. Even if it might be possible that he was only wasting energy, he wanted to personally give it a try!

The young man trekked forward on this boundless land. The look

in his eyes made was one that wanted to crack open the desolation within this stretch land. However, maybe even Ling Dong himself was unable to imagine that this walk of his would last for an entire month...

# Chapter 699: You are Sick

---

Sha.

A pair of feet wearily trudged on the dried, cracked and dusky yellow ground. A few clouds of dust rose along with his movements, and it felt as if even the dust itself did not have the slightly bit of energy.

Lin Dong raised his head and stared numbly at the unending barren land around him. His originally keen and acute gaze unexpectedly turned somewhat blank at this point in time.

He had already been travelling for a month...

After a month, all he saw was the same unending barren land. A dark and gloomy yellow seemed to bob up and down as it continuously reflected in his pupils. It seemed that even the colour of his pupils was being changed due to this endless barren land.

After walking for a month, Lin Dong's skin had already turned withered and tinged with yellow. His black hair had also dried up and turned yellow. If one were to see him from far, he would look just like a terminally ill person.

Lin Dong licked his dry, rough and pale lips, before stretching out his hands. His originally slender hands had turned abnormally rough. Soon after, he slowly clenched his fists. The abundant and vigorous energy they once held had already faded away...

This barren land was absorbing his energy.

Lin Dong could feel that as he was travelling across this domain, his energy was slowly fading bit by bit. He had previously attempted to quietly sit down in order to defend himself against this erosion. However, it was of no avail. Lin Dong knew that once his energy had completely dissipated, he would have failed the trial. As for the Great Desolation Mysterious Scripture, that was simply out of the question...

“As expected, this is not simple at all.”

Lin Dong murmured to himself while bitterly laughing. He looked down at a stalk of withered grass below his feet, which still had a withered flower attached to it. Bending down to pick it up, he touched it with his finger, causing the flower to transform into dust and scatter away with the wind.

“However...it would be too embarrassing to give up now...”

A somewhat ugly arc appeared from the corners of Lin Dong's mouth. After a while he spat out a mouthful of air before dragging his seemingly lead filled-feet as he continued his slow walk forward.

Hu

As Lin Dong continued to trudge on, at another spot in this



endless barren land, stood a muscular and sturdy figure. Swaying to and fro, he finally collapsed powerlessly with a loud thud. His entire body had withered, however, no fresh blood flowed out. Specks of light emerged from within his body as his body continued to disappear.

As the specks of light started to rise from between his eyes, an unwilling and deeply tired expression filled Jiang Hao's cracked face.

On the surrounding ground were a few cracks. Obviously, these cracks were forcefully created by him. However, in this strange place, it was obvious that using force alone was not going to solve the problem.

“I've failed...”

Jiang Hao muttered to himself as his vision started to turn blurry. After a while, his body finally turned completely into specks of light and disappeared from this boundless barren land.

Following his disappearance, the land turned even more deathly still, as a dark and gloomy atmosphere filled the area, as if the land had died.

One month within the Great Desolate Tablet was equivalent to one month outside.

Although one month had past, the skies and forests surrounding

the Great Desolate Tablet were still filled with a large crowd of people. This crowd apparently did not disperse even as time passed. On the contrary, as time continued to pass, even more senior direct disciples arrived after hearing the news. Currently, the entire spectacle was quite majestic and vast.

At this moment, every pair of eyes from the surrounding mountains and forests were locked onto the five glowing pillars of light in front of the Great Desolate Tablet. Within the five pillars of light sat five cross-legged figures. They were as still as monks in meditation.

Hovering in the sky, Chen Zhen, Wu Dao and the rest all had solemn expressions. During the past one month, they did not move as well and continued to observe the five as well as the Great Desolate Tablet.

Buzz!

A faint buzzing noise suddenly rang out within the quiet mountain range. Immediately, everyone's attention turned to focus on one of the light pillars in front of the Great Desolate Tablet.

The pillar of light gradually dimmed...

“Jiang Hao has failed...” said Ying Xiaoxiao in a low voice, while quietly clenching her slim and tender lily-white hands after seeing this scene.

Upon hearing her words, there were a slight change in Ying Huanhuan and Qing Ye's expressions. Only at this moment, did they finally realize the dreadfulness of the Great Desolate Tablet.

Under the attentive gazes of countless people, the pillar of light started to rapidly weaken before completely dissipating with a cracking sound. After losing the light pillar, Jiang Hao's body fell, back facing the ground, his face as white as sheet.

“Sigh.”

Chen Zhen gave a soft sigh before waving of his sleeve. A gentle wave of energy descended down towards Jiang Hao and supported him, before some Desolate Hall disciples rapidly came forward to help him.

“They were able to endure for one month. That is already quite decent...”said Wu Dao after remaining silent for a while.

Chen Zhen laughed bitterly, before nodding his head and saying softly, “Let's wait and see...”

As they were talking, Chen Zhen's eyes could not help but shoot a worried look at Lin Dong's body. With his shrewd and ruthless eyesight, he could tell that Lin Dong was not in good shape. However, at this moment, there was no way for anyone to help him. Within the Great Desolate Tablet, one could only rely on oneself...

Under the anticipation of innumerable people, time continued to pass quietly. Unknowingly, another half a month had passed.

During this half month, Chen Zhen, Wu Dao and the rest's expression had grown increasingly tense. From time to time, their actions revealed some impatience. It was obvious that their hearts were not tranquil and calm. That was because, Fang Yun and Song Zhou had also failed after Jiang Hao...

Furthermore, most importantly, Pang Tong's light pillar, the disciple with the most experience in Desolate Hall, had started to dim. It was obvious that he was about to fail too.

Within a short half a month, four out of the five senior direct disciples in Desolate Hall had already failed miserably!

Crack.

The pillar of light around Pang Tong's body finally dissipated completely. A disciple was already prepared as he immediately rushed over and carefully supported his body. Looking at Pang Tong's deathly pale face, feelings of dread inevitably surfaced within his heart. The Great Desolate Tablet was truly dreadful... even the most talented Desolate Hall direct disciples had failed one after another...

After Pang Tong was carried away, the originally peaceful and quiet atmosphere started to turn sad and depressive. It felt as if the air had solidified.

“Only Lin Dong is left...” said Ying Xiaoxiao with a soft sigh.

Ying Huanhuan gently nodded her head as she bit her red lips. Her fine and slender hands were already twisted together, causing a dark green colour to appear on her originally semi transparent jade-like skin.

Two figures were standing at a mountain peak some distance away from the Great Desolate Tablet. Both of their gazes shot through space and looked at the area where the vast crowd were waiting.

“Lin Dong doesn’t seem to be in good shape...” said the blue-robed old man who was standing beside Ying Xuanzi.

“He might be able to endure five more days.”

Ying Xuanzi said with a soft voice before giving a helpless sigh. Were they all going to fall again this time?

After five days, it was still the same...

On the fifth day, when the scorching sun was rising towards the centre of the sky, a pale white colour suddenly appeared on Chen Zhen, Wu Dao and the rest’s faces, while an uproar started to rapidly spread across the vast crowd.

This was because the pillar of light enveloping Lin Dong had started to dim. From their previous experience, this was clearly an

omen of impending failure.

Ying Huanhuan's jade-like hands started to clench tightly, before she tightly gripped Ying Xiaoxiao's wrists and her big eyes started to turn red. Although she was extremely confident in that fellow's resilience, she knew that this setback was not something that Lin Dong could easily disregard. She could already imagine his forced smile in the near future...

“Big sis.”

Ying Xiaoxiao looked at the young lady beside her, who could not bear to see Lin Dong fail, before she sighed and shook her head. This matter... perhaps this was how it would end...

Under the regretful gazes of innumerable people, Lin Dong's pillar of light slowly started to grow dimmer.

Bang!

As an uproar was stirred in the outside world due to the weakening of the pillar of light. Lin Dong's body finally collapsed heavily onto the ground in the endless barren land. A painful sensation spread across his entire body.

Right now, Lin Dong's skin was thoroughly cracked and he looked extremely hideous. Furthermore, the energy within his body had disappeared completely. There were even specks of light floating out of his body from time to time.

Lin Dong's mouth was shaking as he fuzzily stared at a stalk of withered grass in front of him. He knew that he was already at the end of his limits and did not have the energy to continue walking forward.

He stared at that stalk of withered grass for a while, before reaching out with his hand and inserting it into the withered and yellow ground. He proceeded to grab the whole withered plant including its roots.

When the withered plant left the ground, Lin Dong stared at the roots that were hidden beneath the surface. Reaching his finger out to touch it, the entire plant and even its roots completely turned to dust and floated away.

The dust floated and scattered in front of Lin Dong's face. His face turned gloomy with uncertainty as he stayed in this way for close to half an hour. The only thing he heard was his hoarse voice which rang across the silent domain.

“The Desolate Spirit shouldn't be like this...”

Lin Dong slowly raised his head and looked towards the grey and dusky sky. From its colour, it was as if even the sky had died. Looking once again at this piece of land, although there were withered grass around, all of them were dead...

However, desolation was not like this. After desolation, life would stay hidden, waiting for the time to bloom. After desolation,

there would also be an abundance of life...

However in this land, even the sky and earth were dead.

Lin Dong lowered his head and suddenly extended his hands to dig the ground in front of him, causing dried dust and sand to fly into the air. Although he had hardly any strength left, by relying on sheer willpower, he was able to brandish his palms mechanically.

Pop!

Another lump of dull yellow dust was clawed up from the ground by Lin Dong. The dust scattered before his eyes. Yet, in that moment, his pupils had shrunk into the size of a needle as he scanned the dust. Within the dust, he had seen a floating black dot...

This black dot gave him the same feeling as the black dot on the surface of the tablet. It felt mysterious and sinister and seemed capable of swallowing all life from the heavens and earth...

Without even blinking, Lin Dong's gaze followed the black dot as it fell to the ground before disappearing. Immediately following its disappearance, Lin Dong turned as still as a statue, and he did not even move a single inch.

Specks of light started to scatter from within Lin Dong's body. Half of his body had already turned to light and scattered away.



However, as his body was scattering, a fierce glint suddenly reappeared in his blank and dead eyes.

Huff!

Taking in a deep breath of air, Lin Dong lifted his head and stared at the endless stretch of land. Although there was no one here, an extremely earnest expression appeared on his face. Soon after, a youthful voice consisting of a single chain of words started to ring out.

“Return my strength to me... Great Desolate Tablet... you are sick, you must be treated...”

# Chapter 700: Breakthrough

---

Upon the vast and seemingly endless wasteland, Lin Dong spoke in an earnest yet strange and flat voice, which slowly rang out and echoed across the area..

However, when his voice faded, the area remained deathly quiet. Nothing out of the ordinary had happened.

Yet, this scene did not cause Lin Dong to panic at all. His eyes were tightly fixed onto this spacious land, as if someone was here who could understand his words.

As Lin Dong spoke, more and more specks of light emerged from within his body. Then his legs faded amongst the lights, followed by his waist, then his chest...

The specks of light slowly spread outwards, but the sharpness within Lin Dong's pupils only grew fiercer and more powerful.

“You once gave senior Zhou Tong and them a chance... why not try again?” Lin Dong's voice gradually became calmer as he spoke faintly while continuing to stare at this lifeless land.

The specks of light slowly spread, and started to go beyond Lin Dong's neck.

“Those things... they cause you a lot of pain, don't they?” Lin Dong glanced slightly at the spreading light. His lips formed a

mocking smile as he spoke.

Buzz!

The wriggling lights finally froze at this moment.

Seeing this turn of events, the smile on his lips gradually widened. This time, he had finally won the bet. The Great Desolate Tablet did indeed possess an intelligent consciousness.

Unknowingly, a gentle breeze blew across the barren land, causing waves to emerge. These waves came from all directions, and finally converged with Lin Dong at their center.

Chi chi!

Veins of light spread as Lin Dong's disappearing body started recovering at an unimaginable speed. Furthermore, as his body was recovering, his abundant energy also returned once again.

“Thanks.”

Lin Dong clenched his fist and smiled as he felt the return of his vigorous energy. He lifted his head and clasped his hands together towards the land as he laughed.

Crack crack.

As Lin Dong's voice faded, cracks started to appear on the barren land. The cracks formed a twisted pattern like a distorted image, while Lin Dong stood on the now crumbling land. However, even in the face of this rapid change, there were no signs of panic on Lin Dong's face. Instead, a faint trace of delight could be found deep within his eyes. I guess this can be considered a breakthrough...

The land finally completely fell apart as darkness gushed over from all directions and drowned Lin Dong's body within it.

While time briefly stood still, the atmosphere in the Dao Sect mountain range had grown extremely explosive. A kind of explosiveness that could stem only from the lone figure in front of the Great Desolate Tablet.

At this moment, the light pillar that had shot down from the Great Desolate Tablet and enveloped Lin Dong's body was shrinking at a slow but perceptible rate.

Before this scene, unconcealable disappointment appeared on everyone's faces. If even Lin Dong failed, no other person would be able to comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture of the Desolate Hall. If so, then who knew when the legendary Great Desolation Scripture would ever get to see the light of day again...

In the sky, a look of agony appeared on Chen Zhen and Wu Dao's faces. Although they understood that the Great Desolation Scripture was not easy to comprehend, it was still rather difficult for even the likes of them to accept the scene before their eyes.

“Sigh...”

Sky Hall Master Qi Lei patted Chen Zhen and Wu Dao’s shoulders as if he wanted to say something. However, he could only sigh in the end, while the other hall masters helplessly shook their heads. The Great Desolation Scripture was truly the Dao Sect’s biggest pain...

With all the commotion stirring all around her, Ying Huanhuan also sighed softly. She lifted her head and looked at the exceptionally lonely and skinny young figure in front of the Great Desolate Tablet. She pursed her lips, and they turned downwards in a rather sad angle.

Despite her lively personality, she could also be rather fierce. Furthermore, she had even made a bet with Lin Dong. Yet, a young girl was after all kind hearted. She could already feel the despair and misery that Lin Dong would feel after this failure.

“ Looks like I’ll have to provoke him less from now on.....” The young girl’s eyelashes gently blinked as she thought to herself.

“ It ended in failure after all...”

On a mountain peak far away, a blue-robed old man similarly sighed and could not help but bitterly laugh as he cursed, “This damned Great Desolate Tablet! In any case, our sect has protected it for a thousand years. It’s really not giving us any face....”

“Its origins are too astonishing. It’s not our place to even try and imagine what it experienced. It’s normal for it not to feel indebted to us.” Ying Xuanzi smiled faintly.

“Seems like it’s about time to end this Great Desolation Scripture enlightenment event.....” The blue-robed old man replied helplessly. However, just as his voice faded, cries of surprise suddenly rang out from the great crowd in the distance.

Upon hearing their cries, Ying Xuanzi and the blue-robed old man were stunned. Immediately, they raised their slightly stunned gazes to peer into the distance as their eyes abruptly focussed.

“This is...” Dumbfounded voices slowly escaped both their mouths.

The cries spread across the land at an unimaginable speed. Ying Xiaoxiao, Ying Huanhuan and the rest sensed the commotion and raised their eyes, focusing on the space before the Great Desolate Tablet.

The originally shrinking light pillar had practically shrunk to the size of a palm on Lin Dong’s head. In such a situation, many would think that enlightenment had failed and come to an end. Yet, after waiting for a few minutes, someone suddenly realized that the palm-sized light pillar had not faded!

The light pillar did not completely disappear – this meant that the enlightenment was not considered over yet!

“What’s going on?” Ying Huanhuan said as she stared at the scene in disbelief.

Ying Xiaoxiao’s eyebrows knitted together. Soon after, her face gradually turned solemn, and even her voice was a little shaky as she replied, “I think this means that Lin Dong has not yet failed....”

Upon hearing this, Qing Ye and the rest were rather moved with emotion. Shock flickered deep within their eyes.

Chen Zhen, Wu Dao and the rest of the hall masters were likewise stunned by this scene. Immediately, a trace of wild joy surfaced within the Chen Zhen duo’s eyes as if they were suddenly struck by a certain realization.

Buzz Buzz!

The Great Desolate Tablet suddenly started to tremble intensely as waves of light gathered together on the surface of the enormous tablet. Eventually, they transformed into a near solid light pillar that shot out and enveloped Lin Dong’s body.

Woah!

As they watched the resplendently dazzling light pillar, everyone exploded into an uproar. Shock gushed up on the faces of many.

Waves of light continued to gather on the Great Desolate Tablet. In the end, the surface of the tablet became like a mirror. One

could faintly see a blurry yet gigantic figure looming within it.

When the giant figure appeared on the surface of the tablet, the pupils of Chen Zhen, Wu Dao and other hall masters instantly tightened as their breathing became hurried. Soon after, they looked to each other and saw the deep shock in each other's eyes.

“Is that... the tablet spirit?” Wu Dao asked with a coarse voice.

“It should be. When I was a mere disciple, I saw senior Zhou Tong's Great Desolation Scripture enlightenment, and this same figure appeared on the tablet...”

Qi Lei slowly replied. He suppressed his trembling heart and looked towards the Chen Zhen duo, “Congratulations, your Desolate Hall may just rise up again this time...”

Chen Zhen and Wu Dao looked at each other and laughed heartily till tears started to flow. After a hundred years, their Desolate Hall had finally found a disciple that could comprehend the Great Desolation Scripture!

Darkness was everywhere. When Lin Dong finally opened his eyes, the darkness once again withdrew like flood waters. As the darkness left, a barren and rocky land appeared before Lin Dong.

Not far ahead of him, what first caught Lin Dong's attention was an ancient yellow tablet that stood about ten feet tall. The tablet was similar to the Great Desolate Tablet. However, some ancient



runes could faintly be seen on its surface...

As Lin Dong's gaze slowly swept downwards, his pupils abruptly shrank. He saw veins of black, shadowy lines emerging from the bottom of the tablet. These lines looked like the feelers of a demon, ice-cold and wicked as they wiggled slowly while spreading on the tablet like some kind of virus.

The undulations from these strange black lines were exactly the same as those tiny black dots.

"These things are the culprit right?" Lin Dong softly said as he stared at the tablet.

Buzz Buzz

Just as Lin Dong's voice faded, faint ripples appeared on the tablet's surface, and soon after, a blurry figure emerged. 'It' looked at Lin Dong, as a coarse voice, so ancient that it seemed to invade one's heart, rang out.

"There're indeed so many things in your body that feel familiar..."

At the sound of those words, the corners of Lin Dong's eyes started to twitch uncontrollably.